

# Chapter 501 - Vermilion Bird Revival Technique

MGA: Chapter 501 - Vermilion Bird Revival Technique

“Crap. Not only has that terrifying old man not left, he even came to this place!”

“With his strength, he can definitely gain huge benefits in this Emperor Tomb. If he takes away everything, wouldn’t our trip here be wasted?”

At that instant, Chu Feng hiddenly cursed. He didn’t believe that the black-clothed old man would give him any benefits even if he were to get any in the Emperor Tomb. Even if he truly did give him some of the so-called reward, it would certainly not be anything too precious.

After all, the two of them didn’t know one another and they met only by chance. He didn’t own him anything, so he had no need to give him any benefits.

But right now, Chu Feng could also not say anything. He could only feign ignorance and continue going forward with the people from the Jiang Dynasty.

At first, it was still good. Everything was normal. They only met a few Evil Spirits on the way, but they were all killed by them. As they walked, they had unstoppable might.

“Wait.” However, suddenly, the Monstrous Monkey King who was walking at the very front stopped its forwarding steps and spoke, “Something’s wrong.”

“What’s the matter?” Hearing those words, everyone became nervous and asked puzzledly.

"There should be both guardians and obstructions in this Emperor Tomb, yet on the road, we have only met guardians, but not any restrictions or obstructions." The Monstrous Monkey King said.

"Senior, could it be that you mean someone has come to this place before us, and have already broke the obstructions in this place? The emperor asked.

"That's right. That possibility is very high." The Monstrous Monkey King said.

"That shouldn't be possible right? If it is truly like so, some traces of destruction would at least be left behind, but on the way here, I haven't seen any signs of things being broken." The emperor doubtfully said.

"If that person has extremely powerful strength and also grasps extremely skilled Spirit Formation techniques, he could avoid the detection of the guardians and not leave any traces of obstruction destruction."

"Think carefully. Many of the things guarding this place are Evil Spirits. These things are innately vicious. They even consume and refine their own species and kill each other."

"But on the way, the Evil Spirits we met had different strengths, both weak and strong. However, they were orderly guarding in a single area and did not kill one another."

"This only states one thing. It's that the barricades before separated them and only because of that did it force them to guard in one place with discipline. Right now, the barricades have been destroyed. However, they still do not know. Thus, they continue guarding in their own places with order." The Monstrous Monkey King explained.

"This..."

At that instant, some people started to become uneasy because the words the Monstrous Monkey King said were indeed reasonable. With the Evil Spirits' nature, if there wasn't a special barricade separating them, it

would not be possible for them to guard in their areas with control. They should definitely be flipping the heavens already.

“Senior, you must be thinking too much. The strength of this Emperor Tomb’s master is unfathomably deep. The methods he grasp may not be comprehensible by us.”

“Perhaps he already laid barriers which separates Evil Spirits, restricts only Evil Spirits, and are undetectable by us?”

After the emperor spoke, everyone nodded their heads again and felt that it made sense. After all, people were suspecting that the master of this tomb was the Divine Body ten thousand years ago. There were many opinions regarding the rumours of that person, but not a single one of them wasn’t strange, mystical, and mysterious. Besides, the methods of a Martial Emperor was indeed not something they could understand.

“I hope it is like so.” The Monstrous Monkey King didn’t bother arguing with the crowd. It curled its lips and didn’t say much more, continuing to lead the road forward.

“There

is

reason in the monkey king’s words. ‘If you are careful, you can steer a ten thousand year old ship.’ Everyone, it is better to be a bit more careful.” Just at that time, the dynasty’s old ancestor spoke.

After he spoke, everyone couldn’t help nodding their heads. After all, no matter if it was strength or position, that person was superior to them. Other than the Monstrous Monkey King, it was likely that no one dared to disobey his words.

At that instant, only Chu Feng understood in his heart that the Monstrous Monkey King was correct. If no accidents happened, the black-clothed old man should have already broke into the Emperor Tomb before them.

And there were two possibilities why the black-clothed old man only broke the obstructions but not kill the guardians.

First, he didn't want to let those people know he arrived at that place. It would also be why he sent a mental message to Chu Feng and didn't grandly show himself.

Second, he intentionally wanted to use the guardians to stop Chu Feng and the others, and wanted to make Chu Feng and the others know the danger and retreat.

But no matter which point it was, Chu Feng felt that he couldn't tell the crowd about the black-clothed old man because if he did, everyone would definitely retreat as they knew their limits.

However, Chu Feng still didn't want to give up because as long as he remembered the Zi family members' faces and remembered that Zi Ling was still waiting for him in the Zi family, he impatiently wanted to become stronger. So, he did not want to miss out the chance to go search the Emperor Tomb.

Thus, Chu Feng didn't say anything. As if he was unrelated to everything, he walked forward with the crowd, but other than the guardians which got stronger and stronger, there was no gain.

Only until they carefully walked a hundred full miles in the vast and seemingly edgeless Emperor Tomb did good change appear in front of them.

In front of Chu Feng and the others, a majestic structure appeared. The structure was a strange statue of a huge bird. Its appearance was like a peacock's, but it was more beautiful than a peacock. More overbearing.

And at the entrance of the strange and grand structure, "Secret Skill, the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique. Only awaiting for the fated." was written there.

“Secret Skill! It is indeed a Secret Skill!” At that instant, everyone was surprised and joyed. After all, Secret Skills were like legends. They were priceless treasures, things that could only be met by chance and not searched for.

But even though everyone was extremely excited and endlessly drooled for Secret Skill, not a single person dared to step in without permission. They involuntarily cast their gazes towards Chu Feng, and the dynasty’s old ancestor who was next to him.

It was because everyone knew that if the Secret Skill was going to pick one of them, the one who had the greatest chance was Chu Feng. After all, he currently already gained the approval of two Secret Skills.

Besides, at the gate of the strange but special structure, it was already very clearly stated that it “awaited only for the fated”, and clearly, Chu Feng was that fated one.

“All of you, stay here. I will go in with Chu Feng.” The old ancestor of the dynasty spoke.

“No. I will accompany my brother.” However, the Monstrous Monkey King immediately refused.

“Monkey King, the two of us are the only Purple-cloak World Spiritists here. One must stay behind, and one will go in.”

“If something unexpected truly happens, at least there will be one person who can safely bring everyone back.”

“And in terms of cultivation, I’m still a bit stronger than you. If there is truly some danger inside, I believe that I will be able to handle it better than you. It’ll be another layer of protection.” The dynasty’s old ancestor seemed to know what the Monstrous Monkey King was worried about, so he spoke to explain.

# Chapter 502 - A Strange Smile

MGA: Chapter 502 - A Strange Smile

“Hmph. You make it sound nice, but what if you scheme for the Secret Skill and secretly attack my brother?” The Monstrous Monkey King did not believe him.

“Hoh, if you truly have such thoughts, then I won’t argue with you. Since you have such distrust in me, it’s fine that you go in with Chu Feng. I can guard outside with the crowd.” The dynasty’s old ancestor shook his head while smiling.

“Monkey Bro, I believe Senior Jiang will not harm me. Don’t worry.”

Just at that time, Chu Feng spoke. He had to speak because of the cooperation relationship between him, the Monstrous Monkey King, and the Jiang Dynasty. If, at a time like this, some conflicts started to appear, it would definitely create detrimental effects and harm their cooperation in the future.

Seeing that, the Monstrous Monkey King didn’t feel it was too good to say much more. So, it nodded and said, “Okay then. Since my brother agrees, I won’t say any more.”

“Fifth Brother, I’ll go in with you two. If there are truly some dangers inside, we can look after each other if we join powers.” Just at that time, the supreme elder, who had the highest age in the Jiang Dynasty, spoke.

Although his position was inferior to the old ancestor, his seniority was larger than him, being the elder brother of the old ancestor.

“Mm, that’s fine.” The old ancestor also agreed. His elder brother had been living for so many years. Tossing aside his strength and not talking about it, his battle experience could be said to be extremely abundant. With his

elder brother accompanying him, if they met with any troubles, things would be quite a bit easier.

Quickly after, Chu Feng, accompanied by the dynasty's old ancestor and the supreme elder, walked into the strange but special grand structure.

Not only was the special structure's outer appearance strange, the internal decorations were very strange as well. After many lefts and rights, Chu Feng and the others finally walked to the important area. At that very instant, what appeared in front of their eyes was a vast circular palace.

On the surrounding walls of the vast palace, there were murals made by special materials, and for every mural, a unique bird was carved. Doubtlessly, the beautiful and overbearing bird was called the Vermilion Bird.

As for the content of the murals, they were about the Vermilion Bird battling different types of Monstrous Beasts, and with none of them ending up with defeat. To sum it up, every single mural was depicting the powerful strength of the Vermilion Bird.

In the core area of the palace, there was even a ten-foot tall statue. It was also a Vermilion Bird, but the statue could absolutely be said to be the work of ghosts and gods, being vividly carved.

In addition, a special Spirit Formation was bestowed upon the statue. It was surrounded by layers of flame-like brilliance, and seemed extremely divine. As if it wasn't a statue but truly a Vermilion Bird.

“Chu Feng, I believe that the Secret Skill is sealed within this statue. After I destroy this seal, it'll be up to you.” The dynasty's old ancestor smilingly said to Chu Feng.

“Don't worry Senior Jiang, I will do my best.”

Before coming to this place, they had already drew up a complete plan. It was to first search for the Secret Skill at the entrance and let Chu Feng subdue it.

But before subduing it, Chu Feng was to first extract some information about the Emperor Tomb from the Secret Skill to allow them to more easily go deeper in.

“Mm.” Seeing that, the dynasty’s old ancestor smiled and didn’t hesitate as well. He walked up and started to lay an Opening Spirit Formation. After a moment of laying, a vast purple-coloured Spirit Formation was condensed out.

“Break!” After finishing the Spirit Formation, the dynasty’s old ancestor explosively yelled. The vast purple-coloured formation was like the eruption of a volcano. Layers of purple-coloured bodies of light were sprayed out, interweaving with the red-coloured aura surrounding the statue and was actually engulfing it.

“So powerful. The methods of a Purple-cloak World Spiritist are indeed impressive.” Seeing the special Spirit Formation being gradually broken through, Chu Feng sighed in admiration in his heart. The Spirit Formation was very strong. If he were to try and break it open, he would definitely not be able to.

But when the dynasty’s old ancestor came to break it, it was actually only a short moment of work to successfully break through. From that, it could be seen that there was a huge distance between a Blue-cloak World Spiritist and a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

\*wuaao\*

Finally, the Spirit Formation was thoroughly destroyed. Simultaneously, a wicked howl also rang out quickly after. Horrifying aura instantly permeated throughout the entire palace.

“This is bad.”

At that instant, the old ancestor hiddenly cursed because not only did he feel aura that was not inferior to him, he also felt a burst of killing intent which pounced at him.



\*boom\* Suddenly, an explosion resounded. The statue actually blew up, and at the same time, a huge monster also appeared in the middle of the palace.

That monster had an extremely terrifying appearance. Sharp and pointed teeth, both eyes blood-red, a dark-green aura up and down its entire body. Moreover, it emanated the aura of the 9th level of the Heaven realm.

\*wuaoo\* In the first instant the monster appeared, it furiously howled then quickly after, a huge claw along with boundless power slammed down towards the old ancestor.

“Haa!” Seeing that, without delay, the old ancestor angrily shouted, then layers of Heaven power explosively surged out. At the same time, faint radiance emitted from his body and on his forehead, a dazzling golden “royal” character appeared.

At that instant, the might of the dynasty’s old ancestor multiplied. Looking purely at his outer appearance, he simply didn’t even seem like a mortal, but more like a deity.

And his strength even rose by several times and was actually not the slightest bit weaker than the dark-green monster in front of him. In a blink, the two horrifying existences, who had overwhelming strength, fought against one another.

“This isn’t right. This monster is not a Secret Skill. Clearly, it is a vicious Evil Spirit.”

Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows. Not to mention its appearance, just from its aura, Chu Feng was able to determine that the thing sealed within the stone statue was not a Secret Skill, but an Evil Spirit.

“Chu Feng, run! Leave this place! There isn’t a Secret Skill here! It’s a trap!” Suddenly, dynasty’s old ancestor loudly yelled.

Seeing the old ancestor who fought against the Evil Spirit yet did not gain too big of an advantage, Chu Feng bit his teeth, then leaped and aimed to

rush out of the palace, wanting to ask the Monstrous Monkey King and the others for help.

\*hmm\* However, just as Chu Feng was going to move, he discovered at the exit of the palace, a layer of blue-coloured Spirit Formation covered it. Furthermore, a weak figure appeared in front of the exit, obstructing the road of retreat.

It was the elder brother of the old ancestor, the supreme elder of the Jiang Dynasty. Not only was the existence of the 8th level of the Heaven realm not helping the old ancestor at that moment, he even sealed the exit of the palace.

“Senior, what are you doing?” From the supreme elder’s body, he felt the aura of danger. So, he did not go close and loudly questioned.

“Big Brother, what are you doing? Quickly let Chu Feng out!” And with Chu Feng’s shouts, the dynasty’s old ancestor also discovered the change over there and furiously interrogated.

However, the supreme elder did not speak any words. He only lightly squinted his eyes, and then the corners of his mouth rose to form a hint of a strange smile.

# Chapter 503 - Brothers Killing Each Other

MGA: Chapter 503 - Brothers Killing Each Other

“Evil Spirit, how about you cooperate with me?” Suddenly, the supreme elder looked at the Evil Spirit and said.

“Cooperate? How so?” Hearing those words, an eerie voice also came from the Evil Spirit’s mouth.

“It will be very difficult to defeat him if you fight him one-on-one. I’ll help you kill him, but you guarantee my exit. How about it?” The supreme elder coldly smiled and said.

“Haha, of course that’s good! As long as you help me kill this guy, I will definitely release you. I believe in honesty the most. Gaga~” As the Evil Spirit insanely laughed loudly, it strengthened its attacks towards the dynasty’s old ancestor.

“Big Brother, what are you saying? Not only are you not helping me, you are actually cooperating with the Evil Spirit to kill me?” At that instant, the old ancestor was really abruptly shocked.

“Hmph. You still recognize me to be your big brother? I am dozens of years older than you, I have greater seniority than you, and my talent is also no weaker than yours, but Father concentrated on raising you. Not only did he raise your cultivation to a higher point than mine, he even made you the emperor.”

“Right now, you are also my dynasty’s old ancestor, and I, who has the greatest seniority, is only some dog butt supreme elder. Ha!”

“I hate you. I thoroughly hate you. I hate that you call me ‘Big Brother’ all day in such a fake manner, yet took away everything that belongs to me.”

“For this day, I have waited for a very long time. I will kill you now. I will personally kill you.” At that instant, it was as if the supreme elder went insane. His face was sinister, and he fully revealed his killing intent.

At the same time, on his forehead, he released a golden, dazzling “royal” character. Clearly, he also used the special Royal Bloodline unique to the Jiang Dynasty, causing his battle power to multiply.

Furthermore, a golden big blade appeared in his hand. It was a Elite Armament. A Mastered Elite Armament. At that instant, the supreme elder’s atmosphere was completely different, already infinitely nearing the 9th level of the Heaven realm.

\*boom\* Suddenly, an explosion resonated. But it had to be said that the dynasty’s old ancestor was truly very strong. Even though his own elder brother held a Elite Armament as well as joining hands with the horrifying Evil Spirit that aimed its attacks towards him, he was still not disadvantaged. Rather, fighting two as one, he became more and more courageous as he fought.

“It is useless. Even if you interfere, with only your cultivation of the 8th level of the Heaven realm, it is useless. You wish to kill me, but today, you will only be killed by me.” The old ancestor coldly snorted. His battle power actually got stronger and stronger, and with his own power, he continuously pressed the Evil Spirit and the supreme elder back.

“So powerful. There is also a difference in strength for bloodline power, and this old ancestor’s bloodline is clearly above his elder brother’s. No wonder back then, their father chose him to be the emperor. If their bloodlines were discussed, the old ancestor is indeed superior.”

The current Chu Feng already arrived at the exit of the palace. As he tried to break the Blue-coloured Spirit Formation, he paid attention to the battle in the core of the palace. He could already tell that the old ancestor’s talent indeed surpassed his elder brother’s.

However, even though Chu Feng was also a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, the strength of the Spirit Formation laid by World Spiritists was related to

their own cultivation. So, it was truly not easy for Chu Feng to want to break the Spirit Formation within a short amount of time.

In order to prevent any unanticipated changes, Chu Feng could only give up breaking the entire Spirit Formation and instead, concentrated on one point because as long as a tiny crack could appear, Chu Feng would have ways to send out news to call the Monkey King to save himself.

\*hmm\*

But just at that time, in the middle of the palace, dazzling brilliance was suddenly emitted. Turning his head back to look, a lotus flower the size of a washbowl, which shot radiance in all directions, appeared in the hand of the supreme elder.

The lotus flower's aura was extremely horrifying, simply several times more horrifying than Elite Armaments. However, it was clearly not a Elite Armament. It seemed more like a Sovereign Treasure that could only be used once.

“The Golden Radiance Lotus Flower! You are actually using it to attack me?!”

Seeing the golden-coloured lotus flower, the old ancestor's face also changed greatly. He hurriedly stopped attacking and retreated. At the same time, radiance flashed in his palm, and a crimson longsword appeared in his palm as well. It was a Elite Armament, and similarly, a Mastered Elite Armament. Facing the Golden Radiance Lotus Flower, even he had to seriously face it.

“This Golden Radiance Lotus Flower is an Offensive Sovereign Treasure. There is only one in the entire Jiang Dynasty and it can kill any person under the Martial lord realm. In that year, Father felt that he owed me as he gave the position of emperor to you, so he bestowed this Golden Radiance Lotus Flower to me for protecting myself.”

“But no matter what, he never would have expected that today, I will use the Sovereign Treasure he granted me to kill the son he likes and admires

the most!”

“Hahahahaha...”

Suddenly, the supreme elder loudly laughed, and the more he laughed, the more sinister it was. As he loudly laughed, a baneful glare emerged into the nearby Evil Spirit’s eyes as it hiddenly said, “Tracherous humans, killing one another. However, both of you will die by my hands. I will not let any one of you go.”

“Go die!” Finally, the supreme elder attacked. The Golden Radiance Lotus Flower in his hand was abruptly thrown. The complete lotus flower immediately fragmented, becoming countless golden arrows. With powerful might, they explosively shot towards the dynasty’s old ancestor.

\*whoosh whoosh whoosh\*

“Crimson Dragon Heaven Covering Shield!”

Seeing that, the longsword in the old ancestor’s hand waved and a huge dragon actually burst out. The huge dragon’s body occupied the space in front of him and formed a Crimson shield there, blocking several golden radiances.

The power of the golden radiance was very strong. It interweaved with the dragon shield and actually made cracks appear on it from the collision. But ultimately, it was still unable to break through the barrier of the dragon shield and were all stopped.

“Hmph. It’s useless. You underestimate me too much. Although this Golden Radiance Lotus Flower is very powerful, Father has already passed down the way to break it to me. This Crimson Dragon Sword is equipped with both attack and defense, and the Crimson Dragon Heaven Covering Shield, when used, can precisely stop your Golden Radiance Lotus Flower.” The dynasty’s old ancestor said, while his face was filled with complacent.

“Haha, of course I know that the Crimson Dragon Heaven Covering Shield Father passed down to you can break my Golden Radiance Lotus Flower. So that is why I haven’t made my move on you until today. However, despite being powerful, your Crimson Dragon Heaven Covering Shield has both advantages and detriments. It consumes too much power. It is a move that damages yourself.”

“Don’t forcefully hold on. Right now, your body is injured internally and your strength has been greatly diminished. You have already lost over half of your battle power.” The supreme elder coldly smiled and said.

“You!” Hearing those words, the old ancestor’s expression instantly changed greatly. His originally reddish face immediately turned deathly-white, bloodless. At the same time, he opened his mouth, and with a poof, a mouthful of old blood sprayed out, splattering all over his clothes. He powerlessly fell onto the ground, and his aura already became extremely weak.

“Evil Spirit, what are you waiting for? His Source energy is yours.” The supreme elder said to the Evil Spirit.

“Gagaga, my thanks.” The Evil Spirit madly laughed and made a light, sinister smile. He pounced towards the old ancestor, opened its large mouth, and actually wanted to swallow him in one go.

“Crimson Dragon Heaven Breaking Sword!”

But just as the Evil Spirit neared, the old ancestor’s face suddenly turned better. His feeble aura actually regained its peak state, and simultaneously, the Crimson Dragon Heaven Breaking Sword in his hand suddenly flew out, became golden radiance that was several feet long, and with bursts of dragon roars, it directly pierced through the Evil Spirit.

# Chapter 504 - One's Own Selfishness

MGA: Chapter 504 - One's Own Selfishness

\*aoo~~~\* The Crimson Dragon Sword entered from the Evil Spirit's large mouth, and exited from his buttocks. It pierced through its entire body, causing it to immediately howl in misery, being endlessly in pain.

“Ignorant Evil Spirit! You truly think that we two brothers would kill ourselves? We were only intentionally acting to make you lower your guard, and make the fatal strike afterwards.”

“The Golden Radiance Lotus Flower just now was a fake one. That one only had might, but no real offensive power, tricking everyone other than us two brothers.” The dynasty's old ancestor coldly smiled and said.

“Evil Spirits are Evil Spirits. You have strength, but not brains. Hahaha...” At the same time, the supreme elder also mockingly laughed loudly.

“Damned humans, you are extremely despicable! I'll kill you!” The Evil Spirit was thoroughly furious. It originally wanted to plot against the two of them, but it didn't expect to be already plotted against from the very start.

So, it used its heavily injured body to release all of its power, wanting to use its everything to die with the old ancestor.

“Is you right now able to fight against me?”

However, he did not give it any chance. The Crimson Dragon Sword in his hand waved again, causing a crimson dragon to be detached from the sword, colliding into the Evil Spirit. With that strike only, the Evil Spirit was shattered. Not to mention residue, there wasn't even any aura left behind.



“Big Brother, the Golden Radiance Lotus Flower you imitated is truly useful. It is simply the exact same as a real Golden Radiance Lotus Flower. When you used it just now, even I almost assumed it was real, so that’s why I used the Crimson Dragon Heaven Covering Shield to block it.” After killing the Evil Spirit, the dynasty’s old ancestor lightly smiled and said.

“Yeah. Father bestowed this Golden Radiance Lotus Flower to me and it has absolute offensive power. I have always been unwilling to use it.”

“However, I meticulously studied it. I created an imitation that has the same might as the Golden Radiance Lotus Flower. Although its true offensive strength is very weak, it can at least scare people.” As the supreme elder spoke, a Golden Radiance Lotus Flower appeared once again on his palm.

“But even though this is an imitation, it more or less has some offensive power. Why not use your Spirit Formation to feel what level of power this imitation has?” The supreme elder smilingly said.

“This...” At that instant, the old ancestor’s face slightly changed and originally wanted to say something.

“Go!” But at the same time, the supreme elder had already flicked his big sleeve. The Golden Radiance Lotus Flower in his hand left it, flew, became several golden arrows, and explosively shot towards the dynasty’s old ancestor.

Seeing that, the old ancestor did not panic, nor did he wave his sword to block. He said, “Big Brother’s Golden Radiance Lotus Flower is getting more and more realistic. Indeed, it can scare away quite a few experts. As for the power, let me analyze it for you.”

As he spoke, he waved his clothes. A layer of weak Spirit Formation appeared in front of him, as he wanted to use it to block the imitation Golden Radiance Lotus Flower.

\*bang bang bang bang bang\*

However, as the several golden arrows interweaved with the Spirit Formation, the Spirit Formation was actually shattered immediately. Simultaneously, the several golden arrows instantly accelerated, and with horrifying might, they shot straight towards the dynasty's old ancestor.

“Crap.” In the moment the Spirit Formation was broken, the old ancestor's originally calm face instantly changed greatly because he astonishedly discovered that the Golden Radiance Lotus Flower was not fake. It was real.

But when he discovered that, it was already too late. He would not make it if he were to dodge, so he could only forcibly defend against the attack.

Thus, as he willed, layers of purple-coloured Spirit Formation unendingly came out from his body to block the approaching golden arrows.

\*bang bang bang bang bang\*

Bursts of explosions endlessly went out in front of the dynasty's old ancestor, but the layers of purple-coloured Spirit Formation also endlessly shattered. At the end, several golden radiances all struck the body of the dynasty's old ancestor.

\*whoosh\*

But just as the golden arrows struck the old ancestor's body, his golden robe gave off dazzling golden brilliance and interweaved with the golden arrows.

“Elite Armament, Pure Dragon Robe. I already knew that Father must also have gave this Elite Armament to you.”

“However, do not underestimate my Golden Radiance Lotus Flower. Although it can only be used once, if I channel all my power into it, even the Pure Dragon Robe cannot block it.”

Suddenly, the supreme elder explosively shouted. The golden arrows then abruptly detonated. Bursts of explosions endlessly rang out, and countless

berserk ripples constantly swept and spread on the old ancestor's body,

“Dammit! This supreme elder is actually attacking his dynasty's old ancestor! What exactly is happening?”

At that instant, Chu Feng was endlessly shocked. He originally thought that the danger in front of his eyes was already dissolved, but he did not expect the supreme elder to suddenly change his face again. Moreover, the attacks right now clearly harmed the dynasty's old ancestor already because even though the old ancestor had a Elite Armament protecting him, such a terrifying attack would definitely cause heavy injuries on his body.

“Screw it!”

Although he was still unclear what was happening between the old ancestor and the supreme elder, Chu Feng felt that the situation in front of him was already not good. So, with his full power, he finally made a crack in the blue-coloured Spirit Formation.

Quickly after, Chu Feng overlaid his palms. A flash of radiance came from the middle of his hands, then he opened them once again. A fingernail-size blue-coloured crystal object had appeared on his palm.

Chu Feng patted his palm towards the crack. A slightly weak ripple spread, and when he retracted his palm, the crack in the blue-coloured Spirit Formation already disappeared, but the blue-coloured crystal object pierced through the Spirit Formation, became a blur of light, and flew out of the palace.

“Ahh!” But at the same time, the horrifying ripples finally dissipated. The body of dynasty's old ancestor appeared within Chu Feng's line of sight once again.

The current old ancestor's body, other than the areas covered by the golden long robe, was horribly mangled. There were even some places that revealed eerie white bones. Even his face was no exception. It was extremely horrifying.

Although he blocked the Golden Radiance Lotus Flower, his body did indeed receive heavy injuries. Currently, his aura was feeble. Not to mention continuing to fight, if he remained in that state, he would quickly die.

“Why? Why attack me? Let me at least die with some understanding.” The dynasty’s old ancestor said.

“Oh brother, don’t blame me. I don’t care about something like the position of emperor. I also don’t care about the love Father has given to you. Even more so, I don’t care about all the fame and wealth being taken by you.”

“What I do care about is whether I die or live, but I, I have already reached the year of death. But I don’t want to die!”

“In these years, I have always been searching for a method to prolong my life. I’ve tried various immortal grasses and divine medicines, but the effects were extremely minuscule. The ones with the best effect were only the Year Prolongation Immortal Grasses.”

“But you also know that those things are very precious. So precious that even you aren’t willing to buy some even as your life reaches the end. So, I shouldn’t even hope for you to buy me some.”

“Hence, when the Ji Dynasty, Zhao Dynasty, and Liu Dynasty joined hands to take out ten Year Prolongation Immortal Grasses in exchange for your life, I agreed.” The supreme elder lightly smiled and said.

“Big Brother, you are truly stupid.”

\*cough cough cough\* Hearing those words, the dynasty’s old ancestor was furious. He first violently coughed a few times, then said, “How many years has the Ji clan, Zhao clan, and Liu clan wanted to invade my Jiang Dynasty?”

“At present, in the Jiang Dynasty, the only one able to fight against them is me. You helping them right now is not only as simple as killing me. You

are sending my entire Jiang Dynasty to the grave!”

“Hoh, if you truly feared them, you wouldn’t be taking a risk by coming here to open the Emperor Tomb.” The supreme elder coldly smiled. Quickly after, he said, “Besides, what does the existence of the Jiang Dynasty have to do with me? I only care how long my own life can last for.”

# Chapter 505 - Spirit Formation Essence

MGA: Chapter 505 - Spirit Formation Essence

“In the past years, in order to help you prolong your life, have I spent a small amount of resources on you?”

“I treat you like this, yet you repay me in such a way and actually don’t care about the survival of the dynasty. Are you still human? You are simply an animal!”

\*cough cough cough cough cough~~~\* The dynasty’s old ancestor continuously coughed from anger. Mouthfuls and mouthfuls of blood kept on spraying out from his mouth. Both of his hands pushed against the floor, as from top to bottom, his entire body was intensely quivering.

The current ruler of the Jiang Dynasty’s life was presently flowing away rapidly. At present, he was already on the border of life and death.

“Oh brother, this is exactly the so-called ‘Without being ruthless, one cannot be a man’. For survival, I can do anything. Before long, the Jiang Dynasty will accompany your death. So, go die without worries.”

The supreme elder fully revealed his killing intent. Seeing his younger brother who was made completely unrecognizable and horribly mangled by himself, he actually didn’t show any traces of being sorry. Instead, he wanted to kill his own blood brother.

“Old beast, your life shall rest!”

But just at that time, Chu Feng used the power of lightning and raised his cultivation to the 1st level of the Heaven realm. He waved the Asura Ghost Axe, explosively shot a black-coloured blade of light, and it flew towards the supreme elder.

Although he wasn't too close with the dynasty's old ancestor, he was not willing to just watch a decent old man be killed by someone. So, he had to make a move. Even though he clearly knew he wouldn't be able to defeat his opponent, at least he could buy some time.

“Hmph. Even a little ant like you dares to attack me? You are truly looking to die.” Seeing that, the supreme elder coldly snorted, and without even moving his hand, a layer of Heaven power was spread out, immediately crushing and shattering the black-coloured blade of light. Furthermore, with horrifying pressure, the Heaven power was going to engulf Chu Feng.

“Dammit! A person in the 8th level of the Heaven realm is really too terrifying. In front of him, I do not have any ability to return the attacks.”

At that instant, Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows and his face changed greatly because he astonishedly discovered in front of the Heaven power, his body was already bound and what awaited him was an unstoppable, terrifying attack that could not be dodged.

With the power that the Heaven power contained, it could definitely burst Chu Feng into a pool of blood.

\*boom\*

But in the moment when everything was hanging by a single thread, an explosion suddenly rang out behind Chu Feng. At the same time, a body appeared in front of him like a ghost. Its palm opened, then the horrifying Heaven power disappeared like smoke dissipating and cloud dispersing.

It was the Monstrous Monkey King. After the Monstrous Monkey King received Chu Feng's signal, it immediately came over.

“What is happening?” At that instant, the emperor of the Jiang dynasty as well as experts such as Jiang Hengyuan all ran inside. When they saw the scene in front of their eyes, all of them didn't know what to do.

“Monkey Bro, quickly protect the old ancestor. The supreme elder wants to kill him!” Chu Feng hurriedly said.

“I knew that this old thing wasn’t a kind one. I’ll put him to his place right now.” The Monstrous Monkey King did not waste any time with words as well. The red glare in his eyes flickered as he became a blur, rushing towards the supreme elder.

“Even if you don’t die, within a short period of time, your body will not recover either.”

“The Jiang dynasty’s later generation, quickly leave the continent of the Nine Provinces and yield this piece of land, or else what awaits you is the eradication of the Jiang Dynasty! Hahaha!”

However, at that instant, the supreme elder did not exchange blows with the Monstrous Monkey King. Instead, he turned, and circled around the Monstrous Monkey King with a strange angle. With bursts of cold laughter, he escaped.

At that instant, the Monstrous Monkey King also did not chase as of the people there, the one it was most concerned about was only Chu Feng. If some change happened to Chu Feng after it left, the losses would not outweigh the gains.

“Father, Father, are you okay?”

“Ancestor! Heavens, what exactly is going on here? Chu Feng, what exactly happened here?”

After the supreme elder left, the Jiang Dynasty crowd hurriedly rushed towards their old ancestor. As they did their best to control the old ancestor’s injuries, they asked Chu Feng about the ins and outs of what happened.

And after knowing everything, the expressions of the people from the Jiang Dynasty rapidly changed and on their faces, unprecedented worry surged, as if their last days had arrived. After stabilizing the old ancestor’s injuries, with the lead of the emperor, they backed out of the Emperor Tomb.



As for Gu Tianchen and the others from the World Spirit Guild, they also feared the dangers of the Emperor Tomb, and chose to back out as well.

At that very instant, only Chu Feng and the Monstrous Monkey King remained. Chu Feng was not willing to leave just like that, and the Monstrous Monkey King was the same.

So, the two of them didn't care about the hidden risks within the Emperor Tomb and decided to continue deeper in. However, before walking for long, the Monstrous Monkey King's face changed and said, "My guess was indeed correct. There are indeed obstructions in his place. Moreover, extremely powerful Spirit Formation obstructions."

"Monkey Bro, why so?" Chu Feng confusedly asked.

"Chu Feng, look at this." Suddenly, the Monstrous Monkey King leaped, and when it appeared again, it was already a hundred meters away from Chu Feng.

Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly ran over. Only then did he discovered under the Monstrous Monkey King's feet, there was a pool of water.

To be more precise, it was not ordinary water because the water was extremely clear. In addition to that, there was even faint brilliance and from the little pool of water, Chu Feng felt extremely wild energy as well as extremely dense spiritual power, Origin power, Profound power, and Heaven power.

"Monkey Bro, what is this?" Chu Feng felt endlessly shocked because he felt that this thing, that gathered all the energy in the air, would have amazing effects in cultivation and was a precious cultivating treasure.

"This is Spirit Formation Essence." The Monstrous Monkey King said.

"Spirit Formation Essence?" Chu Feng's interest multiplied.

"Spirit Formations are very powerful. They can block the attacks that humans make, but it cannot block the World's Energy flowing in the air."

“The so-called World’s Energy also includes spiritual power, Origin power, Profound power, Heaven power, and even the more powerful Martial power, as well as other formless energies in the world. They are all World’s Energy.”

“However, when a type of Spirit Formation reaches a certain degree of strength, it can block the flow of the World’s Energy, and when this type of Spirit Formation has many years of existence, it will convert all the World’s Energy it stopped into physical form. This, is Spirit Formation Essence.”

“And since Spirit Formation Essence has appeared in this place, it means that there should originally be a Spirit Formation here, yet right now, there is nothing and only Spirit Formation Essence remains. This only indicates one thing. The Spirit Formation was broken by someone. Broken without leaving any trace at all.” As the Monstrous Monkey King spoke, it carefully looked everywhere, seemingly wanting to find hints of the Spirit Formation.

“Then it means that this Spirit Formation Essence is truly a treasure!” But compared to the worry of the Monstrous Monkey King, Chu Feng was not interested in the Spirit Formation. What he felt interested in was only the Spirit Formation Essence.

As he spoke, Chu Feng took out a jade bottle that stored medicinal pellets from his Cosmos Sack and after pouring the pellets out, he started to gather the Spirit Formation Essence on the ground.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing?! This Spirit Formation Essence is extremely berserk, do not touch it!”

“It’s said that there was once a powerful World Spiritist who wanted to extract the World’s Energy from the Spirit Formation Essence. He laid a huge, special formation and took out all the frenzied energy from the Spirit Formation Essence, then consumed and refined the Spirit Formation Essence as if it was a Heaven medicine.”

“But at the end, because there was still a bit of wild energy remaining within the Spirit Formation Essence not taken away, it caused the World Spiritist to lose his life because of that. So, this Spirit Formation Essence has been determined as a dangerous object. Everyone who sees it only keeps a distance.” Seeing Chu Feng’s actions, the Monstrous Monkey King’s face changed greatly, hurriedly speaking to stop him.

# Chapter 506 - Reviving the Ancestor

MGA: Chapter 506 - Reviving the Ancestor

“Monkey Bro, don’t worry. It’s not like I’m preparing to refine it, but such a precious and strange thing is really rarely seen. I want collect it and make it a memento.”

Chu Feng lightly smiled, then immediately after, engraved a small-scale Spirit Formation on the bottle. Afterwards, he inverted it, then a bundle of light shot out from the mouth of the bottle.

The areas that the radiance covered made the Spirit Formation Essence flow reversely in, and were all absorbed into the jade bottle. Just like that, with a blink of work, Chu Feng finishing collecting all of the Spirit Formation Essence and stuffed it into the Cosmos Sack.

“Boy, do not think of refining this thing or else it’ll cost your little life. Don’t blame me for not reminding you then!” The Monstrous Monkey King shot Chu Feng a glance, seeming to know Chu Feng’s plans, but did not go too deep and continued to walk forward.

“Heh.” Chu Feng chuckled, scratched his head, and also followed.

\*ta\* But before walking for far, the Monstrous Monkey King suddenly stopped. Quickly after, it waved his big sleeve and curled Chu Feng up, then along with him, speedily flew towards the direction they came from originally.

“Monkey Bro, what’s wrong? Did you feel that something was wrong?” To the Monstrous Monkey King’s sudden actions, Chu Feng guessed that it was definitely because he detected the aura of danger, or else with his nature, it would be impossible for him to escape so wildly.

“Just now, I felt two Evil Spirits in the 9th level of the Heaven realm. Luckily, they did not have Spirit power, so before they discovered you and me, I detected them first.”

“Or else, with my current cultivation, I might not have been able to escape from their hands. This Emperor Tomb is in chaos. Many barricades have been opened, and sooner or later, the Evil Spirits will discover that. When they run everywhere and kill each other, it will be even more dangerous. With our cultivation, we cannot enter the Emperor Tomb again from this place.” The Monstrous Monkey King explained.

Hearing those words, although Chu Feng was a bit unwilling to, he had no choice. Even the Monstrous Monkey King shrunk away, so with his tiny cultivation of the 1st level of the Heaven realm, what could he do?

Besides, on the road, they didn't even see any treasures. Even the Secret Skill was made into a trap. Chu Feng felt that it was because of the black-clothed old man. With him opening up the road in front, even if Chu Feng continued taking risks and kept on going forward, he would not gain any benefits.

Benefits that were able to be seen would certainly be taken away by the black-clothed old man, so Chu Feng decided to just return to the Azure Dragon School.

After all, presently, the Jiang Dynasty had a disaster heading its way. It was likely that the entire continent of the Nine Provinces would sink into huge disarray.

At a time like this, he, and the Monstrous Monkey King, had to return to the Azure Dragon School to control the situation. Or else, with a mistake, the Azure Dragon School which hadn't finished being rebuilt would very possibly die out completely.

Within the Azure Dragon Mountain Range, the rebuilding of the Azure Dragon School was in progress very successfully. Many main buildings were already finished being set up. There was a grand atmosphere, and compared to the former Azure Dragon School, it was many times more

spectacular. No matter if it was scale or quality, both were raised a lot, and a flourishing appearance was manifesting everywhere.

Furthermore, at present, there were already disciples and elders living in many buildings. It could be seen that some disciples were cultivating and some disciples were conversing. There were many new faces, but all had extraordinary aptitude.

There were expressions of joy on everyone's faces. However, they did not know that right now, the continent of the Nine Provinces was facing a calamity. At least the Jiang Dynasty, the huge power titled as the overlord of the Nine Provinces for many years, was very possibly going to be replaced by others, and that the continent was going to go into chaos.

After Chu Feng returned to the Azure Dragon School, he didn't go see Li Zhangqing. He directly came to the center of the Azure Dragon School, to the vastest palace.

In this place, there were a few elders with quite decent strength, and because it was a forbidden area, when they saw a figure descending from the sky, all of them raised their guards, as though they were facing a grand enemy.

But after they clearly saw that person's appearance, they hurriedly made way. Moreover, humble expressions filled their faces because they already recognized that the person who came was the one who did the meritorious deed of rebuilding the Azure Dragon School, Chu Feng.

After Chu Feng entered the palace, he walked into the underground palace. Within the underground palace, he laid a Spirit Formation, then very quickly, an entrance appeared. It was the entrance to the Thousand Bone Graveyard. However, above the current entrance, a grand structure covered it. So, this place also became a forbidden area.

After arriving at the Thousand Bone Graveyard, Chu Feng told the Azure Dragon Founder all about opening the Emperor Tomb, as well as the Jiang Dynasty facing a disaster.

“Chu Feng, we cannot do nothing and ignore this matter.” After knowing everything, the Azure Dragon Founder tightly knitted his brows and solemnly said.

“Ancestor, actually, I also want to help the Jiang Dynasty. After all, right now, the labour for rebuilding of the Azure Dragon School is from the Jiang Dynasty. Everyone in the continent of the Nine Provinces know that my Azure Dragon School’s relationship with the Jiang Dynasty is not simple.”

“So, if the three dynasties truly want to eradicate the Jiang Dynasty, my Azure Dragon School will most likely not avoid destruction. However, with our strengths, I’m afraid we cannot save the Jiang Dynasty.” Chu Feng shook his head.

“Chu Feng, is the Purple-cloak World Spiritist you told me about last time still here?” After thinking for a while, the Azure Dragon Founder asked.

“You’re talking about Monkey Bro? Yes, it’s said that the Monstrous Beasts of the Thousand Monster Mountain will live and die with the Azure Dragon School.” Chu Feng replied.

“Mm. I never would have thought that this Monstrous Beast would be filled with such strong camaraderie. Whatever. As things are right now, there is no other way. Tell it to come, I have something I need its help for.” The Azure Dragon Founder said.

“Ancestor, is it possible that you mean?” Chu Feng couldn’t help but rejoice, as he already heard the meaning behind his words.

“Little boy, you truly ask even though you already know the answer.” The Azure Dragon Founder shook his head with a bitter smile, then said, “Back then, the Jiang Dynasty has showed me kindness as well, so I can’t just watch them die out like this. Besides, when the other dynasties come to rule the continent of the Nine Provinces, they may not kindly treat the forces and citizens here.”

“So, I want to allow that Monstrous Beast help me revive, to use my set of old bones to help the Jiang Dynasty, and to fight against the three dynasties.”

“Mm, I understand ancestor. I’ll go right now.” Although he already expected it, when the Azure Dragon Founder personally spoke those words, Chu Feng was still unendingly excited.

After that, Chu Feng told the Monstrous Monkey King about the Azure Dragon Founder. After knowing that the Azure Dragon Founder was in this world currently, even

it

was shocked. After all, after one thousand years, no matter if it was man or consciousness, they should be destroyed.

However, being shocked was being shocked. The Monstrous Monkey King did not ask much and straightforwardly agreed to Chu Feng’s request. Agreed to help the Azure Dragon Founder resurrect.

So, Chu Feng brought the Monstrous Monkey King and entered the Thousand Bone Graveyard to meet with the Azure Dragon Founder.

And seeing his strong consciousness and complete corpse, as well as the special pearl, the Monstrous Monkey King was endlessly shocked.

However, facing a complete Source energy from an expert in the peak of the Heaven realm, as well as a mysterious treasure pearl with special power, the Monstrous Monkey King did not have any plundering actions.

Rather, it changed its usual untamed attitude and respectfully said to the Azure Dragon Founder, “Azure Dragon Founder. In terms of age, you are my senior; in terms of status, you are my brother’s ancestor. Tell me, what do I need to do in order to help you revive?!”



# Chapter 507 - Dynasty Summoning Order

MGA: Chapter 507 - Dynasty Summoning Order

The Monstrous Monkey King helping the Azure Dragon Founder revive was a very tedious and complicated matter. It required a very lengthy period of time, needing at least one month.

To such high difficulty matters, with the Spirit Formations techniques that Chu Feng currently grasp, he could really not help out much.

As the Monstrous Monkey King discussed the specific steps with the Azure Dragon Founder regarding his revival, Chu Feng arrived in front of the Spirit Formation sealing Su Rou and Su Mei.

“You two girls... Two years has passed with a single sleep. Do you know how much I miss your voices, your smiles?”

Chu Feng sat in front of the Spirit Formation. Through the gaps, he was looking at the two beauties in the Spirit Formation, and the corners of his mouth couldn't help raising to form a hint of a peaceful smile.

Quite some time had passed since the Monstrous Monkey King saved Su Rou and Su Mei by thoroughly merging the

Ice and Fire Pearls into their bodies, but the two of them had yet to reawaken.

At first, Chu Feng was still very worried, but very quickly, his nervousness became nothing and replacing it was unexpected and surprising joy.

It was because as Su Rou and Su Mei deeply slept, not only did they gradually recover their former appearances, as the colour of their faces became redder and redder, currently, they had a special atmosphere they

didn't have before. It was something that normal people did not have, so without a doubt, it was definitely affected by the pearls within their bodies.

But the thing that made Chu Feng most joyful was that as the two of them were in deep sleep, their auras started to rise. Currently, Su Rou already rose into the 6th level of the Profound realm, and even Su Mei's cultivation rose into the 5th level of the Profound realm.

Unknowingly, their cultivations were actually quickly going to catch up to Chu Feng's. To know that the reason why Chu Feng was able to have his current cultivation was because he experienced countless tribulations and cultivated a large amount of resources. It could be said that he paid an extremely huge price.

But the two girls found fortune in a disaster. They only slept deeply for roughly two years of time and their cultivation rose greatly. Moreover, it was clearly not their final realm. If it continued, when they were to wake up, perhaps they could even step into the Heaven realm.

Speaking honestly, facing that situation, even if it was Chu Feng, he felt a bit of admiration. However, even more so, he felt happy. After all, Su Rou and Su Mei were people he loved. If their cultivation became stronger, it was equal to having the power to protect themselves. It was exactly what Chu Feng hoped for.

“If the Jiang Dynasty can dissolve this danger, and both of you can also quickly awaken, follow me to the Eastern Sea Region to have a look. After all, you two, who have the two pearls, should also go check out that land.”

Chu Feng already made plans. If Su Rou and Su Mei could quickly awaken, he would bring them along to the Eastern Sea Region, and also let them join the Four Seas Academy together with Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi.

With that, for the two of them, they would have greater developments. After all, joining the Four Seas Academy was equivalent to having a shelter, and relatively speaking, it would be safer.

As for Chu Feng himself, he temporarily already gave up the thought of joining the Four Seas Academy because he had to quickly raise his cultivation, and that required a large amount of cultivation resources.

But as cultivation resources were so precious, on the journey of retrieving them, it would be hard to avoid setting enmity with others. So, after Chu Feng entered the Eastern Sea Region, on the surface, he would act as if he didn't know Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang and the others. He would only meet up with them in the dark, so that in the future, the enemies he offend wouldn't go and find Zhang Tianyi and the others for settling debts.

“Let me feel what kind of effects this thing has.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng took out the jade bottle containing the Spirit Formation Essence. Although he already knew how horrifying the Spirit Formation Essence was, being titled as a dangerous object that could not be refined, Chu Feng felt that it

could

be refined. The Divine Lightning in his body seemed to not fear any frenzied energy. As long as it was energy in between the heaven and the earth, they could all be absorbed by it.

So, Chu Feng opened the jade bottle and poured a drop of Spirit Formation Essence onto his hand. Just in case, he only licked it. Immediately, he felt a burst of wild gas exploding in his mouth.

“Mm!”

At that instant, Chu Feng hurriedly closed his mouth, and while grinding his teeth, he forcefully swallowed the gas.

Just as it entered his throat, the wild gas attacked Chu Feng's body. But just as it had indications of attacking, a burst of boundless suction power surged out of Chu Feng's dantian, forcibly taking the frenzied gas into the dantian.

At the same time, chewing sounds came from his dantian.

At that moment, Chu Feng was endlessly ecstatic because the wild Spirit Formation Essence was exactly how Chu Feng expected it to be. It was consumed by the Divine Lightning in Chu Feng's dantian without any negative effects at all. Moreover, with just a tiny bit, Chu Feng felt his aura strengthen a lot.

From then on, from little to more, Chu Feng swallowed the Spirit Formation Essence in the jade bottle bit by bit and after Chu Feng completely finished the bottle of Spirit Formation Essence, like a miracle, Chu Feng broke through. Broke into the 9th level of the Profound realm.

“This Spirit Formation Essence is indeed a good thing. With just this tiny bit, it made me break through one level of cultivation. If I get myself more of this, wouldn't I have hope to step into the Heaven realm?” Chu Feng was very excited.

He was not only happy because the Spirit Formation Essence could be refined by him, but because the Divine Lightning could be fearless of such uncontrolled energy. Which means many things people could not refine and were viewed as dangerous, Chu Feng could take them as cultivation resources and refine them.

“Haha, Chu Feng, I had said it before. You don't need to worry about cultivation resources because there are many types of cultivation resources in this world.”

“Right now, you believe me right? There are still many things like this Spirit Formation Essence in this world. To normal people, they are useless, and are even things that they keep a distance when seen, but to you, they have incomparable advantageous effects.”

“This continent of the Nine Provinces is only a tiny land. It is normal for this place to have few oddities, but I believe after you step into the Eastern Sea Region, there will be more and more things able to be used by you. Four years later, you may not have no chance.” Just at that time, Eggy also spoke. Actually, when Chu Feng consumed the Spirit Formation Essence

just now, she also broke out in a cold sweat for Chu Feng. But, after seeing him succeed, from the bottom of her heart, she felt happy for Chu Feng.

“Mm, yeah. I look more and more forward to stepping on that land.” And after hearing Eggy’s words, Chu Feng was even more endlessly looking forward to the Eastern Sea Region.

After his cultivation broke through, Chu Feng didn’t go disturb the Monstrous Monkey King and the Azure Dragon Founder. He left the Thousand Bone Graveyard, but just as he returned to the vast palace, he discovered that Li Zhangqing was sitting inside with a face full of uneasiness.

After Li Zhangqing saw Chu Feng, he hurried ran up to him and said with somewhat panic, “Chu Feng, this isn’t good.”

“School Head, what happened?” Chu Feng puzzledly asked.

“Look at this.” Li Zhangqing handed a golden letter to Chu Feng.

The letter was sent by the Jiang Dynasty, and on the letter, three dazzling big words were written.

It was a——Dynasty Summoning Order!

# Chapter 508 - Reinforcements

MGA: Chapter 508 - Reinforcements

“I never would have thought that the Jiang Dynasty was forced to this kind of state.” After seeing the letter, Chu Feng sighed.

It was because the so-called Dynasty Summoning Order was for summoning all of the peak experts in all of the powers in the continent of the Nine Provinces, telling them to go forward to the Jiang Dynasty in order to fight against a great enemy together.

Thinking about how strong the Jiang Dynasty was, so strong that even after so many years, there were no other powers that dared to invade the continent of the Nine Provinces, yet as things were at present, the Jiang Dynasty was actually asking for assistance, from the powers of many places in the Nine Provinces. It could be seen that the current Jiang Dynasty was indeed facing a huge plight.

“Chu Feng, is it possible that you know what happened?” Seeing Chu Feng’s reaction, which was of having no surprise, and rather as if everything within expectations, Li Zhangqing became aware that Chu Feng possibly knew something.

“Yeah. School Head, right now, the Jiang Dynasty, and it can even be said that the entire continent of the Nine Provinces, are facing their biggest predicament. Right now, three dynasties that control three continents are joining hands and attacking the Jiang Dynasty.”

“Actually, if it was before, the Jiang Dynasty did not fear them, but right now, the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty has been heavily injured and is powerless to battle. So, it can be said that the Jiang Dynasty is in imminent danger currently.”

“If the Jiang Dynasty is truly destroyed, I’m afraid that my Azure Dragon School will also be affected.” Chu Feng spoke the truth.

“This... I never would have thought that such a huge matter actually happened.” After knowing the truth, the uneasiness on Li Zhangqing’s face became a bit stronger.

“As things are right now, there is no other way. We can only fight with all our strengths, so hopefully the three dynasties come a bit later.” Chu Feng knew if the Azure Dragon Founder revived, with his strength, he would definitely help the Jiang Dynasty defeat the three other dynasties.

But the Azure Dragon Founder’s revival required at least one month of time, perhaps even several months of time. So, Chu Feng could only hope that the Azure Dragon Founder revive before the grand army of the three clans arrive at the gates of the Jiang Dynasty.

After that, within the current Azure Dragon School, Chu Feng gathered all the Heaven realm experts together and roughly said that at present, the Jiang Dynasty was going to face huge trouble, and that he was preparing to support them.

However, people would very possibly lose lives in that matter, so Chu Feng didn’t force anyone. Those who were willing to go, follow him; those who were unwilling to go could choose to stay. Even if they feared the arrival of the three clan’s army and were afraid of themselves, it would be fine even if they backed out of the Azure Dragon School.

But what Chu Feng did not expect was that other than several people who chose to leave the Azure Dragon School, everyone else decided to follow Chu Feng to help the Jiang Dynasty.

Especially the Monstrous Beasts of the Thousand Monster Mountain. They were filled with bloodthirst, and not a single one shrunk away.

Although it was possible that the Monstrous Monkey King said something for them to act such a way, it had to be said that the group of Monstrous Beasts indeed made Chu Feng look at them in different eyes.

So, with the entrustment of the Azure Dragon Founder, and with Zhang Tianyi, the five Monster Kings, as well as a group of Heaven realm

experts, they went forth to support the Jiang Dynasty, to defend against the attack of the three clan's army.

Many days later...

The current Jiang Dynasty was very strictly on guard. Everyone knew that the three dynasties were going to attack, and all of them were preparing to face an enemy.

Outside of the vast city, a powerful Spirit Formation had already been opened. All of the experts in the dynasty were on alert, finishing making preparations for defending against the three clan's army.

At present, the emperor of the Jiang Dynasty as well as experts such as Jiang Hengyuan stood on top of the city walls and looked at the distance from high up with complicated gazes. It was because they didn't know how much longer peace like that could be continued for.

\*swish\*

Suddenly, a dynasty elder flew from the heart of the dynasty itself, and landed on the city wall. He first respectfully saluted to the emperor as well as the many experts, then said with very slight agitation appearing, "Milord, reporting in. The army of the three clans has already entered the borders of the Nine Provinces, and is currently hurrying towards my Jiang Dynasty."

"What? So fast? How many have come? What are their cultivation?!" Hearing those words, the faces of many experts changed greatly, as surprise and panic emerged onto their faces.

"They are approaching on air. The specific number of people is very difficult to be sure of, but they are at least in the Heaven realm. Other than humans, there are also many powerful Monstrous Beasts." The elder replied.

"Then what about my Nine Provinces' powers? Count the date. They should have already received the Summoning Order we sent out right?"



Why, up until now, there are no movements?” One expert asked.

“The Jie clan, Yuangang School, Fire God Valley, and other powers have yet to arrive within the borders of my Han Province.”

“And the scouts stationed at the various provinces report that they are organizing their troops right now, preparing to leave the continent of the Nine Provinces. I’m afraid that they won’t come to support us.” The elder replied.

“Truly damn it. It was a waste for the emperor to save their lives from the hands of the Monstrous Monkey King. Right now, they actually forget such kindness.” After knowing the news, all of the dynasty experts on scene were endlessly furious.

“Whatever, we should originally not rely on others for assistance on this matter. Besides, even if they came, so what? Can they stop the three dynasties’ three old ancestors in the 9th level of the Heaven realm?”

“As things are right now, we can only rely on the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation that the former old ancestor left behind.” Just at that time, the emperor spoke.

“In my Jiang Dynasty, a hope like Wushang finally appeared with great difficulty. If some accident truly appears, what would we do then?” Jiang Hengyuan said with a face filled with worry.

“Yeah, milord, Senior Jiang is extremely correct. Right now, my Jiang Dynasty should think of ways to protect Wushang, and should get him quickly out of the Nine Provinces. How can we, at this time, let him borrow the power of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation to fight against the enemy? This is really too risky.” Many other experts went up and urged.

“If my dynasty doesn’t even exist, what use is hope? Besides, choosing to stay behind to borrow the power of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation in order to fight against the three dynasties was Wushang’s own

decision. I am very happy to be able to have a son like him.” At that instant, the corners of the emperor’s mouth rose to form proud light smile.

And after hearing his words, the group of experts also lowered their heads and said nothing. They really didn’t know how to advise him otherwise.

“Milord, this isn’t good.” But just at that time, another dynasty expert pierced through the air and came. Moreover, his face was filled with panic.

“What’s the matter?” Seeing that, the crowd’s expression all changed slightly and asked at the same time.

“There is a group of people entering my dynasty’s borders, and are currently approaching quickly towards my dynasty. Their cultivation is almost all in the Heaven realm.” The expert replied.

“Is it possible that they have come so quickly?” After knowing that, everyone tightly furrowed their brows and cast their gazes towards the distance. Furthermore, an order was made. All troops of the Jiang Dynasty, prepare to face the enemy.

And as the Jiang Dynasty prepared to face a nasty battle and as everyone locked their nervous gazes towards the distant horizon, a group of figures finally appeared within their field of view. And when the people from the Jiang Dynasty saw that group of people, their originally solemn expressions instantly became joyful.

Because, they already recognized that the ones who were coming were not the armies of the three clans, but the people they were familiar with. It was Chu Feng. The group of powerful people Chu Feng led from the Azure Dragon School had come to support the Jiang Dynasty.

# Chapter 509 - Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation

MGA: Chapter 509 - Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation

At that instant, no matter if it was the dynasty's emperor, or the dynasty's many experts, they rejoiced unexpectedly, and were endlessly excited.

Because, they never would have thought when the powers, which followed them for many years, all chose to leave, Chu Feng would bring so many experts to support them.

The proverbs said it well: "True feelings are seen when disaster strikes". Although the troops Chu Feng brought really had no way of fighting against the troops of the three great dynasties, it spoke his heart. Chu Feng's action was undoubtedly like sending coal during winter, giving the Jiang Dynasty a huge encouragement.

"I didn't expect that as my Jiang Dynasty stands on the border of life and death, this child would come help us while disregarding his life."

"No wonder Yini and Wushang, as well as Father, has such a good impressions on this child. It seems like he is truly a person who cares about feelings and camaraderie."

Seeing Chu Feng and the others, the emperor also had a face filled with relief. His already quite good impression on Chu Feng immediately became much better.

In the moment they discovered it was Chu Feng and the others who came as reinforcements, the Jiang Dynasty closed the Spirit Formation that reached the sky, opened the city gates, and welcomed Chu Feng and the others in.

“My friend Chu Feng, you indeed have camaraderie and righteousness. At a time like this, the one willing to support my Jiang Dynasty is only your Azure Dragon School.” Jiang Hengyuan looked at Chu Feng, and said while smiling.

“Ahh, Brother Hengyuan, it can’t be said like that. Haven’t I, Qi Fengyang, represented the Qilin Prince’s Mansion and come?” Just at that time, an old man walked out from the crowd. It was none other than Qi Fengyang.

“Haha, Brother Fengyang, I knew you would come.” Seeing Qi Fengyang, the smile on Jiang Hengyuan’s face became bit stronger. Although, no matter if it was cultivation or status, he and Qi Fengyang weren’t equal, the two of them got along extremely well, and their relationship was not different than brothers at all.

“That’s right. My second brother is correct. I believe that as they are the same as us, remembering that the Jiang Dynasty has not shown a small number of acts of kindness, at least the people from the World Spirit Guild will definitely come.” Chu Feng smilingly said.

The second brother he spoke of was Qi Fengyang. Back then, Chu Feng and Qi Fengyang became sworn brothers. So, Qi Fengyang became Chu Feng’s big brother. But after the Monstrous Monkey King appeared, the seniority between the three of them changed. The Monstrous Monkey King was the big brother, Qi Fengyang became the second brother, and as Chu Feng had the smallest seniority, he was the third brother.

As they spoke, a dynasty expert speedily flew over, went up to the emperor, saluted, and reported, “Milord, reporting in. All of the Heaven realm experts from the World Spirit Guild, with Gu Tianchen leading, has already entered my dynasty’s borders. Right now, they are hurrying towards my Jiang Dynasty’s headquarters.”

“Haha, Chu Feng’s words are truly accurate. I knew that this World Spirit Guild would be different from the Jie clan. At the time of my Jiang Dynasty’s catastrophe, they would definitely come and help. My Jiang Dynasty cooperating with them for this many years has indeed not been in vain.”

After learning of that news, the people from the Jiang Dynasty were even endlessly elated. Putting aside that the arrival of reinforcements at a time like this would provide them with quite a bit of battle power, purely the intention caused their morale to multiply.

“Milord!” Suddenly, another shout rang out. This time, it was an old man. Similarly, a Heaven realm expert. As he shouted for the emperor, he flew over with extremely quick speed.

“Is it possible that another power has come to assist my Jiang Dynasty?” Seeing that person, the people on scene were full of smiles, and even thought there was more good news.

“Wait.” But when they saw the face of that elder, their hearts were frightened because the on the face of the old man, it was not of joy. It was a face filled with panic.

“What’s the matter? What happened?” The emperor of the Jiang Dynasty hurried went up to ask.

“Prince, he... he couldn’t endure the power of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation and right now, he is unconscious! Milord, quickly go and see him!” The elder alarmedly said.

“What?!”

After hearing those words, the expressions of everyone on scene in the Jiang Dynasty changed greatly. Especially the emperor. His originally joyful face immediately became pale-white. He leaped, and flew towards the core zone of the dynasty.

At the same time, other experts from the Jiang Dynasty followed one after the other. Seeing that, after Chu Feng and the others looked at each other, they also followed.

And because presently, Chu Feng and the others had a reinforcement relationship with the Jiang Dynasty, there was no one who stopped them when they followed the emperor and the others.

On the road, they walked through layers of barriers, and finally, they entered a luxurious underground palace. To be more precise, it was not an underground palace, but a huge underground formation.

It was because the entire palace was engraved full of symbols and patterns. Clearly, it was a completed formation.

At that moment, a large group of people were in a cluster surrounding an area. Within the group of people, Chu Feng saw a familiar figure. It was Jiang Yini. At present, Jiang Yini had a face full of nervousness as she looked towards the middle of the group.

“The emperor has come!” After someone shouted loudly, the crowd immediately scattered. Only at that time did Chu Feng discover the one in the middle of the crowd was actually Jiang Wushang.

The current Jiang Wushang was laid on the ground. His face was deathly-white, blood was flowing out of seven of his facial orifices, and he was in a coma. An elder with the cultivation in the 7th level of the Heaven realm was currently treating Jiang Wushang.

“Wushang!” Seeing his own son in that state, the emperor was even more anxious. With a flash, he went up to Jiang Wushang and personally diagnosed Jiang Wushang’s injuries.

And after finish checking Jiang Wushang’s injuries, the emperor’s tautly stretched face finally relaxed. After personally wiping clean the traces of blood on Jiang Wushang’s face, he stood up and said, “Carry him back to his room for resting.”

“Father, how’s my brother? He’s fine right?” Seeing that, Jiang Yini hurriedly asked closely.

“Don’t worry. It’s nothing major. He only received some light internal injuries.” The emperor replied.

“Ahh, this child Wushang is too stubborn. Before, just as he entered the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation, I felt that something was wrong

with him and wanted him to back out, but he didn't listen. Luckily, the elder laid a Delivery Formation on his body, and seeing he could not hold on, he sent him out. Or else... Sigh~~~" Mentioning that matter, Jiang Yini's face was filled with helplessness and fear.

"Princess, just leave it as that. Don't talk about him in such a way. He was also thinking for our Jiang Dynasty. After all, right now, the only thing that can save our dynasty is this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation." The elder in the 7th level of the Heaven realm said.

"Then what should we do now? If even Prince Wushang's bloodline density can't endure this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation's pressure, that also means that within the current Jiang Dynasty, there is no one who can gain the power of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation. Doesn't it mean we are only waiting to die?" A dynasty expert said.

"As things have come to this point, we cannot continue dragging this out. Milord, I implore you, send the princesses and princes out of the dynasty right now and send experts to protect them as they leave the Nine Provinces. Or else, my Jiang Dynasty will truly be eradicated." Suddenly, Jiang Hengyuan knelt on the ground and pleaded to the emperor.

"Emperor, we implore you!" Simultaneously, everyone from the Jiang Dynasty knelt down.

."This..." Seeing that scene, the emperor didn't know what to do and was in an endlessly difficult situation.

"Wait." But just at that time, Chu Feng stood out, looked towards the crowd, and asked, "What's with the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation you were just talking about?"

# Chapter 510 - Entering the Formation

MGA: Chapter 510 - Entering the Formation

“Chu Feng, this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation is a formation left behind by my Jiang Dynasty’s ancestors.”

“When their ages reach the end, the previous emperors would seal the power they cultivated in their entire lives into this formation to maintain the power this formation contains.”

“And as long as a person from the Jiang Dynasty enters this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation, the power of the ancestors would attach onto their body, and within a short period of time, that person’s cultivation would rise greatly.”

“Originally, this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation was our only hope to save my Jiang Dynasty currently, but it is useless as the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation is not complete. There is extremely great pressure within, and the people who do not have a strong bloodline have no way of enduring the pressure inside.”

“Wushang can be said to have the most powerful Royal Bloodline in my current Jiang Dynasty, but even though it was him, he could not endure the pressure in this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation.” Speaking to that point, the emperor sighed with a face full of helplessness.

“Milord, since this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation has such an effect, why not let me give it a try?” Chu Feng said.

“What? You want to try this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation?” Hearing those words, the expressions of the emperor as well as everyone



from the Jiang Dynasty changed, and the gaze they looked at Chu Feng with couldn't help becoming complicated.

“Chu Feng, you cannot do that. In order to prevent outsiders from using the power in this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation, when my ancestors first laid this formation, they used special methods. Those who are not a part of my Jiang Dynasty will receive multiplied pressure after entering the formation.” Jiang Hengyuan reminded.

“Multiplied pressure... Then after enduring pressure like that, would it then be possible to gain the power of this formation?” Chu Feng smilingly asked, as if he didn't put the so-called pressure of the formation in his eyes.

“This...” Hearing those words, Jiang Hengyuan became speechless because even if it was him, he didn't know whether a person not a part of his clan could gain his ancestors' powers after enduring the multiplied pressure.

“Chu Feng, accordingly, if you are able to endure the pressure, there is no problem for the ancestors' powers to attach to you. However, because you aren't a part of my dynasty, the power you gain will be greatly diminished, and moreover, it will also be very unstable.” Just at that time, the emperor explained.

“Milord, if it is truly like that, I, Chu Feng, am willing to give it a try.” Chu Feng begged.

“Chu Feng, I've taken your intention to heart, but it's better if you don't enter this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation because you simply don't know how terrifying the pressure of this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation is.”

“Let's say it like this. Normally, the pressure in this formation is already extremely horrifying. Before, Wushang entered, but if it was some other person, I'm afraid that in the instant that person entered, he would have been heavily injured. I am no exception.”

“And if power like this is multiplied several times, it would simply be the same as a land of certain death. In the moment one enters, that person would become a pool of blood. So, it’s best if you don’t try.” The emperor patiently advised him otherwise.

“Milord, I’ve heard the people from the dynasty say, that right now, the army of the three clans have already entered the borders of the Nine Provinces. With their speed, in less than several days, they will arrive at the Jiang Dynasty.”

“At that time, would you have any methods of defending?” Chu Feng asked while smiling.

“This...” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, the emperor sank into silence. Afterwards, he said with a small smile, “Indeed, right now, we are only waiting for death, and we have no methods to stop the three clan’s army.”

“But within the clan, we have the teachings of our ancestor. Even if we die, we must guard this land, the continent of the Nine Provinces. The teachings of the ancestor cannot be disregarded. So, my Jiang Dynasty will not leave this place.”

“But Chu Feng, all of you aren’t a part of my dynasty. There is no need for you to stay behind with us as we wait for death. Right now, by coming to support my Jiang Dynasty, I am already very grateful. I have taken this kind intention to heart. All of you, please leave.”

“Ho... Milord. Since we have come today, we have no plans to leave and we have already made the preparations to live and die with the Jiang Dynasty.”

“Right now, since you don’t have any way of defending, this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation can be said to be the only chance. Since death is to the left and also to the right, why not let me try it?”

“Although my cultivation isn’t strong, I still grasp some special methods, so perhaps I can endure the pressure of the Royal Bloodline Attachment

Formation. Even if I fail, then it would only be a death.” Chu Feng lightly smiled and said.

“Chu Feng, you...” Seeing Chu Feng persist in such a way for his Jiang Dynasty and actually not caring about his life or death, the emperor also didn’t know what he should do.

“Milord, since Chu Feng is insisting, why not let him try it?”

“Yeah, milord. After all, a Reverse Delivery Formation can be laid on his body. If he can truly not endure the pressure of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation, he can be immediately sent out. At that time, he might not definitely die.” At that instant, many people from the dynasty started to urge him one after the other.

After all, they didn’t want the Jiang Dynasty to be destroyed just like that, and since Chu Feng had such courage, it at least meant he had some confidence in himself. Besides, they also knew that Chu Feng had some special abilities. After all, he was the only person to gain two types of Secret Skills from the Emperor tomb.

So, at a time like this, they also wanted to find some chance when there was no chance. Even if there was only a one percent possibility of success, they did not want to miss out on it.

“Whatever. Since you insist on this, I wouldn’t say more.”

“Overall, today, everyone in my Jiang Dynasty are grateful in our hearts, and we will never forget about your actions.”

Finally, the emperor also didn’t say much, and personally laid a formation on Chu Feng’s body. That formation, within a short distance, could send Chu Feng to his side.

The formation was called the Reverse Delivery Formation. Normally speaking, it didn’t have great uses, but using it on the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation was exactly good.

“Chu Feng, go. That’s the entrance to the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation. If you feel that something is wrong, remember to loudly yell for help. I will immediately send you back here.” The emperor pointed at the center of the palace, at the round stone stage which was only half a meter tall, and said.

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded his head with a light smile. Quickly after, lightning flashed in his eyes, and his aura rapidly rose, breaking into the 2nd level of the Heaven realm in a blink.

Quickly after, Chu Feng used the Black Tortoise Armor Technique as well, then started to walk. Step by step, he headed towards the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation.

At that instant, everyone there had their hearts pounding heavily and they were extremely nervous. Within the vast palace, it was dead silent. The only thing that could be heard was Chu Feng’s footsteps.

\*ta ta ta...\*

One step. Two steps. Three steps. Ten steps. Fifty steps. Finally, when Chu Feng walked for fifty steps, he successfully stepped onto the stage.

# Chapter 511 - Troops Arriving at the City Gates

MGA: Chapter 511 - Troops Arriving at the City Gates

\*hmm\*

And also at that instant, in the silent palace, radiance shot everywhere immediately. All of the symbols started flickering, emitting dazzling brilliance.

As for the stone stage Chu Feng stepped on, a faint-blue pillar of light charged straight towards the sky. Within the pillar of light, symbols swirled, and strands of gas were scuttling everywhere randomly.

At that instant, almost everyone on scene held their breaths. Some people couldn't even bear continue looking and closed their eyes, deeply afraid that Chu Feng could not endure the pressure of the formation, and would forcibly be crushed into pieces.

“Look! Chu Feng is fine! He is actually hanging on!”

Suddenly, someone excitedly cried out, and only at that instant did they discover that Chu Feng already walked to the middle of stone stage at that moment. Moreover, his face was unchanging, as if he didn't receive any disturbances at all.

“Heavens! This Chu Feng actually held back the pressure of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation?!”

At that instant, everyone's faces changed greatly and on all their faces, shock was filled.

Especially the people who personally witnessed how Jiang Wushang failed. At that moment, they were endlessly shocked.

It was because at present, when Chu Feng stood on the stage, the might there was clearly many times stronger compared to when Jiang Wushang stood on it. But with such horrifying pressure, it was as though Chu Feng was unrelated to it all. It was really impossible for them to be not shocked.

“Wait, look carefully. There’s a layer of light on Chu Feng’s body. That appearance... Could it be one of the Secret Skills Chu Feng grasp, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique?”

“Is it possible that the Black Tortoise Armor Technique has the effect of blocking my Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation’s pressure?”

“Yeah! Right now, although he held back the pressure from the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation, he didn’t gain the power of the formation. This likely means that the Secret Skill is interfering.”

Someone noticed the faint envelopment of light around Chu Feng’s body, and from the special aura, actually determined that it was Chu Feng’s Secret Skill, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

\*hmm\* However, just as everyone assumed it was the Black Tortoise Armor Technique helping Chu Feng block the pressure, Chu Feng willed, and dissolved his own Black Tortoise Armor Technique. He used his own body to stand in the center of the stone stage.

“Look! The cover of light has disappeared! Right now, Chu Feng is truly standing in the formation, but he has still not received any effects from the pressure!” Facing that change, their eyes were truly widened, their tongues were tied, and they were completely dumbfounded.

But the thing that made them most speechless was that currently, Chu Feng even turned around in the formation and lightly smiled towards the crowd. Then, he did a hand gesture, showing he was fine.

The formation that the people from the Jiang Dynasty simply could not endure was actually so easily and freely endured by Chu Feng. It really shocked everyone on scene.

“This Chu Feng is actually this powerful. No wonder he had such confidence. So he can truly hold off the pressure from the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation.” At that very instant, the people from the dynasty discussed with one another, as they were thoroughly stunned by Chu Feng.

“It seems like the old ancestor was correct. This Chu Feng is indeed not simple at all. Perhaps the abnormality seven years ago was truly caused by him. Within his body, there is indeed horrifying power, or else it would not be possible to endure the pressure of the formation.” Jiang Hengyuan’s expression was complicated as he hiddenly said in his heart.

At the same time, Jiang Yini, the strongest person in the Jiang Dynasty's young generation, the Jiang Dynasty’s princess, currently also roundly widened her big eyes. Her brows slightly trembled as she said in a low voice, “I never would have thought after such a long time of development in the Nine Provinces, the one to finally decide the fate of my Jiang Dynasty would be an outsider like him.”

Although Chu Feng stepping into the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation gave everyone a type of astonishment, it had to be said that it also gave everyone hope.

But, the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation was not as simple as they imagined. Although indeed, layers of power started to converge and enter Chu Feng’s body after a long time, the speed could be said to be extremely slow.

Only when the World Spirit Guild’s reinforcements arrive did the converging speed start to increase. However, even before a few days passed, the army of the three clans entered the Han Province. Also, very quickly, the troops arrived at the city gates.

The war that the Jiang Dynasty hoped to face the least finally arrived.

\*boom rumble rumble, boom rumble rumble\*

Within the dynasty’s borders, endless explosions rang out. Everyone within the circumference of several thousand miles could hear the

deafening sounds. It was even more terrifying than the sound of thunder.

And above the Jiang Dynasty's Spirit Formation, which touched the sky, the explosions were loud to the extreme. Simultaneously, layers of horrifying ripples endlessly burst out above the Spirit Formation.

In the sky, there were several figures, all wearing three different clothes. However, there were a golden and dazzling "royal" characters on their foreheads. The three troops were gathered together, and were throwing violent attacks towards the Jiang Dynasty's Spirit Formation that enveloped them.

They were the troops from the Zhao Dynasty, Ji Dynasty, and Liu Dynasty.

Also, as many Heaven realm experts, powerful World Spiritists, and many horrifying World Spirits from various Spirit Worlds called by the many World Spiritists, were breaking the formation with their full strengths, not too far away from the Spirit Formation, there was a golden chariot. The chariot was pulled by ten Heaven realm Monstrous Beasts. They were incomparably huge, and extremely overbearing. At that moment, they stood in the blue sky.

And on the chariot, there was even a huge table of dishes and wine. Three old men, and three middle-aged men, a total of six people, surrounded the table while drinking and chatting.

That sort of relaxed, free, chatting, and laughing appearance was as if the nearby overwhelming flames of war was a beautiful scene they were admiring.

They were the current emperors and old ancestors of the Zhao Dynasty, Liu Dynasty, and Ji Dynasty.

"It seems like the Jiang Dynasty's old thing truly cannot fight. Or else, with his temper, he should have already come out to face us for the battle right?" As the Zhao clan's old ancestor looked at the people from the Jiang Dynasty who had panicking expressions and were endlessly fearful, the corners of his mouth rose to form a hint of a cold smile.



“He’s pitiful enough to be schemed by his own elder brother, but his elder brother is even worse. He truly thought we would provide the priceless Year Prolongation Immoral Grasses to him!” The old ancestor of the Liu clan similarly smiled mockingly.

“A smart person gets impaired by his own smartness. He never would have expected that he, who was desperate to prolong his life, would die by our hands.” The Ji clan’s old ancestor shook his head while smiling.

“But on that topic, that Jiang Dynasty’s old thing has always been cunning, and his cultivation is also the strongest within the four of us. Is it possible he is feigning death, or pretending that he’s injured?” The Zhao clan’s elder said with a bit of worry.

“Don’t worry, this time, I have done plenty of preparation. Since we’ve come here, we must destroy his Jiang Dynasty to avenge our ancestors being killed back then.” The Ji clan’s old ancestor said while being full of confidence.

“Heh, what exactly is your secret weapon? You even made a Spirit Formation, so I can’t even check what it is.” As he spoke, the Liu clan’s old ancestor cast his gaze behind.

“Yeah, what actually is that? Don’t leave us in suspense.” At the same time, the other three people in the chariot cast their gazes over.

At that place, there was similarly a huge chariot. However, on the chariot, there was actually a small-scale palace. A Spirit Formation was laid outside of the palace, causing them to be unable to determine what exactly was inside.

# Chapter 512 - Suffering from Misery

MGA: Chapter 512 - Suffering from Misery

“This is a secret weapon, and unless there is no other choice, I will not use it. But if I use it, this Jiang Dynasty will definitely be destroyed.” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor smilingly said.

“Since it is like that, why not directly use this secret weapon? Why is there a need for us to use up so many resources?” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor puzzledly asked.

“Hoh. The reason is very simple. Although this secret weapon is powerful, it harms both them and us.”

“It’s almost time. Let us three attack together and break this dog butt formation. Let us make the Jiang Dynasty pay the price for their actions of many years ago!” Suddenly, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor leaped, became a blur of light, and came up to the Spirit Formation.

\*boom\* The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor was an expert in the 9th level of the Heaven realm. A character who infinitely neared the Martial Lord realm. He suddenly threw out a fist, and it could be said to shake the heaven and the earth. The Spirit Formation that touched the sky and enveloped the entire Jiang Dynasty also violently quivered.

“I will help you as well!” Quickly after, the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor and the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor, as well as the three emperors, attacked as well.

With the combination of three people in the 9th level of the Heaven realm and three people in the 8th level of the heaven realm, the barrier, which guarded the Jiang Dynasty, was in peril.

“This is bad. If this continues, my Jiang Dynasty’s Protection Formation will very quickly be destroyed!”

“Emperor, what should we do? The experts they’ve sent out this time is too many. Not to mention having the three old ancestors in the 9th level of the Heaven realm to fortify their position, even without the three of them, our Jiang Dynasty will still not be able to defeat them. If the Protection Formation gets destroyed, my Jiang Dynasty’s several tens of thousands of people will suffer from misery.” In a situation like that, everyone cast their gazes towards the emperor.

But the emperor was also tightly furrowing his brows, not knowing what the best course of action was. Suddenly, he leaped, and flew towards the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation.

After he neared the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation, he impatiently asked, “How is it? How is Chu Feng’s situation?”

“The power of this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation is indeed going against Chu Feng. Its merging speed with Chu Feng is extremely slow, and right now, he is only in the 7th level of the Heaven realm. But looking at the situation right now, he can very quickly step into the 8th level of the Heaven realm.” Zhang Tianyi, who was guarding that place, said.

“The 8th level of the Heaven realm? This... It’ll be too late!” Hearing Zhang Tianyi’s words, and also personally checking Chu Feng’s aura, the face of the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor was instantly like ash. As if the last bit of light within the dark night was also disappearing.

Putting aside the fact that even if Chu Feng had the cultivation of the 8th level of the Heaven realm, he would simply not be able to defeat the three old monsters.

Furthermore, with his detection, he discovered that Chu Feng’s aura was very unstable. It could be said to be very empty. The formation that their ancestors laid was indeed opposing Chu Feng. Although more or less, Chu Feng gained a portion of its power, it was very unstable.

In a situation like that, even though Chu Feng's aura could reach the 8th level of the Heaven realm, his true battle power was only equivalent to the 6th level of the Heaven realm. Not to mention fighting against the three old monsters, even the three emperors could easily kill Chu Feng.

“What’s wrong? Is it possible that the Jiang Dynasty’s Protection Formation won’t be able to hold out soon?” Seemingly seeing through the emperor’s worry, Zhang Tianyi asked.

“Ahh, no matter how much stronger the Protection Formation is, it can’t hold back the attacks from three people in the 9th level of the Heaven realm! I’m afraid it won’t last much longer. This is truly the heavens wanting my Jiang Dynasty to be destroyed!” The emperor longly sighed, then said to Zhang Tianyi, “You and Chu Feng, stay here. Do not go out. I will seal this place later, and hopefully it will help you two evade this calamity.”

“Milord, what do you mean?” Hearing those words, Zhang Tianyi tightly frowned.

“My Jiang Dynasty has very deep enmity with the Ji Dynasty, Liu Dynasty, and Zhao Dynasty. If they fear this formation and slaughter their way into my dynasty, they will absolutely not leave anyone alive. It would even be kindness to let the people from my dynasty peacefully pass away.”

“Today, my Jiang Dynasty is fated to be destroyed. In addition, we will receive suffering.”

“But you and Chu Feng aren’t a part of my dynasty. You have done enough for my dynasty, so I don’t want to drag you two down with me anymore.” The emperor lightly smiled and said. So, when he said he was going to seal this place, he didn’t want the people from the three dynasties to find Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi. He wanted them to avoid this catastrophe.

\*boom rumble rumble rumble~~~~~\*\*

But just at that time, a sudden frightening huge explosion rang out. Even the underground palace built deep underground violently swayed.

“Crap.” At that instant, the emperor’s expression changed greatly. An unseen type of fear emerged into his eyes, and without saying anything more, he turned around and flew out.

After he left the underground palace, he sealed the entrance and also laid a Concealment Spirit Formation. Only after doing that did he fly out of the disguised underground palace.

And just as he flew out of the palace, he saw the Protection Formation that enveloped the Jiang Dynasty darken. In a certain area at the western horizon, a huge hole appeared.

Broken. The only barrier protecting his Jiang Dynasty was broken. At that very instant, the army of the three dynasties, like the tide, surged into his Jiang Dynasty’s territory.

“Hahaha, the trash of the Jiang Dynasty! Today is your last day!” Suddenly, an explosive shout rang out in the sky. Quickly after, the army of the three clans started to insanely display all sorts of martial skills. From top to bottom, endlessly throwing them towards the crowd of people.

“Ahh~~~~~”

No matter how much stronger the Jiang Dynasty was, the number of Heaven realm experts was limited. Most of them were still in the Profound realm, Origin realm, and even the spiritual realm.

To them, the attacks of a Heaven realm expert was simply unstoppable and unavoidable. So, when the attacks, which filled the sky, explosively shot towards the ground like a meteor shower, the things being destroyed were not only the luxurious palaces. Countless lives of the Jiang clan were also lost.

“I’ll kill you all!” In that situation, all of the experts in the Jiang Dynasty were furious. Many people in the Heaven realm flew up and started to attack the army of the three clans, fighting against them with their lives.

However, their strengths were too weak. In front of the three clan army that had their power fortified by the three old ancestors and the three emperors, even though they were Heaven realm experts, what awaited them was only heartless slaughter.

Immediately, in the vast Jiang Dynasty, sobs continued without end and miserable cries kept on sounding. Especially the children's fearful cries. It really showed the powerlessness of the current Jiang Dynasty.

Despair. That was currently portrayed in all of the Jiang Dynasty's adults. All of them knew that the Jiang Dynasty was finished. Everyone was finished. The Jiang Dynasty that had been thriving for countless generations was going to be destroyed today.

In a situation like that, the Jiang Dynasty's emperor and its many experts still hadn't rashly attacked. They gathered in the dynasty's core zone, discussing something.

“Haha, the Jiang Dynasty's emperor, your daughter has quite a nice appearance. How about...I bring her back and make her my concubine?” Suddenly, an explosive shout resounded in the air. It was the emperor of the Zhao Dynasty. He led a group of Zhao Dynasty experts and rushed to the core zone. Not only did he discover the group of peak experts from the Jiang Dynasty, he even had his eyes on the emperor's daughter, Jiang Yini.

# Chapter 513 - The Might of One Fist

MGA: Chapter 513 - The Might of One Fist

“Hey... Emperor Zhao, this little lady is truly not bad. Not only does she have an appearance like flower and jade, her cultivation is really extraordinary. I also have my eyes on her, so what could we possibly do?” Another mad laugh rang out. The emperor of the Liu Dynasty also led a group of experts over.

“Is it not simple? The three of us will go at the same time, and this girl will belong to whoever gets his hands on her first! But I won’t do the same as you two. I won’t take her as my concubine. I only plan to destroy her cultivation, then reward her to my subordinates so she can accompany them as they ‘search for pleasure’!” Another figure flew over. It was the Ji Dynasty’s emperor.

“I will have the life of whoever dares to touch my daughter!” The face of the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor, who was guarding in front of Jiang Yini, greened from anger. He knew that the three were intentionally mocking him, mocking his Jiang Dynasty.

But as the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor, as Jiang Yini’s father, he was really unable to endure such humiliation. So, he leaped, explosively shot up, released his horrifying battle power of the 8th level of the Heaven realm, and fought against the three emperors.

“Father!!” At that instant, Jiang Yini’s expression flickered and her face was full of worry. As she spoke, she was going to rush into the sky to fight shoulder-to-shoulder with her father.

Because, no matter how much stronger her father was, when fighting alone against three other emperors who had the same cultivation, it was clearly

very taxing. In a situation like that, what awaited her father was only death.

“Princess, do not go!” But just as Jiang Yini was going to make her move, Jiang Hengyuan grabbed her wrist and said, “Quickly follow me and leave. We have already prepared a path for escaping. Right now, we will protect you and all the other princesses and princes, and leave the dynasty.”

“No! I will be the same as my father, to live and die with the dynasty!” Jiang Yini stubbornly refused.

“Princess, this is the emperor’s command. If you don’t believe me, look.” As he spoke, Jiang Hengyuan took out a badge of command.

And after seeing the badge, Jiang Yini’s face immediately froze. Turning her head back and looking towards the sky, at her father who was having a life and death battle against the three emperors, her eyes instantly reddened, and very quickly, tears fell like rain.

There was only a single badge like that, and it was personally made by her father. She even remembered what he told her when he showed her the badge. In the future, no matter who took it to find her, and no matter what they wanted her to do, she had to oblige because that person would be definitely following his wishes.

Moreover, those words were not only spoken from the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor to Jiang Yini herself. He spoke them to all his sons and daughters, and even to all of the outstanding people in the later generation of the Jiang Dynasty.

“Princess, quickly follow me. Right now, the emperor is fighting for you, for the final chance. Although, as the emperor, he has to follow the teachings of the ancestor and live and die with the Jiang Dynasty, as a father, he hopes that his sons and daughters can continue living. So, ultimately, he went against the ancestor’s teachings, handed this badge to me, and told me to protect all of you as you leave this place.” Jiang Hengyuan was afraid Jiang Yini didn’t understand so he explained.



“Ahh!”

\*boom\*

But just at that time, a cry of pain suddenly rang out from the sky. Quickly after, a body fell from above and fiercely shot into the ground's surface. The strong power kept on shattering a palace from the collision, and even left a huge pit in the ground.

“Father!” At that moment, Jiang Yini loudly howled, then leaped and rushed into the huge pit.

“Crap.” At the same time, many dynasty experts such as Jiang Hengyuan also flew over, because the one who fell from the sky was none other than his Jiang Dynasty's emperor.

“Yini, your father has been useless. Not only could I not protect the several tens of thousands of clan members, I can't even protect you, my daughter.” At that instant, the face of the Jiang Dynasty's emperor was of defeat. Seven of his facial orifices had blood flowing out, and his chest was even in a “凹” shape. His breastbone was shattered, his skin was cracked, and a large amount of blood was presently flowing out gradually.

“No! Father, in my heart, you are the most excellent father.” Jiang Yini's face was filled with tears.

“Ha! He's actually this weak, unable to even hold on for a few rounds.” Suddenly, a huge phlegm flew down from the sky, landing on the face of the Jiang Dynasty's emperor.

It was from the Liu Dynasty's emperor. Currently, he was standing in the sky, lightly squinting his eyes, and mockingly examining the Jiang Dynasty's emperor who was heavily injured.

“Yeah! I heard his father had overwhelming battle power and was able to fight against our own fathers without being defeated, so I even thought his son also had quite impressive battle power. However, I didn't expect him

to be so useless.” The Zhao Dynasty’s emperor also ridiculed with cold words.

“That’s right. If I knew he was so useless, there was no need for the two of you to attack just now. I myself would have been enough to defeat him.” Not only did the Ji Dynasty's emperor speak to mock, his face was filled with smug.

“All of you should be ashamed of being the masters of clans. Putting aside the fact that all of you joined hands to harm my father, you even so shamelessly speak to mock him. All of you are truly despicable people!” Seeing her own father being humiliated by them in such a way, Jiang Yini’s little face reddened from anger, and she was endlessly furious.

“The victor is the king and the loser is the thief. Back then, the humiliation your ancestor gave my ancestor was thousands of times worse than this!” The emperor of the Liu Dynasty coldly shouted.

“Ahh, Emperor Liu, where’s the need to waste your breath with them? Today, we want them to pay the price for their ancestor’s actions. Since this girl is so sharp with her mouth, let me play with her for a while.” The Zhao Dynasty’s emperor coldly laughed, then suddenly, dashed towards Jiang Yini.

“Protect the princess!” Seeing that, Jiang Hengyuan and the other dynasty experts hurriedly flew into the sky. They displayed protection methods by opening a Defense Spirit Formation.

“Even a pile of trash dares to block my road? Move!” However, the Zhao Dynasty’s emperor casually palmed, causing the Spirit Formation laid by the combined power of Jiang Hengyuan and the others to immediately disintegrate. At the same time, the crowd cried out in pain and fell to the side. Their faces were already deathly-white, as they were heavily injured.

“Haha little lady, you truly don’t have any manners. It’s best to let me properly teach you some.” The Zhao Dynasty’s emperor kept on loudly laughing. When he spoke, he had already went up to Jiang Yini. He

extended his hand, and was actually shamelessly aiming to grab Jiang Yini's protruding two peaks.

“You want to teach Princess Yini manners? That'll depend whether you have the ability or not!”

\*boom\*

But just at that time, an explosive shout suddenly came from the dynasty's core zone. Simultaneously, black dirt rolled on the surface, and two figures shot out from beneath the ground's surface.

One of them had extremely quick speed. Almost with a blink, he arrived in front of the Zhao Dynasty's emperor. He punched directly, throwing an attack towards the Zhao Dynasty.

“Where did this brat come from and dares to disturb this good occasion? Move to the side.” Only after turning his head to look did the Zhao Dynasty's emperor discover that the one who was approaching was a young man. So, he disdainfully snorted coldly, casually waved his hand, wanting to slap the young man to the side.

But who would have thought that the young man was actually so powerful? Just as his fist landed on the arm of the Zhao Dynasty's emperor, a snapping sound rang out, and the young man had actually snapped the emperor's arm.

After that, the power of his punch did not diminish, and rather became even stronger. With a bang, it collided into the face of the Zhao Dynasty's emperor. Blood splattered as his head was shattered and split into pieces, and he died immediately.

# Chapter 514 - Reversing the Battle Situation

MGA: Chapter 514 - Reversing the Battle Situation

The sudden scene that came shocked all who noticed it. Especially the two emperors who were still in the air. Their faces suddenly changed, and they loudly questioned, “Who are you?”

“The person who will have your lives.” Chu Feng coldly smiled, then stuck out his hand and grabbed the air. A burst of boundless suction power explosively surged out.

“Ahh!” And with that burst of power, the two emperors who were both in the 8th level of the Heaven realm actually didn’t have any strength to escape. They both fell down and crashed in front of Chu Feng.

After the two crashed, Chu Feng suddenly extended his hand again and with two bangs, punched the area of their dantian.

“Ahh~~~~” The two punches caused the Liu Dynasty’s and Ji Dynasty’s emperor to immediately cry out. A large mouthful of blood was sprayed as they covered their dantian area with their hands and started to unendingly roll on the ground.

Although Chu Feng’s two punches didn’t destroy their cultivation, it heavily injured the two of them. At least temporarily, they were the same as two useless people, as they lost the battle power they had before.

“Chu Feng, you!” At that instant, not a single person’s face on scene didn’t change greatly because they were able to feel that currently, Chu Feng’s aura was only in the 8th level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, it was extremely unstable. But even so, Chu Feng was still able to easily kill the three emperors if he wished to.

To know for the later stages of the Heaven realm, the distance between every single level was extremely big, yet Chu Feng was relying on the unstable cultivation and killed a genuine person in the 8th level of the Heaven realm. It was truly difficult for them to be not shocked.

Chu Feng did not pay attention to their stunned gazes. He abruptly extended his two arms, formed two eagle's claws with his hands, grabbed the collars of the two emperor, and said to them, "Yell for help."

"What?!" The two emperors, who were receiving sharp pain, were both taken aback by the words coming from Chu Feng suddenly.

\*bam bam\* Seeing that, Chu Feng didn't waste any breath. He raised his arm and gave their faces two big slaps. Afterwards, he said, "I told you to yell for help. If you don't, I'll destroy the root of your lives. [1]"

"You..." Hearing those words, their faces instantly greened. Despite being unendingly furious, they didn't dare to retort. So, they loudly howled towards the sky, "Help!"

After those words were spoken, they were like claps of thunder, attracting the attention of everyone in the Jiang Dynasty. Especially the people from the three clans. They dashed and flew over from the dynasty's core zone. Even the three old ancestors, who didn't attack yet and were just sitting, watching the liveliness, immediately came over.

And when the three old ancestors saw the scene on the ground, their originally calm faces couldn't help but change because they never would have thought that of their three sons, at present, one was dead and two were injured.

"Who killed my son?! I will have his life!" Seeing his son, who he meticulously raised for many years, killed by someone, the old ancestor of the Zhao Dynasty was incomparably enraged. He furiously howled, and ignoring all reason, he directly threw a punch to the ground.

That punch was extremely horrifying. Before he even descended, the ground already intensely trembled. Countless cracks spread, and a large

area of land collapsed.

Not to mention the people in the Profound realm, even the people in the Heaven realm could not hold back such horrifying pressure. At that instant, they were forced to lay on the ground, and they could not stand up.

“Break!”

But just at that time, Chu Feng threw out a punch. With a boom, he actually dissolved the palm of the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor with his own power.

“Senior Hengyuan, look after these two.” Chu Feng threw the two emperors to the front of Jiang Hengyuan. Quickly after, he loudly howled to the sky, “Your son was killed by me! If you can, come!” As he spoke, Chu Feng had already risen into the air and fought against the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor.

“This brat is truly looking to die!” Seeing that, the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor coldly snorted, then prepared to attack.

“Wait.” However, before he made his move, he was stopped by the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor on the side. After looking down at the two emperors who were under Jiang Hengyuan’s control, he sent a mental message to the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor, saying, “Look carefully. Your son and my son, right now, are in their hands. If we attack at this time, they will be in danger.”

“This...”

“Are we just going to watch as that old guy fights that brat alone? He doesn’t seem to be simple!” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor was a bit worried for the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor.

“Don’t worry. Although that brat’s battle power is strong, something’s off with his aura. If I’m not mistaken, he should have either used special Forbidden Medicine or used a special formation to borrow some power. It is impossible for him to be victorious.” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor said.

“That’s...true! Your observation is really quite detailed.” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor looked carefully, and discovered that indeed, it was as he said. Chu Feng’s aura was very unstable, so only then did he calm down.

“Old ancestor of the Liu Dynasty, old ancestor of the Ji Dynasty! Tell your clan members to stop or else I’ll kill your sons!” Jiang Hengyuan was an intelligent person, so in the instant Chu Feng threw the two emperors to him, he understood his intentions. Thus, without hesitation, he currently used Heaven power to howl loudly towards the sky.

After those words were spoken, all experts from the Liu Dynasty and Ji Dynasty cast their gazes towards the two old ancestors in the sky.

And though the two old ancestors didn’t speak, they gestured with their hands. After seeing the hand gestures, the experts from the two clans came to the two old ancestors’ side and no longer attacked the people from the Jiang Dynasty.

In a situation like that, only the people from the Zhao Dynasty were still attacking the Jiang Dynasty.

But as the emperor was already dead, and the old ancestor was being bound, the Zhao Dynasty itself was clearly unable to defeat the Jiang Dynasty.

With the assistance of many Monstrous Beasts and many World Spirit Guild experts, the Jiang Dynasty’s situation quickly turned from bad to good, and actually started to slaughter the people from the Zhao Dynasty.

“Liu clan, Ji clan, what are you doing? Why aren’t you attacking and helping me kill this brat?!” Noticing that his two allies were actually merely observing with their hands in their sleeves, the old ancestor of the Zhao Dynasty furiously howled.

“

Sigh

, your opponent is only a brat, and he only has the cultivation of the 8th level of the Heaven realm. If the three of us join hands to take care of a brat like him, and this gets known, we will not be able to avoid being the laughingstock in other people's mouths. It's better if you take care of him yourself." The Ji Dynasty's old ancestor said while smiling.

"Yeah, Brother Zhao, that brat only borrowed some special power and it isn't his real cultivation. I'm sure with your abilities, it shouldn't be hard to defeat him." The Liu Dynasty's old ancestor also smiled.

"You two old things are indeed not trustworthy!" Seeing his own clan members being reversely killed currently, the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor grinded his teeth from anger.

"Haha, old bastard! Your allies aren't too reliable. They are already selling you out so quickly!" As Chu Feng fought against the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor, he sent a mental message to ridicule.



# Chapter 515 - Panic and a Cold Smile

MGA: Chapter 515 - Panic and a Cold Smile

“Hmph. Brat, don’t even think of being arrogant. Even if they don’t help out, I can still easily kill you and avenge my son.”

The old ancestor of the Zhao Dynasty flipped his palm. A silver-coloured pike then appeared within his hand.

The pike was covered with symbols. As the symbols and radiance swirled, they emitted a unique powerful aura. It was a Mastered Elite Armament.

Quickly after, the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor waved both of his arms. The tip of the pike trembled, then tens of thousands of pike tips shot out. Like a pointed white-coloured storm, they densely flew towards Chu Feng.

The stronger one was, the greater they could show the might of the Elite Armament, and in the hands of the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor, the expert in the 9th level of the Heaven realm, the Elite Armament could be said to have shown its strongest power.

So, when the tens of thousands of pike tips appeared, the sky and earth trembled, the weather changed, and the might shown was extremely frightening.

At that instant, almost everyone in the Jiang Dynasty broke out in a cold sweat for Chu Feng because the attacks of the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor were indeed very terrifying.

However, Chu Feng did not evade nor dodge. He clenched to form a fist, then the Asura Ghost Axe was grasped within his hand. Afterwards, he waved his arm, and countless black-coloured blades of light surged out from his axe.

When the black-coloured blades of light interweaved with the tens of thousands of pike tips, instantly, explosions burst out, ripples spread endlessly, and even the remnants themselves caused several people to die.

*\*boom\** But suddenly, within the ripples, there were actually more pike tips shooting out and flying towards Chu Feng. The attacks that the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor made actually broke through Chu Feng's black-coloured blade of light.

*\*whoosh\** In a situation like that, Chu Feng also lightly furrowed his brows. He hurriedly used the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens and became a blur of light. He flew towards the distance and avoided the attacks.

“Indeed, although this brat's battle power is extremely powerful, after all, his aura is unstable and his cultivation is one level weaker. He will definitely not beat that old Zhao guy.” Seeing that scene, the corners of the Liu Dynasty's old ancestor's mouth rose to form a hint of a relieved smile.

Although he did not interfere, in reality, he was hoping that the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor would win because right now, he, the Liu Dynasty, and the Ji Dynasty, were being threatened by the Jiang Dynasty, so they were unable to attack them. The ones able to attack the Jiang Dynasty was only the Zhao Dynasty.

As long as the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor could defeat Chu Feng, within the Jiang Dynasty, there would be no one who could hold the Zhao Dynasty back. Even if the two of them didn't do anything, the Zhao Dynasty itself could easily eradicate the Jiang Dynasty.

“Arrogant brat, let me see where you are escaping to!” Seeing his attacks were pressuring Chu Feng, the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor even became conceited. The silver-coloured pike in his hand endlessly waved, madly stabbing towards Chu Feng.

But it was useless as he underestimated Chu Feng's speed. The speed of Chu Feng's Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens climbed by many times along with the great rise of his cultivation. In a situation like that, no

matter how much stronger the Elite Armament of the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor was, he was unable to harm Chu Feng in the slightest, and the attacks were all evaded by Chu Feng.

“Damned brat, are you the reincarnation of a monkey? Do you only know how to run everywhere?” After the old ancestor's attacks were dodged several times, his eyes could spit fire from being furious as he gnashed his teeth.

“Old bastard, your abilities are inferior so you start insulting people? You have truly wasted so many years of living and you lack any good qualities.”

“This young master here has quick speed, but what can you do about it? If you can do something about it, go ahead; if you can't, then just accept it. Just from running, I can run you to death!” Chu Feng didn't feel shame from escaping. Rather, he mocked the inferior speed of the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor.

“Ignorant brat, don't even think of being arrogant! Do you truly think only you have bodily martial skills?” The Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor coldly snorted, then stepped on air, and while holding the silver-coloured pike, he became a blur of light and rushed towards Chu Feng. His speed was actually a lot quicker than Chu Feng's Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens.

“This is bad! After all, he is truly in the 9th level of the Heaven realm, a character who infinitely nears the Martial Lord realm.”

“With Chu Feng's currently unstable cultivation of the 8th level of the Heaven realm, I'm afraid he will not be able to defeat the old ancestor.” Seeing the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor who was speedily chasing and approaching Chu Feng bit by bit, Jiang Yini and the others all tightly knitted their brows, breaking out in cold sweat for Chu Feng.

“All of you don't understand my Junior Chu Feng.” But just at that time, Zhang Tianyi who had appeared along with Chu Feng smiled.

“Wha-what do you mean by that?” After hearing Zhang Tianyi’s words, they revealed puzzled expressions.

“Just look. Although this person has very powerful strength, when he is against my Junior Chu Feng, he will definitely be defeated.” On the corners of Zhang Tianyi’s mouth, he still wore the light smile that was filled with confidence.

And after hearing his words, although Jiang Yini and the others still had their doubts, it had to be said that their tense hearts did indeed calm down quite a bit. They didn’t say anything more and continued casting their gazes towards the sky.

Just at that moment, the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor was less than a hundred meters away from Chu Feng. Furthermore, the pike in his hand quivered once again, and like storms and pear blossoms falling from trees, they shot out.

“Crap.” Seeing that, Chu Feng’s face changed greatly as he revealed an unsettled expression. Because, at such a distance, he was already unable to dodge the attack of the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor.

“I’ll kill you!” In a situation like that, Chu Feng furiously howled and endlessly waved the Asura Ghost Axe in his hand. He actually rushed towards the old ancestor, akin to a fish doing whatever it took to break the net surrounding it, and appearing as if he wanted to die with the old ancestor by dragging him down with him.

“Ignorant brat. If you want to bet your life, you must also have the strength to do so.” However, seeing the many black-coloured blades of light flying from the Asura Ghost Axe, the smile on the face of the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor became wider and wider because there was simply no way of fighting against his pike tips by only relying on attacks such as the black-coloured blades of light. Chu Feng’s current action was simply suicidal.

But he didn’t notice that despite having a panicking expression on his face, the corners of Chu Feng’s mouth formed a hint of an unperceivable cold



So, just as the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor turned around, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique already flew over, and it ferociously collided into his back.

“Ahh!”

\*poof\*

At that instant, the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor immediately cried out in pain. He opened his mouth, and fresh-red blood shot out his mouth like a pillar.

At the same time, crackling sounds came from various places on his body. The bones and organs in his entire body at many places were forcibly shattered from the shock.

# Chapter 516 - Looking in a New Light

MGA: Chapter 516 - Looking in a New Light

“Eat another one of my attacks!”

\*roar~~~~~”

After the palm, Chu Feng quickly threw another. The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique this time was a lot stronger than before.

And the already heavily injured Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor naturally could not defend against Chu Feng strike. So, he hurried yelled loudly, “Quickly help me!”

But it was too late. Just as his voice was going to sound yet didn’t, Chu Feng’s second White Tiger Slaughtering Technique already collided and fiercely crashed into his body.

\*bang\* This time, he couldn’t even cry out in pain. With a muffled explosion, he became a pool of blood, and splattered everywhere from the high sky.

Dead. The expert in the 9th level of the Heaven realm, the old ancestor of the Zhao Dynasty, was killed by Chu Feng just like that.

“Heavens! He actually did it! He actually, with the unstable cultivation of the 8th level of the Heaven realm, killed the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor who was in the 9th level of the Heaven realm.”

Personally seeing that scene, the Jiang Dynasty crowd all roundly widened their eyes, their mouths were very widely opened, and their faces were filled with shock.

It was because it was something that they felt was impossible, yet just now, Chu Feng finished such an impossible thing in front of their faces.

“Hmph. I told you that you underestimated my Junior Chu Feng too much. With his talent, even if his cultivation is unstable, with the 8th level of the Heaven realm challenging someone in the 9th level of the Heaven realm alone, there is absolutely no problem.”

“He only pretended to be weak because he wanted to quickly take care of the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor. When his guard was lowered, then he made an unexpected surprise attack.”

“It could be said that for this battle, the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor not only lost in terms of cultivation, he lost even more in terms of tactics. This is the suppression of intelligence, and the strength of intelligence is also a part of power.” Zhang Tianyi lightly smiled and said. Moreover, he wore a touch of smug on his face, as if the person who defeated the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor was him.

“It seems like we truly underestimated Chu Feng.” After hearing Zhang Tianyi's words, everyone looked at Chu Feng in another light. They never would have thought that Chu Feng, who was only seventeen years old, actually had such abundance of fighting experience, and actually used tactics to quickly kill an old ancestor who was over a hundred years old.

“Ancestor!”

“You killed my clan's emperor, and you also killed my clan's old ancestor! I'll kill you!”

“I will butcher you!”

At that instant, the people from the Zhao Dynasty were incomparably enraged. After the emperor was killed, and even the old ancestor was killed, they really went insane.

So, within the dynasty, all of the Zhao Dynasty's experts surrounded Chu Feng, and within furious howls as well as dense killing intent, they aimed



to kill Chu Feng.

“Good timing.” However, facing the Zhao Dynasty’s members who were surrounding and attacking him, Chu Feng only returned a large smile, then formed a fist with one hand. The Elite Armament, the Asura Ghost Axe, appeared once again and as he waved it, blades of black light appeared.

The areas the black light passed caused the air to tremble and to crack. The people who touched it did not become pools of blood, but mists of blood, or were forcibly cut into pieces.

Even the emperor was killed by Chu Feng with one strike, and even the old ancestor couldn’t defeat Chu Feng, so there was no need to mention the experts of the Zhao Dynasty. So-called experts like them, to the current Chu Feng, were useless no matter how many came.

With only a blink, over half of the experts sent by the Zhao Dynasty were cut down, and people who had fear grow in their hearts and wanted to escape were also killed by the Jiang Dynasty’s experts.

“This brat has very vicious methods. Not only is his strength overwhelming, his mentality far surpasses those in the same generation. In the future, he will definitely have great achievements.”

“I never would have thought that such a character would appear in the Jiang Dynasty.” Seeing Chu Feng who was greatly massacring yet didn’t even frown a bit, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor started to feel bursts of uneasiness because a character like him would be best to be befriended. If he were to be an enemy, there would be countless future problems, and looking at Chu Feng’s relationship with them right now, it was clearly the latter.

“Brat, what is your name?” At the same time, the old ancestor of the Liu Dynasty was also shocked by Chu Feng’s action, and actually spoke to inquire Chu Feng’s name.

“Chu Feng!” Chu Feng loudly replied.

“Chu Feng, are you a part of the Jiang Dynasty?” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor asked with shock.

“I am indeed not a part of the Jiang Dynasty, but I am a part of the continent of the Nine Provinces.” Chu Feng replied with a light smile.

Hearing Chu Feng’s response, the face of the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor turned to joy as he hurriedly said, “My friend Chu Feng, today, we are only ending a grudge from the past with the Jiang Dynasty. This matter is unrelated to you from the start.”

“How about this. As long as you don’t interfere with today’s matters, my Ji Dynasty and the Liu Dynasty will promise to give you two hundred thousand Heaven beads. How about it?”

“What? Two hundred thousand Heaven beads?” Hearing those words, the people from the Jiang Dynasty couldn’t help but longly gasp. At the same time, expressions of worry also emerged onto their faces.

Two hundred thousand Heaven beads. It was a huge number. If one were to ask how much his Jiang Dynasty would have after selling all their wealth, they would only get one hundred thousand Heaven beads.

But right now, the two dynasties were actually taking out two hundred thousand Heaven beads. Even if they didn’t want to worry, they couldn’t.

After all, at present, Chu Feng was their only hope in saving the Jiang Dynasty. If Chu Feng accepted the enticement and agreed to not interfere with this matter, their Jiang Dynasty would certainly be destroyed.

“Two hundred thousand Heaven beads? You are truly quite generous, but you look down on me too much. Am I, Chu Feng, a person who forgets about camaraderie after seeing money?” However, what relieved the Jiang Dynasty crowd was that without even thinking, Chu Feng refused immediately.

It had to be said that the favourable impression on Chu Feng from the several tens of thousands of Jiang Dynasty members rose to the extreme,

even to the state of adoration.

“My friend Chu Feng, do you mean that you will interfere with today’s matters no matter what?” At that instant, the sword-like brows of the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor slanted inwards, and a hint of killing intent emerged into his eyes.

“Ahh, don’t say it like that. Actually, I, Chu Feng, only want to spar alone with the two of you. Old ancestor of the Ji Dynasty, can you give me some pointers?” Chu Feng clasped his hands towards the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor.

“Hahahaha~~~~~” After hearing those words, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor suddenly faced the sky and loudly laughed. Only after laughing for a good while did he say to Chu Feng, “You brat, you’ve truly thought of a good plan.”

“Coercing us with our sons so we can’t attack, then in the name of sparing, fight against us one-on-one.”

“Are you preparing to also spar with him after killing me? Then after killing him, kill my son and his son as well as everyone from our two clans?”

Facing the words of the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor, Chu Feng did not reply. He smilingly looked at the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor and said, “Old ancestor of the Liu Dynasty. Don’t worry. As long as you don’t interfere when I spar with the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor, after the sparing finishes, I will definitely release your son.”

“This...” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, his expression changed, and only after a good while of hesitation did he say, “Are your words true?”

# Chapter 517 - Ten Days and Ten Nights

MGA: Chapter 517 - Ten Days and Ten Nights

“Do not get lured into his trap. Right now, you and I must join hands to handle him, or else if my Ji Dynasty gets destroyed, your Liu Dynasty will absolutely not be able to escape either.” Seeing that the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor was actually moved by Chu Feng’s words, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor quickly, laboriously, urged him otherwise.

“But, I cannot ignore the life of my son!” Hearing that, the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor said to the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor with a face full of helplessness.

“You have so many sons, so can you not lose just this one?” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor howled.

“Of course I can’t! This is the son that I have carefully raised for many years, my most excellent son!” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor replied.

“You, you, you!” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor was not lightly angered. Only after continuously saying three you’s did he stabilize his emotions and said, “You are truly blind, too blind!”

“Is the life of a single son worth more than tens of thousands of your Liu Dynasty’s lives? Is it more important than the mission of vengeance for your ancestor?!”

“I...” At that instant, the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor went into silence once again.

“Do not hesitate anymore. If the emperor’s gone, you can continue developing. But if the dynasty is gone, everything is gone. Do you want to become the Liu Dynasty’s criminal, hated for eternity?”

“Right now, that old thing Zhao has died, and even the experts of the Zhao Dynasty have died. If you and I join powers and also destroy this Jiang Dynasty, coincidentally, the wealth and territory of the two clans can be evenly split between us two.”

“You only need to give up one son. Not only can you protect the Liu Dynasty, you can even become an unprecedented character who has done a great deed for the Liu Dynasty! Your future generations will see you a model, see you as a hero!” Seeing the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor being moved, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor hurriedly continued urging.

“Father, go ahead! For my Liu clan, so what if I’m sacrificed?” Just at that time, the Liu Dynasty’s emperor who was being held hostage by Jiang Hengyuan actually loudly yelled as well.

“Old Ancestor Liu, listen to my father! That Chu Feng brat is cunning, and even if you stand on the side and do nothing but watch, he will absolutely not let you go.” At the same time, the Ji Dynasty’s emperor also loudly yelled.

“Fine. You and I will join hands to kill this brat.” Finally, the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor bit down on his teeth, and after making a decision, he went first and flew towards Chu Feng.

“Haha, that’s right!” Seeing that, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor rejoiced and didn’t hesitate as well. Quickly after, he followed.

“Whatever. Today, I shall fight against two as one, and spar with you two.”

“But the people from the Ji Dynasty and Liu Dynasty, listen up. When I spar with your old ancestors, do not touch the Jiang Dynasty, or else your emperor’s head might not stay attached.” Chu Feng was not afraid, and after a loud yell, he held the Asura Ghost Axe and fought against the two old ancestors.

At first, seeing the two old ancestors make their move, Jiang Hengyuan prepared to immediately behead the two emperors.

But after hearing Chu Feng's words, he hesitated for a bit, and when the experts from the two clans who were originally all ready to go, yet didn't attack because of Chu Feng's words, Jiang Hengyuan thoroughly dispelled the thought of killing the two emperors.

“Chu Feng is truly impressive. This sort of thinking... even I feel inferior.”

At that instant, Jiang Hengyuan endlessly admired Chu Feng because Chu Feng was really too sharp. Although threatening the two old ancestors with the two emperors failed, with a turn of words, he used the two emperors to hold the army of the two clans.

And if it wasn't for Chu Feng who suddenly spoke, and if Jiang Hengyuan killed the two emperors, as Chu Feng faced the two old ancestors for battle, the army of the two clans would definitely also fight against the Jiang Dynasty with their lives.

With the Jiang Dynasty's current situation, they would only have the advantage if they fought against a single clan, but if they fought against two clans on their own, they would definitely be disadvantaged. In addition, all of the people from the two clans were experts, whereas many in the Jiang Dynasty were weak, so if they fought, they would definitely have high casualties.

So, that was why he admired Chu Feng. It could be said that once again, Chu Feng saved the people from his Jiang Dynasty.

As for the two old ancestors, although they already made the preparations for sacrificing their sons, if they didn't need to sacrifice them, naturally, they didn't want the situation to be like a “dead fish broken net”, of which either the fish dies, or the net breaks.

Instead, as long as they kill Chu Feng first then destroy the Jiang Dynasty, it would not be too late. So, they didn't order their clan members to attack, and only fought against Chu Feng with their full strengths.

But they could do nothing as they underestimated Chu Feng. Although their strength was extremely strong after joining hands, and after seeing

Chu Feng's Secret Skill, they didn't dare to be careless around Chu Feng, and they very seriously faced him, fully concentrating on the battle, they were still unable to gain the slightest bit of advantage.

“Haha, Chu Feng you little boy, you are truly not bad. I do admire you more and more. You are actually able to fight evenly against these two guys with such an unstable aura.” Eggy, who was in Chu Feng's body, also sighed in admiration towards Chu Feng's battle power because she could understand, the most, how empty Chu Feng's current cultivation was. To be more precise, Chu Feng, at this moment, simply couldn't be said to be really in the 8th level of the Heaven realm.

Moreover, the power gained from the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation was extremely unstable, and looking at certain angles, it seriously damaged Chu Feng's battle power.

And that was Chu Feng. If it was a normal person, not to mention fighting in such a way, their life would possibly even be endangered because of the power.

So, that was why Eggy was so surprised. Because, it was Chu Feng who stabilized the unstable power to the extreme. Chu Feng's power of control forced her to be so surprised.

“Senior Hengyuan, I can hold these two old things. Take this chance and quickly move the dynasty's young generation away right now.” Suddenly, Jiang Hengyuan's expression changed. He received Chu Feng's mental message.

And after receiving the mental message, Jiang Hengyuan didn't delay. He hurriedly, and hiddenly, started arrangements. He wanted to move the outstanding young generation of the dynasty out without anyone knowing.

But at present, within the dynasty, the people from the Liu Dynasty and Ji Dynasty were already there. It wasn't impossible to want to secretly move the young generation away, but it required a very long time.

At first, Jiang Hengyuan was even worried that there was no time, but what everyone didn't expect was Chu Feng actually fought against the two old ancestors for ten full days and nights.

The astonishing battle of ten days and ten nights shocked everyone there because the attacks of the two old ancestors were extremely fierce, and that type of battle could be said to be very straining.

It had to be said that in the ten days, the strengths of the two old ancestors were exhausted quite a bit. But compared to them two, Chu Feng's face was pale-white, and his aura was getting weaker and weaker.

If it was a normal situation, not to mention only ten days and ten nights, even if it was ten more days and nights, Chu Feng would not be like that. He would definitely be more spirited than the two old ones.

But now, after all, Chu Feng was using borrowed power, and it was even extremely unstable power. In a situation like that, being able to withstand ten days and ten nights could absolutely be said to be a miracle.



# Chapter 518 - I Am The Azure Dragon Founder

MGA: Chapter 518 - I Am The Azure Dragon Founder

\*boom rumble rumble\*

Suddenly, another explosion burst out in the sky. At the same time, a berserk energy ripple spread circularly, and in the areas it passed, the air twisted.

Within the ten days, explosions such as that could be said to have rang out countless times, but this time, it was especially eye-catching.

Because after this explosion, because of physical exhaustion, Chu Feng was finally unable to evade in time and was struck by the remnant ripple, causing him to fall from the sky.

“Chu Feng!” Seeing that, Jiang Hengyuan hurried leaped and caught Chu Feng into his embrace.

But in the instant he held Chu Feng, Jiang Hengyuan’s expression changed because he could feel how weak the current Chu Feng was. He was truly extremely weak.

Furthermore, the power he gained from the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation was disappearing rapidly. Very soon, Chu Feng’s aura turned from the 8th level of the Heaven realm to the 2nd level of the Heaven realm.

And after the lightning in his eyes disappeared, Chu Feng’s aura continued to slide down. He returned to his real cultivation, the 9th level of the Profound realm.

“Chu Feng, are you okay?” After Chu Feng landed on the ground, everyone surrounded him. Within the gaze they looked at Chu Feng with, there was worry, there was pain, but even more, there was gratitude.

Although right now, they were still unable to avoid death, within the time of ten days, they already secretly moved Jiang Yini and the others, from the dynasty’s young generation, away, and that chance was completely fought for by Chu Feng himself with his own strength.

“Don’t worry, I’m fine.” Although he no longer had the power of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation, Chu Feng’s face turned quite better, and that was exactly because Chu Feng didn’t need to exhaust extremely large amounts of strength to stabilize the power.

“Hahaha, so it was a brat in the 9th level of the Profound realm. You truly do have quite some skill to be actually able to stabilize such powerful aura with a cultivation like that and forcefully fight against us two for ten days and ten nights.”

“But sadly, at the end, the young is ignorant! You didn’t know that we were intentionally dragging the battle out, dragging it until the power that didn’t belong to you disappeared! Hahaha...” Suddenly, the smug laughter of the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor rang out.

“Hoh? Really? You truly think that you will definitely win today?” Chu Feng suddenly coldly smiled.

“Brat, do you think you still have a chance to win?” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor asked mockingly.

“I naturally knew that you were intentionally stalling for time.”

“But you absolutely would not have thought that I too was also intentionally stalling for time.” Chu Feng coldly smiled and said.

“You were stalling for time as well? What’s the point of you stalling for time?”

“Oh, I know. So you were using that time to move some people of the Jiang Dynasty away.”

“Too naive. It is but a group of people in the young generation. Do you truly think they can successfully escape? If I want to eradicate them, they will absolutely not be able to escape this continent of the Nine Provinces.” After the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor scanned downwards at the ground, he saw some clues.

“Wrong. The reason why I stalled for time was not for that. It was to wait for reinforcements which can destroy all of you.” Chu Feng lightly smiled and said.

“Reinforcements?! Who are you scaring? Right now, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, is it possible that you can still find a person who can defeat us?” It had to be said that the word “reinforcement” caused the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor to panic a bit.

Because, after constant fighting for ten days and ten nights, he truly experienced the unsimpleness of Chu Feng. Although he and the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor did indeed drag the battle out, such actions was a method within no methods.

At first, the two of them originally wanted to quickly kill Chu Feng with their combined powers and solidify their state of victory, but they could do nothing as Chu Feng was really too strong. Not only was his battle power not weak, his reactions were extremely quick as well.

Not only were the two of them unable to suppress Chu Feng in terms of battle power, their tactics were seen through one after the other by Chu Feng. In the battle of ten days, they could truly be said to be “setting up camp at every step” as they very gradually advanced forward, and their minds were thoroughly exhausted.

So, when Chu Feng said he had reinforcements, he believed it. Not only did he believe it, he also panicked. In this continent of the Nine Provinces, if there was even a young man like Chu Feng, perhaps there was truly an even more powerful person.

“Do not believe this brat’s nonsense! If his Jiang Dynasty had reinforcements, they would have already appeared. How could they have let us destroy the formation?” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor said.

“Hmph. It’s up to you whether you believe it or not. Right now, a catastrophe is already heading your way, and you won’t make it out in time even if you retreat right now.” Chu Feng did not explain as well, and only continued to coldly smile and speak, as if he had already seen the scene of the two clans being annihilated.

“A catastrophe is heading our way? From what I see, a catastrophe is heading

your

way, you brat. Without temporarily gained power from other places, what can you use to fight against me? Watch my casual move of a finger crush you to death.” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor waved his sleeve, stuck out his finger, and prepared to attack Chu Feng.

“I would quite like to see who dares to touch Chu Feng!” But just at that time, a thunder-like explosive shout suddenly burst out from the distant horizon, and at the same time, an enormous aura quickly followed.

“The 9th level of the Heaven realm?” At that instant, the faces of almost everyone on scene changed greatly. Especially the Ji Dynasty’s and the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestors. They had panicking expressions

It was because they could both clearly feel that the aura of the 9th level of the Heaven realm was speedily approaching.

“Heavens! Is it possible that what Chu Feng said was true, and he truly has reinforcements?”

At that instant, let alone the people from the Ji Dynasty and Liu Dynasty, even the crowd of the Jiang Dynasty were endlessly shocked.

Originally, they also thought that Chu Feng's words were for scaring the people from the two clans, but looking at the situation now, what Chu Feng said was true!

\*wuaoo\* Just at that time, a dragon's cry suddenly rang out. The formation enveloping the dynasty immediately dissipated, and quickly after, an azure light flew over from the clouds, and only stopped after arriving above Chu Feng and the others.

“Heavens! This is?!”

However, after seeing the original shape of the azure light, everyone couldn't help but gasp deeply because at that very instant, what appeared above them was an incomparably huge azure dragon.

Although the Azure Dragon was condensed and formed by azure-coloured gas, the dragon scales, the dragon claws, the overbearing state, it was simply vivid and lifelike, and not too far off from a real dragon.

On the head of the Azure Dragon, two figures stood there. Many people on scene who were from the continent of the Nine Provinces recognized one of them. The big brother of Chu Feng, the expert in the 8th level of the Heaven realm, the Monstrous Monkey King.

And in front of the Monstrous Monkey King, there stood an old man who had white- and grey-hair. He held a fly whisk, wore a robe, and had an unsecular air around him.

“Who are you?” Seeing that person, the Ji Dynasty's old ancestor also tightly frowned. Although they were both in the 9th level of the Heaven realm, he felt a threatening feeling from the old man. His opponent's cultivation was very strong, already infinitely nearing the Martial Lord realm, an existence that was going become a Martial Lord.

Facing his question, the azure-robed old man waved the whisk in his hand, then lightly smiled and said, “My name remains the same regardless of anything. I am the Azure Dragon Founder!”

# Chapter 519 - Secret Weapon

MGA: Chapter 519 - Secret Weapon

“Azure Dragon Founder?”

Hearing that name, a large commotion was instantly created within the crowd. Everyone examined the azure-robed old man on the dragon head again.

Even the people from the Ji Dynasty and Liu Dynasty slightly frowned, and their eyes lit up.

It was because the name “Azure Dragon Founder” was really too famous. So famous that not only the continent of the Nine Provinces, even the several continents surrounding it heard of that name.

Especially some with higher positions, they knew that the Azure Dragon Founder was a legend in the continent of the Nine Provinces. The strongest person a thousand years ago in the Nine Provinces, an expert who almost stepped into the Martial Lord realm.

“You said you’re the Azure Dragon Founder?” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor tightly frowned, and with an extremely solemn gaze, he examined the Azure Dragon Founder.

“That’s right. I am the Azure Dragon Founder.” He lightly smiled. There were not many emotional changes on his face. Like the light wind and faint clouds, his expression was serene.

“What a joke. The Azure Dragon Founder is a character one thousand years ago. Although your cultivation is similar to his, you are only taking his name to scare us. If you are truly the Azure Dragon Founder, haven’t you lived for a thousand years?” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor spoke with a face of distrust. Completely, he felt that the Azure Dragon Founder was lying.

“Haha, the azure dragon that made my name is under my feet right now, yet you actually don’t believe I’m the Azure Dragon Founder?”

“Whatever, whatever. If you believe me, fine; if you don’t believe me, that’s fine as well. All of you are people who will die soon anyway.” Suddenly, the Azure Dragon Founder flung the fly whisk in his hand, causing the surrounding space to change. Then, a layer of boundless Heaven power shot out, and with powerful might, pressed towards the old ancestors of the Ji Dynasty and Liu Dynasty.

“Such strong power!”

At that instant, the two old ancestors were able to feel the power of the Azure Dragon Founder’s single strike. So, they didn’t dare to delay, and both revolved the Heaven power in their bodies and made extremely powerful counterattacks.

“Ji Clan Heaven Flipping Palm!”

“Liu Clan Heaven Ruling Fist!”

One fist and one palm were thrown out at the same time. Instantly, the entire world trembled, the weather changed, and quite some might was created. It was because those two martial skills were rank 7 martial skills.

Rank 7 martial skills were already extremely powerful martial skills, and when two experts in the 9th level of the Heaven realm used them, the might was naturally unstoppable.

\*boom\* Finally, the two rank 7 martial skills interweaved with the Heaven power that the Azure Dragon Founder sent out. But after an explosion, the attacks of the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor and the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor were shattered, but the might of the attack that the Azure Dragon Founder sent out did not diminish, continuing to press towards the two old ancestors.

“This!” Seeing that scene, the two old ancestors’ expressions changed greatly. They hurriedly caused radiance to flash in their palms as they took

out their Mastered Elite Armaments. Quickly after, human and weapon combined into one, they explosively yelled, and made extremely horrifying blades of light.

\*hmm\*

Two blades of light streaked through the air, making ear-piercing sounds. Even sparks were made by the friction through the air, and even the sky and earth could not hold back such vast might.

\*boom\* Another huge explosion, and the sky and earth trembled once again. But this time, the two blades of light successfully canceled out the Heaven power sent by the Azure Dragon Founder.

But at that instant, looking back at the Azure Dragon Founder and the faces of the two old ancestors, they were completely different.

A light smile was still worn on the Azure Dragon Founder's face, like the gentleness of the wind and the faintness of the clouds, it was not diminished, nor should it have been. On the other hand, the two old ancestors had deathly-white faces, foreheads full of sweat, and within their aged eyes, fear and uneasiness glittered.

Even the people on scene widened their mouths from amazement because the attack that the Azure Dragon Founder sent out just now was clearly an extremely casual attack.

Yet such a casual attack had to be dissolved by the two old ancestors using their rank 7 martial skills once as well as the strongest slice from their Mastered Elite Armaments.

Although they were both in the 9th level of the Heaven realm, the difference in battle power was too big. Those who had eyes could tell who was the strong one and who was the weak within the three people.

“He's too strong. Strength like this simply infinitely approaches the Martial Lord realm! This is a true expert who nears the Martial lord realm, and it's likely with just a tiny bit more, he will become a Martial Lord!”



Jiang Hengyuan and many other dynasty experts said with faces full of shock.

“He’s the Azure Dragon Founder. He is, indeed, the Azure Dragon Founder who swept through the continent of the Nine Provinces a thousand years ago and even my Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor was weaker than him.” Suddenly, the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor spoke. Although, back then, he was heavily injured, after ten days of healing, he already recovered quite a bit.

“What? Milord, you said he’s the Azure Dragon Founder? Truly, the Azure Dragon Founder? But hasn’t the Azure Dragon Founder died for a thousand years already?” Hearing the emperor’s words, the already shocked faces of the people from the Jiang Dynasty instantly became more shocked.

“There’s no mistake. Look carefully. What’s under his feet isn’t a martial skill, it’s a Secret Skill, and the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique is the unique skill that made him famous! So, he is definitely the Azure Dragon Founder.” The emperor explained.

“Everyone, don’t doubt anymore. He is indeed my Azure Dragon School’s founder, the Azure Dragon Founder. My school’s old ancestor has not died yet.” Just at that time, Chu Feng spoke.

“Heavens!” And after Chu Feng spoke, the expressions of everyone on scene changed greatly. Their shocked state were simply indescribable with words. As Chu Feng was a part of the Azure Dragon School, the words he spoke were absolutely trustable.

The strongest person a thousand years ago in the continent of the Nine Provinces was still alive. That news was really too astonishing. People could simply not accept that fact immediately, so everyone was dumbfounded.

“Quickly retreat!” Just at that time, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor suddenly yelled loudly, then he turned around and speedily escaped afar.

“Dammit!” At the same time, although the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor was unwilling to, he hurriedly turned around and escaped towards the distance.

Seeing that even the two old ancestors escaped, naturally, the experts from the two clans didn’t dare to dally. All of them used their strongest bodily martial skills and quickly escaped, deeply afraid they would die by the hands of the terrifying Azure Dragon Founder if they ran slow.

“Hoh...”

Seeing the crowd of people who were left behind and escaping, the Azure Dragon Founder only lightly smiled. Although he didn’t chase after them, the killing intent in his eyes couldn’t help becoming a bit stronger.

The Azure Dragon Founder wouldn’t let them leave alive, but he was in no rush to chase after them. If he, who had the Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, wanted to chase, not a single person from the two clans could escape his palm.

“Wait!” But suddenly, the Azure Dragon Founder’s expression changed because he discovered that of the troops of the two clans, no matter if it was the dynasty’s clan members or the World Spirits brought by them or the Monstrous Beasts, all of them already escaped.

But there was a chariot pulled by several Monstrous Beasts that stopped in the air. On that chariot, there was a small-scale palace. He used his Spirit power to examine it, but he discovered that there was a Spirit Formation laid outside of the palace, so the inside was undetectable.

Moreover, the several Monstrous Beasts who pulled the chariot had sinister faces and their bodies were twisted, but they could only stay where they were. On their bodies, purple-coloured symbols and brilliance endlessly flashed.

What it meant was that, it wasn’t that they didn’t want to escape, but that they were unable to escape because on their bodies, a Restriction Spirit Formation was added, binding them in the air.

“Senior Azure Dragon, something’s off with that chariot.” At the same time, the Monstrous Monkey King also discovered the inklings.

“Hahahaha...”

Just at that moment, a burst of mad laughter suddenly rang out from the distance. The sound was deafening, and simply like the claps of thunder. It was the laughter of the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor. He laughed extremely strangely, extremely insanely.

Only after laughing for a good while did he say, “I never would have thought that the grand Azure Dragon Founder would still be living. This truly causes one to be astonished.”

“But sadly, with my secret weapon here, even if you have overwhelming battle power, you are fated to not avoid death.”

# Chapter 520 - Middle-Aged Man

MGA: Chapter 520 - Middle-Aged Man

“Senior Azure Dragon, that old thing is truly looking to die. Why not go give him a lesson right now?” Hearing the mad loud laughter coming from the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor afar, the Monstrous Monkey King was the first to be unable to accept it. He knew that if the Azure Dragon Founder wanted to kill the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor, it was only a matter of flicking his finger. So, that was why he asked the Azure Dragon Founder to make his move.

“Wait, that chariot is too strange.” However, the Azure Dragon Founder didn’t pay attention to the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor who was escaping, but locked his gaze dead on the chariot.

And after hearing his words, everyone noticed the chariot that stopped in mid-air, and couldn’t help locking their gazes onto the small-scale palace above the chariot as well.

\*creak~~~\*

Finally, the door to the small-scale palace opened. At that instant, everyone’s heartbeat couldn’t help racing a bit faster, and their gazes also became extremely serious.

However, what they didn’t expect was that after the palace door was opened, it was actually an old man who walked out.

That old man’s age was too high. If he wasn’t eighty, he was ninety, but his cultivation wasn’t too strong, being only in the 1st level of the Heaven realm.

However, after the old man walked out, only then did everyone discover that he was pulling a person out with his hand. It was a middle-aged man.

The man wore gorgeous clothing and had a large stature. Black hair went straight to his heel, fluttered with the wind, and he was elegant and unordinary.

Moreover, his thick brows and big eyes looked very handsome and brave. However, a middle-aged man like him who had such an unordinary appearance didn't have the slightest bit of cultivation.

Not only did he not have cultivation, even his mental state didn't seem to be too clear. At that moment, despite already walking in front of the chariot, he didn't even look straight at the crowd.

With dull eyes and a face filled with an idiotic smile, he munched the two roasted chicken in his hands. He ate like a wolf swallowing and tiger gulping, and was in extreme joy, as if he hadn't eaten in a hundred years.

“This isn't it right? What kind of joke is this? Just an old man like him, and an idiot, is his so-called secret weapon?”

“Indeed, it was just for scaring people. The Ji Dynasty's old ancestor is truly funny. Hahaha...”

When they carefully examined the two people at the front of the chariot, their originally tense hearts all calmed. Moreover, they started to loudly laugh mockingly.

Because, from them, it could be said that they didn't feel the slightest bit of threat. The old man was only in the 1st level of the Heaven realm. Too many people on scene could easily kill him.

As for the middle-aged man, although he had an unordinary and handsome appearance, he was clearly an idiot. Furthermore, an idiot without cultivation, so most people didn't put the two of them in their eyes.

“That person looks very familiar.” However, as the crowd relaxed, Chu Feng became even more uneasy.

Because, when the two of them appeared, Chu Feng concentration fully onto the middle-aged man. For some reason, he felt that the man was a bit familiar, yet he couldn't remember where he saw him.

At the same time, the Azure Dragon Founder also carefully examined the middle-aged man. Although he didn't discover any inklings, his gaze was also filled with alert, always feeling that the middle-aged man was not simple.

Suddenly, the old man made his move. He didn't attack the people from the Jiang Dynasty, but extended his hand towards the middle-aged man next to him, and used his hand to brush the long hair on his forehead to the side.

“This is bad! Ancestor, quickly stop that old man, do not let him touch his forehead!” At that instant, Chu Feng's pupils shrunk, his face changed greatly, and he hurriedly loudly yelled.

Because, when the middle-aged man's long hair above his forehead was pushed to the side, Chu Feng understood everything.

On the forehead of the man, he saw a scar. A scar that was vivid, lifelike, and like flames. Chu Feng had seen that scar before. He had seen it on the forehead of a beggar.

And back then, Chu Feng almost got killed because he touched the scar on the beggar's forehead.

At that instant, Chu Feng finally knew why the man looked so familiar. It was because he was the beggar from back then. The man who carried Chu Feng to the Chu family, and instructed Chu Yuan, telling him that he must raise Chu Feng.

Chu Feng always wanted to see him again, because even though he knew that his mind was muddled, after all, he was his only hope in knowing where he came from.

But currently, seeing him again, Chu Feng did not feel any joy. What he had was only endless fear because he knew how terrifying that man was after being enraged. If he truly exploded, it was likely that the entire Jiang Dynasty would be flattened by him.

“Stop!” Although he didn’t know why Chu Feng was that nervous, the Azure Dragon Founder still felt that something was wrong so he explosively yelled, flicked his fly whisk, and instantly, berserk power engulfed outwards. With light-like speed, it pressed towards the old man and the middle-aged man.

The Azure Dragon Founder’s strike was not only for stopping the old man’s action. It was to completely destroy the old man and the middle-aged man, including the chariot.

\*boom\*

It had to be said that the Azure Dragon Founder’s strength was indeed very powerful. Almost in the moment the old man’s palm was going to touch the man’s forehead scar, his attack arrived.

After the deafening explosion, the area that the chariot was at instantly became chaos. Layers and layers of wild ripples kept on surging everywhere.

Not only did it cause more and more cracks to form in the air, even the continuous structures on the ground were shattered from the shock. The Azure Dragon Founder’s strike was too fierce, and even some people from the Jiang Dynasty were dragged in by that, dying within.

But that more greatly showed the Azure Dragon Founder’s nervousness. He did indeed feel danger from the middle-aged man, and was also aware that the old man’s action was dangerous.

So, that was why he didn’t restrain himself on that strike and harmed some innocent people because in the instant just now, he only wanted to stop the old man’s action and remove two uneasy, hidden troubles. He simply didn’t consider the safety of the people underneath the chariot.

\*wuaoo~~~~~\*

But just as the layers of ripples were spreading, suddenly, a wild hurricane swept over. The hurricane was really too intense. It actually engulfed the horrifying ripple instantly.

And very quickly, the hurricane also disappeared. At that instant, the almost shattered sky returned to silence once again. Simultaneously, a figure also came into view, appearing in the crowd's line of sight.

At that instant, the middle-aged man stood on air. His long hair fluttered, and his eyes no longer had their lifelessness from before. Replacing them were two endlessly rising flames of fury.

The eyes that were filled with flames of fury were really too terrifying. So terrifying that with a single glance, from deep inside one's heart, strong fear spread outwards, engulfing their entire body.

“Crap. Although his strike successfully killed the old man, and even left nothing behind from killing the several Monstrous Beasts and the chariot, it also thoroughly stirred up this person's anger.” At that instant, Chu Feng tightly frowned because he had seen how horrifying that person was in his mad times, and he had also heard, from Chu Yuan, how horrifying the strength that person grasped was.

That very instant was when his strength was fully shown. In his psychotic state, they were likely going to be facing a disaster.



# Chapter 521 - King of the World

MGA: Chapter 521 - King of the World

“Ancestor, can you defeat this person?” Seeing that the middle-aged man already had overflowing fury and was very possibly going to start massacring soon, Chu Feng could only cast his gaze towards the Azure Dragon Founder above him. After all, in a moment like this, the Azure Dragon Founder was the only existence able to fight against the middle-aged man.

But the Azure Dragon Founder at that moment was staring at the middle-aged man with tightly knitted brows. At the end, he helplessly said, “The strength of this person is unfathomably deep. I am absolutely unable to defeat him.”

“What? Even the Azure Dragon Founder is unable to defeat him?”

“How is that possible? If he’s even stronger than the Azure Dragon Founder, what realm is he in?”

“Could it be? This person is a Martial Lord expert?” And after hearing the Azure Dragon Founder’s words, the people on scene had faces full of fear, and were endlessly afraid.

Even though they felt terrifying danger from the middle-aged man, he did not emanate any shocking might. So, in a situation where they were with the Azure Dragon Founder, even though they were afraid, they were not too worried.

But at that instant, when the Azure Dragon Founder said that even he wasn’t able to defeat the man, they became completely afraid. If even the Azure Dragon Founder wasn’t able to defeat him, wouldn’t a disaster truly head their way today?

\*huaaaao0000~~~~~\*

Suddenly, an ear-piercing howl rang out in the sky. However, it wasn't a howl, but the sound of wind.

In the sky, with the middle-aged man as the core, layers of frenzied wind power became pale-white berserk gas. They crossed over one another, surrounded the man, and endlessly swirled.

When the wind power appeared, the sky sank into chaos. The air disintegrated, everything went pitch-dark, and what could be seen was only the crazy wind, and the man inside the crazy wind.

At that very instant, the man's robes swayed left and right, his hair fluttered everywhere, his eyes sprayed fire as he looked down at the ground.

Finally, he spoke. His voice was loud and clear, and every single word was like thunder as he fiercely shouted, "Those who follow me, I grant riches and power."

"Those who go against me, kill kill kill!"

"KILL~~~~~"

After the last word resounded, the world instantly shook, the sky collapsed, and the originally clear sky and bright day immediately became chaotic.

At that instant, the sky became blurry. The only thing that could be seen was the middle-aged man in the air, and the only thing that could be felt was endless killing intent.

"Heavens! How can there be such a terrifying person in this world? Is this even the power of a man?"

"This person is too horrifying. Who in the world is he?!"

Seeing everything that was happening in front of their eyes, everyone's panic rose to the peak. With a raise of a hand, the sky was changed and the earth was swapped. When had they ever seen such power?

It simply surpassed their range of understanding, surpassed the limits of humanity. It was already not something humans could do, and he seemed more like a god.

Although the middle-aged man didn't start massacring, everyone's despair reached the extreme because they knew if that person wanted to kill them, they absolutely had no chance of escaping. Even the world could be destroyed by him, let alone them petty living organisms?

“The strength of this person does not belong in the Martial Lord realm. He should be a Martial King.”

“I never would have thought soon after I revived, I would meet such an exceptional expert. I have no regrets before dying.” At that instant, the Azure Dragon Founder's tightly furrowed brows suddenly relaxed, and replacing it was a hint of relief.

He had felt the strong power of the middle-aged man. So powerful that even he was powerless to fight against him because in front of that man, even if it was him, he was as puny as an ant. Even a casual breath from him could turn him into dust.

The man stood on air, and was like a king who ruled the world, and their lives were also grasped within the hands of that king.

“This will not do. I can't die just like this. I can't die by his hands, and even more so, I can't let these people die by his hands.”

At that instant, Chu Feng also felt the threat of death, but he was unwilling to die. So, he leaped, and actually flew towards the middle-aged man.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? Quickly come back!”

Although the world was already muddled, many people on scene spread their Spirit power out, so they were able to feel Chu Feng currently flying towards the middle-aged man.

To Chu Feng's actions, everyone broke out in a cold sweat for him because that man was really too horrifying. By flying over like that, wasn't Chu Feng looking to die?

But they thought back at the words the man said, and looking at the situation around them, they were at ease again. Since death was to both the left and right, why did they need to worry?

And just at that moment, Chu Feng already flew high into the air. He was less than a thousand meters away from him, but he had the wild wind as protection, so Chu Feng had no way of approaching.

So, Chu Feng yelled his throat out, and hysterically howled, "I am Chu Feng! You want to kill me?!"

Chu Feng was wagering his life because he knew that the man seemed to have the mission of protecting him, and associating it with the scene when he first met the man, Chu Feng firmly believed that he still had a trace of reason. So, perhaps his name, his appearance, could awaken that trace of reason.

"Chu Feng? Who's Chu Feng?"

"And who are you?" After hearing Chu Feng's words, the middle-aged man's expression actually went blank, then quickly after, he cast his gaze towards Chu Feng.

"What? You don't even recognize me? You've forgotten your duty? Could it be that you've forgotten your mission?" Seeing that he was looking at himself, Chu Feng put on an act of being extremely domineering, like he could not be compared to anyone, and as if he was the master of that man.

"It's... It's you?!"

However, what made Chu Feng rejoice surprisingly was after he saw Chu Feng's appearance, his eyes that originally spat fire actually became incomparable terrified immediately. His body, which was filled with killing intent, was actually trembling.

In merely an instant, the chaotic world started to change. It soon returned to its former bright day, and at that instant, everyone could clearly see everything in front of them.

“This... What is happening?”

Seeing the situation in the air, everyone couldn't help but be shocked because they astonishedly discovered that Chu Feng was approaching the male one step at a time. The man who previously even had an unordinary atmosphere was actually half-kneeling in the air currently. He hugged his head with both of his hands and muttered to himself, as if he was very afraid of Chu Feng.

“No! Don't kill me! No matter what you want me to do, I'll agree! Don't kill me!” The man was first hugging his head and muttering to himself, but after he discovered Chu Feng came near, he actually started to kowtow with his hands clasped and held forward in front of him.

At that instant, the already endlessly shocked people were thoroughly stupefied. What exactly was the damn situation? The expert, who was so strong he could change the heavens and earth, was actually begging for forgiveness from Chu Feng?

“Is it possible that this man knows Chu Feng?”

At that moment, the eyes of the Azure Dragon Founder, the Jiang Dynasty's emperor, and the others, all lit up. They thought about the words Chu Feng said before, then looking back at the man's current reaction, they could only think of one conclusion.

It was that the man, who was so god-like powerful, definitely knew Chu Feng!

# Chapter 522 - Natural Disaster Creator

MGA: Chapter 522 - Natural Disaster Creator

At that very instant, the several tens of thousands of Jiang Dynasty members observed with raised eyes, looking at the scene in the sky.

All of them were dumbstruck. Their eyes were widened, their tongues were tied, and on all their faces, all sorts of stunned expressions were clearly shown.

Chu Feng knew that horrifying man? What relationship did the two of them have? Looking at the man's appearance, he seemed to be afraid of Chu Feng. Did the man reach the extremities of insanity, or were there truly some things hidden from sight?

People kept on imagining all kinds of circumstances, but no matter what they guessed, they could not be sure of their relationship. So, they could only stare at the two people in the air because over there, perhaps they would obtain the answer they desired.

“Forgive me! I know my wrongs! I shouldn't have intruded into your territory, I shouldn't have disturbed your peace!”

“I'm begging you, give me one more chance, please let me live! No matter what you want me to do, I'll agree!”

The middle-aged man with horrifying strength half-knelt in the air and endlessly kowtowed to Chu Feng. Occasionally, he would secretly shoot Chu Feng a glance, but every time, after seeing Chu Feng, his expression would become even more fearful, and even his body would start trembling.

Seeing that, Chu Feng was endlessly shocked. Since he wasn't an idiot, linking it to the things Chu Yuan told him regarding this man, and looking

back at his current appearance, Chu Feng already guessed the gist of it.

That man shouldn't be a member of his family. He should have done something wrong, or offended some person.

And that person had the strength to kill the man and had the spirit to make him fear, but he didn't kill him. He should have gave him a chance to continue living, and that chance was a mission. To protect Chu Feng.

As for who that person was, in Chu Feng's current heart, naturally, he had an idea. If his guess held, then that person would definitely be his father.

Because, when that man saw Chu Feng's appearance and became so scared, it meant that it wasn't Chu Feng he feared, but a person who looked similar to Chu Feng. And the person who looked similar to Chu Feng could only be Chu Feng's biological father.

But at present, Chu Feng didn't have time to think that much. What he wanted to do the most was to grab onto the terrifying man's weakness. He had to control him.

“Do you remember the mission I gave you?” Suddenly, Chu Feng asked.

“Mission?” Hearing those words, the man was first taken aback, then quickly after, hurriedly nodded and said, “I remember. You wanted me to protect a child.”

“What is that child called?” Chu Feng closely asked.

“Called what? Called...called...” The man's expression glittered and he flustered a bit, but after thinking for a while, his complexion was finally like “pushing away the clouds in the sky”, turned from panic to joy, and said, “Called Chu Feng. You said that this child must be called Chu Feng, and could not be called any other name.”

“Then, have you always protected this child?” Chu Feng continued asking closely.

“I, I...” Hearing those words, the man completely panicked. Incomparable fear emerged instantly on his face that just turned to joy. He quickly kowtowed to Chu Feng once again and begged, “Have mercy, have mercy!”

“Hmph. You actually dare to be so undutiful to the mission my father gave you. Are you not afraid that he will be angered and kill you?” Chu Feng coldly shouted. He was abnormally domineering, as if the horrifying man in front of his eyes was truly his own servant.

“Father? You, you are?” Hearing those words, the fear on the man’s face eased slightly, but the gaze he looked at Chu Feng with was still full of fright.

“I am Chu Feng, the person you should be protecting.”

“But you are really too irresponsible. Not only did you not follow your promise by staying by my side and protecting me, you even helped my enemy to attack me?!” Chu Feng fiercely shouted.

“Enemy? Where? I will kill him, kill him!” Hearing the word “enemy”, two lumps of flames instantly appeared again within the middle-aged man’s eyes. The horrifying killing intent from before reemerged but this time, it was clearly not directed at Chu Feng and the others.

“Carry me forward. I will bring you to slaughter them.” Chu Feng said with a commanding tone.

“As you wish!” And to Chu Feng’s words, not only did the terrifying man not disobey in the slightest, rather, he was incomparably revering.

As he spoke, he willed. A layer of dazzling golden radiance appeared on his forehead. Then, instantly, it enveloped Chu Feng, and after it enveloped Chu Feng, the golden radiance changed for a while, and actually became a golden chair.

The chair was extremely delicate. There were even pictures of dragons and phoenixes engraved on it, and they were very beautiful. The most



important thing was that the golden radiance emitted a feeling of indestructibility. It was a Spirit Formation.

“Gold-cloak World Spiritist?!” Chu Feng hiddenly sighed in surprise. He only knew that the man’s battle power was horrifying, but he didn’t expect that he was also a World Spiritist, and even a Gold-cloak World Spiritist.

To be able to casually condense such a delicate chair with Spirit Formation power, it could be seen how strong he grasped that ability.

Moreover, he even did that in a muddled state. If his mind was clear, Chu Feng truly didn’t dare to imagine how terrifying he would be at that time.

“Listen to my order, head south.” But sighing in surprise was sighing in surprise. Chu Feng still had to act out an appearance of being the master. He sat on the golden dazzling chair and pointed towards the direction where the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestors and the others left at.

“As you wish!” After Chu Feng gave the command, the man didn’t delay as well. As he spoke, he turned around, and like light, flew towards the southern horizon.

“So quick!” At that instant, Chu Feng only felt the scenery around him become a blur, as he was currently flying speedily past his surroundings. He had to focus on everything that blurred past him in order to clearly see everything in front, in order to determine the direction.

At the same time, south of the Jiang Dynasty, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor and the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor were leading the troops from the two clans and flying in the air.

After a while of flying, they had already passed several plains, several forests, and several mountain ranges.

“That’s almost good.” Analyzing the distance he flew, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor suddenly stopped, then loudly said, “Stop!”

And with his order, the people from the two clans also stopped their movement in turn and stopped in mid-air.

“What is that secret weapon? Even we need to escape this far?” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor asked puzzledly. He was really curious what exactly the secret weapon was.

“This weapon is not simple. You should have heard of the natural disaster that occurred a while ago in the Morning Han Continent right?” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor smilingly asked.

“You’re talking about the huge fire that came from the sky and covered many mountain ranges?” Mentioning that matter, the gaze of the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor instantly changed, and his expression became odd.

It was because he knew a lot about that matter. He knew that in the Morning Han Continent, which the Ji Dynasty ruled, there were three powerful sects stationed within its vastest mountain range.

However, recently, an abnormal huge fire suddenly appeared in that vast mountain range. Everyone from the three sects died.

The most important thing was that the huge fire didn’t burn off of the trees in the forests. Because, to powerful cultivators, it was very difficult for normal flames to harm them.

Yet not only did the huge fire kill all life within the mountain range, it was even still burning currently. That area already became a forbidden area, and no one could step in because those who neared the flames, no matter how powerful their cultivation was, would get completely melted regardless.

So, that horrifying huge fire was seen as a natural disaster.

And seeing the Liu Dynasty old ancestor’s strange expression, the Ji Dynasty's old ancestor smugly smiled, and said, “My secret weapon is that natural disaster’s creator.”

# Chapter 523 - Human Realm Hell

MGA: Chapter 523 - Human Realm Hell

“Natural disaster creator? What do you mean?!” Hearing those words, everyone was shocked.

“Hoh, it also means that the natural disaster was not a coincidence. Furthermore, the creator of the natural disaster will recreate it within the Jiang Dynasty right now.” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor said.

“Recreating a natural disaster?!”

“What is going on? Could it be that the natural disaster was manmade, and the person who made the natural disaster was inside the chariot?!” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor guessed the answer, but that answer really made one too stunned. So stunned that even he didn’t dare to believe it was true.

“That’s right. You’ve guessed correctly.” Facing the glittering gaze of the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor pleasedly smiled.

“How is this possible? If there is truly such a powerful existence, then he is definitely a character in the Martial Lord realm. How can a character like him listen to your orders?” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor expressed doubt.

“Haha, you don’t need to worry about that. You only need to know that he is invincible in this world, and moreover, he will be used by me. This Jiang Dynasty is only the first testing ground, but it is absolutely not the last.”

“As long as he is here, my Ji Dynasty will be peerless in the world, and everything else will be obliterated.”

“Starting with the nearby few continents, then I’ll take over the tens of thousands of continents. At the end, I will finish at my ancestors’ dreams,

killing my way back into the Eastern Sea Region.”

“At that time, not only will my Ji Dynasty be the ruler of the Morning Han Continent, it will also be the ruler of the Eastern Sea Region, the entire eastern section! Hahaha!” When the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor reached an exciting part, he actually faced the sky, and longly howled. He laughed loudly and insanely, and greed permeated throughout his smile.

It had to be said that his laughter, and his previous words, didn’t lightly frighten the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor. After thinking for a while, he cautiously asked, “Your next goal wouldn’t be my Liu Dynasty right?”

“Don’t worry. We are allies of many years. Not only you and me, my father’s generation, my grandfather’s generation, we were even allies then.”

“So, I won’t touch your Liu Dynasty. However, your Liu Dynasty must be loyal to me!” Seeing the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor who had an unstable expression, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor sinisterly smiled.

And at that instant, the corners of the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor twitched. He understood his meaning. He was not going to touch the Liu Dynasty, but the precondition was that his Liu Dynasty had to serve his Ji Dynasty.

\*rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble\*

But just at that time, strange sounds suddenly came from the distant sky. That sound was like thunder, like the roar of tigers, like the surging tides, yet also like the howl of ten thousand beasts.

At that instant, everyone panicked because that sound got louder and louder. In only an instant, it filled with surroundings of the people from the two clans. The sky and the earth trembled, as if the world was going to collapse.

“Crap, what exactly is this thing?!”

As they panicked, their first thought was to escape. But it was useless since it was too late. As they wanted to make their move, they discovered that their bodies were as though they were frozen. Other being able to open their mouths to speak, they couldn't even tremble their fingers.

\*hmm\*

Suddenly, the radiance in front of the crowd flashed, and a violent gust of wind slammed into them head-on. It caused their long hair to flutter, and their mouths to twist and change shape from the wind.

And when everything stopped, all of their faces couldn't help but change because in front of them, a huge figure appeared.

It was a middle-aged man. He had black-hair that went straight to his heels. He stood on air, and had might akin to that of a killing god.

But at that instant, what made the crowd most scared wasn't the man, but the huge golden light above the man, on his head.

Within the golden light, there was a golden chair. On the golden chair, there sat a young man. The young man currently stared at the crowd with a light smile on his face as his eyes were slightly squinting, and he was exactly Chu Feng.

“It's him? It's actually him?!”

But compared to the crowd, the Ji Dynasty's old ancestor trembled as he stared at the black-haired man because he knew that the current atmosphere, which even caused the world to collapse from the pressure, wasn't emanated by Chu Feng, but from the middle-aged man.

“What's the matter? Do you recognize him?” The Liu Dynasty's old ancestor also discovered that something was wrong and hurriedly asked.

“He, he, he's the natural disaster's creator!” The Ji Dynasty's old ancestor said those words with his trembling tone.

“What? You said that he’s that secret weapon of yours?!” At that instant, the face of the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor greened because he had once personally went to the Morning Han Continent. He personally saw the huge mountains that were covered by flames, and even with his cultivation, he was unable to approach it. So, he deeply knew of the terror of the flames.

Yet right now, the man in front of him was actually the creator of the flames. How could he not be afraid? Especially when he saw that above him, there was even Chu Feng. Was it possible that the horrifying man was related to Chu Feng?

And just as everyone endlessly guessed, all hoping that the man wasn’t related to Chu Feng at all, the horrifying man suddenly spoke, and asked with an extremely petty tone, “Young master, is your enemy them?”

“What? Young master? This Chu Feng is actually the young master of this horrifying man?”

“Does this mean that he’s Chu Feng’s servant?”

“Heavens! Where exactly did that Chu Feng come from? He actually has such a terrifying servant?!” Hearing those words, the crowd felt their brains buzz and felt thunder banging against their heads, because to them, absolutely, it was a frightening nightmare.

“Look at what you’ve done! You’ve actually brought such a terrifying guy here. Did you bring him here to kill us all?!” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor loudly cursed at the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor who was next to him.

“Wait. His mind is unclear and he originally had problems, so that’s why I was able to control him.”

“This Chu Feng has many cunning plans. He must have used some trick in order for the man to listen to him.”

“But do not fear. I have a method that can perhaps control him again.” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor first sent a mental message to explain, then said to the horrifying man, “Idiot! Don’t even think of listening to that brat’s lies.

I’m

your master. How can you help my enemy and attack me?!”

At that instant, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor was totally speaking lies with his eyes wide open. He simply did not know how to completely control the horrifying man, but he did not believe he would be related to Chu Feng.

And after hearing how the horrifying man called Chu Feng, he randomly assumed and thought Chu Feng disturbed the man’s awareness while his mind was muddled, tricking him, and causing him to think that his master was Chu Feng.

The reason why he said those words was because he wanted to be like a “blind cat killing a mouse”, to trick that man back and fight for a chance of survival.

In fact, if there’s one idiot, there’s a group of idiots. After the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor said those words, the expressions of the people from the two clans turned to joy, and even thought he truly controlled the horrifying man, and that he would give them a strand of chance to survive.

However, in the next instant, they were thoroughly stupefied.

“These people, kill them all!” Chu Feng indifferently said.

“As you wish!”

Hearing Chu Feng’s words, the horrifying man’s face instantly turned cold as the flames in his eyes slightly flickered. With a boom, that land became occupied by rolling flames, like hell in the human realm.

# Chapter 524 - The Great Enemy Has Been Eradicated

MGA: Chapter 524 - The Great Enemy Has Been Eradicated

The raging, intense flames were like fierce beasts. They covered the sky and the ground at that area, and burned without restraint.

In only an instant, the people from the two clans were consumed by the flames. They melted, were burnt into ashes, and there wasn't even any residue left behind.

“So powerful. The horrifying oceans of fires were indeed left behind by him!” Looking at the endlessly changing intense flames rolling and surging around him, Chu Feng muttered to himself.

Although he was inside the golden Spirit Formation and could not be affected by the flames at all, just by looking at the atmosphere, he could see how horrifying the flames were, and flames like those made him think of the two oceans of fire in the Azure Province.

One was in the desolate desert, the other was at the Plum Flower School. The oceans of fire at both places were extremely terrifying. Cultivators were unable to approach them, and they were both viewed as forbidden areas.

At that time, Chu Feng had suspected if those horrifying oceans of fire were manmade, was it possible they were created by this terrifying man?

Back then, he only guessed, but today, he confirmed that fact.

“Ayaya, a waste. Simply too wasteful. So many Heaven realms! So many Heaven realm Source energy, and there are even two in the 9th level of the Heaven realm! Yet they died just like that. At least leave a complete corpse for me to refine all the Source energy!”



However, just at that time, Eggy skipped and jumped while loudly yelling with a face full of sorrow. Although currently, Source energy in the Heaven realm might not allow her to make more breakthroughs, to her, they were still extremely enticing.

Facing that situation, Chu Feng could only bitterly smile. Although the terrifying man listened to his words up until now, after all, his mind was confused. Chu Feng could not control many things, for example, the power of his attacks.

But at present, to Chu Feng, he wasn't too concerned about those small losses. He felt that as long as he could continue to control that man, he would be satisfied.

It was because the Azure Dragon Founder said that he possibly wasn't a Martial Lord, but a Martial King.

As long as he imagined having a Martial King expert as a henchmen next to him, it made Chu Feng have a feeling of safety that he never had before.

"These flames are too terrifying, and they will harm the innocent. Are you able to retract them?" Chu Feng asked the man.

"The Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven comes from my body. They are born as I desire, and extinguished as I desire. If I want them gone, naturally, they will be gone."

The terrifying man's gaze flashed, and the flames around him were like tide as they surged towards his body. With only a blink, the horrifying flames actually all disappeared.

But looking back at the ground, it was already made into a mess. The earth was pitch-black, giving out steaming heat, and even the air twisted.

After that, Chu Feng was not in a rush to bring the man back to the Jiang Dynasty. Since the imminent danger was dissolved anyway, and the Monstrous Monkey King and the Azure Dragon Founder were there to hold the fort, on the Jiang Dynasty's side, no accidents should happen.

And because of the unstable factor of the man, Chu Feng needed to further control and understand him.

So, with special methods, Chu Feng started to question the man. He wanted to more deeply understand man in order to better know himself.

But for some unknown reason, the man's awareness was very muddled. It was as if his memory was being bound by someone, and actually didn't know what he himself was called, nor did he know where he came from, let alone know who Chu Feng's father was and where Chu Feng came from.

He only remembered some fragmented sections, and he roped those sections together, which formed a mission: he had to protect Chu Feng. If something bad were to happen to him, a disaster would come his own way.

When Chu Feng deeply questioned, the man acted as if he felt extreme horror and actually started to spur out nonsense. Moreover, he lost his current terrifying cultivation, and returned to his insane and stupid state, and simply did not recognize Chu Feng.

At first, Chu Feng was a bit worried, but he did not panic since he seemed to gradually grasp the method to make him recover his strength.

That method was to make a move on his forehead's scar. That place was his weak spot. As long as he touched that place, the man would recover his strength.

And the reality was indeed like so. When Chu Feng grasped what was appropriate and after touching the scar on the man's forehead, he actually recover his strength. Moreover, he was incomparably furious, and forgot who Chu Feng was again.

But luckily, Chu Feng grasped the man's current weak spot. Very quickly, he made the man submissive to himself again, but the thing Chu Feng could do nothing about was every time he asked a question deeply regarding his own father, he would sink into extreme fear again, so Chu Feng just flat out stopped asking.

He knew that with the man's current state, he could absolutely not rush things through if he wanted to know about his identity. He should slowly advance and understand the man bit by bit. Only understanding a lot about him, could he awaken his memories.

And after feeling that he could thoroughly control the man, or at least prevent him from going on a rampage by killing innocents, Chu Feng brought him back to the Jiang Dynasty.

Currently, the people from the Jiang Dynasty were still submerged within fearful hearts and extreme uneasiness. It was because everything that happened before was simply like a dream.

It made them feel that everything was so unrealistic. Especially when they recalled that such a horrifying, powerful person appeared in the continent of the Nine Provinces, and that he also followed every word Chu Feng said, as if he was Chu Feng's servant.

As long as they recalled that, even up until now, they still felt disbelief, and it was exactly that disbelief that made them unable to be sure whether the danger was truly gone or not.

So, at that very instant, they were waiting for a person, and it was Chu Feng. It was because Chu Feng already became a crucial character regarding their Jiang Dynasty's survival. Chu Feng was able to bring them the answer of whether the danger was dissolved or not.

“Look, Chu Feng has come back!”

“That's true! Chu Feng has returned! Milord, Chu Feng has returned!” Suddenly, someone pointed to the south and loudly yelled, being incomparably excited.

At that instant, those who were in the Heaven realm all rose into the sky and cast their gazes towards the south. After seeing Chu Feng really bring a blank-faced man back and was speedily returning, they couldn't help but rejoice.

“Chu Feng, how is it?”

“Chu Feng, where’s the Ji Dynasty and Liu Dynasty? Have you caught up to them?” The Jiang Dynasty’s emperor as well as a group of experts such as Jiang Hengyuan welcomed him first.

Seeing their nervous expressions, Chu Feng lightly smiled, then said, “The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor, the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor, as well as their people who entered the continent of the Nine Provinces, have eternally disappeared from this world. The great enemy of the Nine Provinces has been eradicated.”

“Chu Feng, are your words true?!” At that instant, the crowd of the Jiang Dynasty were all surprisedly joyed, but they also slightly didn’t dare to believe it.

“Absolutely true.” Chu Feng firmly nodded his head.

“This is great, this is great! This is really great!”

At that instant, a hint of relief, as well as indescribable excitement, emerged onto the face of the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor. Moreover, he continuously said three “greats” because he could really not control himself from the excitement.

And other than him, almost everyone else on scene was the same.

# Chapter 525 - Looting Wealth

MGA: Chapter 525 - Looting Wealth

“Woo~~~~~”

Suddenly, thunder-like cheers came from the Jiang Dynasty. Many young people in the Jiang Dynasty, and even some middle-aged people, excitedly cheered.

They were really too moved. When a person was in a realm of absolute death and thought they would undoubtedly die, yet discovered that they weren't dead, and also wouldn't die, that feeling was simply as if they were reborn. It was truly hard to not be moved by that, and there were even some people whose faces were full of tears from emotion as they loudly sobbed.

At the same time they cheered, many people didn't forget casting their gazes to the sky, looking at their emperor, many lords, as well as the smiling and chatting young man.

Although they didn't say it, in their hearts, they already deeply remembered that young man. It was he who saved their Jiang Dynasty.

“I never would have thought that the person who saved my Jiang Dynasty at the end would truly be him.” Jiang Yini looked at Chu Feng, who was chatting with her father, in the air. Her pair of beautiful eyes unendingly glittered, full of unspeakable emotions.

And other than Jiang Yini, many people in the Jiang Dynasty's young generation had very clear emotions. Not only were they grateful to Chu Feng, they admired him.

Even for some young females, their beautiful eyes showed some of their hearts being moved. They already thoroughly admired Chu Feng because of his outstanding appearance.

But they could only hide those thoughts at the bottom of their hearts because they had personally seen Chu Feng's power. Even though they had unordinary births by having Royal Bloodlines, in front of such an excellent young man, it was hard to avoid feeling that they weren't sufficient themselves and felt that they weren't worthy of Chu Feng. So, they had to turn their hearts' feeling into pure admiration.

“Chu Feng, this time, it was truly all thanks to you. I express gratitude for everyone in my clan.” Suddenly, the emperor of the Jiang Dynasty bowed deeply to Chu Feng.

“Thank you, Chu Feng, for saving our Jiang Dynasty!”

At the same time, all of the experts behind the Jiang Dynasty's emperor directly half-knelt in the air and clasped their hands towards Chu Feng. Looking downwards, the several tens of thousands of Jiang clan members, no matter male, female, old, or young, actually all knelt down, and expressed their thanks to Chu Feng with faces full of sincerity.

If it was before, even if Chu Feng saved their Jiang Dynasty, with their pride, they would only thank Chu Feng, but would absolutely not kneel down to Chu Feng.

But it was different now. Because of the exchanges between Chu Feng and the horrifying man, who they had personally seen and personally heard, they already roughly knew some things.

Chu Feng's background was absolutely not as simple as it was on the surface. He should have an even stronger shield behind him. He had a powerful father, as for how powerful his father was?

So powerful that the horrifying man, who could destroy the heavens and the earth, feared him extremely. Facing Chu Feng who had such support, they didn't dare to be disrespectful.

“Ahh, milord, don't say it like that. Seniors, please quickly rise!” Seeing that, Chu Feng felt a bit embarrassed. So, he hurriedly went up to stop them and then said to the Jiang Dynasty's emperor, “I, Chu Feng, am a

person from the continent of the Nine Provinces. Helping the Nine Provinces drive away enemies is originally a part of my duty.”

“Besides, I have a good relationship with your son and daughter. Regardless, it’s something that I should do.”

Facing Chu Feng who was like that, the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor no longer remained overly courteous and invited Chu Feng, the Azure Dragon Founder, and the others, into the Jiang Dynasty’s still existing vast palaces for resting.

The danger to the Jiang Dynasty also dissolved just like that, and Chu Feng also became the hero who saved the Jiang Dynasty.

But things didn't end just like that. After dissolving the danger, the Jiang Dynasty's emperor hurriedly called all the experts to an area and started an emergency meeting.

Not only were the Jiang Dynasty’s peak experts in that meeting, there was also the Azure Dragon Founder, the Monstrous Monkey King, as well as Chu Feng and even the mysterious man.

However, that mysterious man could no longer be described with “terrifying” right now. Because, currently he was sitting by Chu Feng’s side and with large bites, he was munching pig feet and eating mutton. At that instant, he wasn’t even close to being horrifying. Even if you hit his face, he wouldn’t even pay attention to you. So, describing him as “mad” and “foodie” would fit more closely.

“Senior Azure Dragon, Chu Feng.”

“The Liu clan, Ji clan, and Zhao clan can be said to have moved their strongest forces to attack my Jiang Dynasty.”

“Right now, their battle power is already near destroyed, so it means that the three dynasties are like empty cities right now, and will break with a single attack!”

“Speaking honestly, I am not interested in the continents their three clans control, but their three clans have come to the east of this world at the same time as my Jiang clan. In these several thousand years, they should have accumulated quite a bit of wealth.”

“If the three clan’s wealth all gets sold, it is not hard for it to be turned into three hundred thousand Heaven beads. I believe that everyone here is very interested in these three hundred thousand heaven beads.”

“So, we should take this chance, split up into three groups, attack the three dynasties, and take away the wealth in their clans.”

“And I’ll say this in advance. Since the reason why my Jiang Dynasty has been able to survive this time is all due to Chu Feng, my Jiang Dynasty will not have a single cent of the three clans’ wealth. All of it can split between Chu Feng and Senior Azure Dragon.” The emperor of the Jiang Dynasty lightly smiled and said.

“Milord, this isn’t too good right? After all, this time, your Jiang Dynasty has suffered greatly as well, so you need resources to reimburse your losses.” Although Chu Feng was very moved by the three hundred thousand Heaven beads, he really didn’t feel good benefiting from them alone.

“Chu Feng is correct. We have the resources from the three clans for taking anyway. I can represent the Azure Dragon School to go to the Zhao Dynasty, Chu Feng will go to the Ji Dynasty, and your Jiang Dynasty will go to the Liu Dynasty.”

“As for how much is obtained, that’ll depend on the heavens, but no matter how much is taken, it belongs to the collector.” The Azure Dragon Founder lightly smiled and said.

“He is correct. I feel that we can follow his method.” Chu Feng also expressed approval.

“Since it is like so, my Jiang Dynasty is also willing to follow Senior Azure Dragon’s suggestion.” Hearing that, it wasn’t really good for the



emperor of the Jiang Dynasty to push the suggestion away so he could only nod his head.

Quickly after, the Jiang Dynasty led a group of people forward to the Liu Dynasty.

The Azure Dragon Founder himself went forward to the Zhao Dynasty.

As for Chu Feng, he went with the mysterious man and headed towards the Ji Dynasty.

The goal of their journey was very simple. It wasn't to completely kill the three clans, but to seize all of their wealth.

Without peak experts nor wealth and resources as support, it would be difficult for the three clans to rise in power. Without even needing Chu Feng and the others to attack, other enemies would “throw stones down the well” [1] and completely eradicate them.

And everything was exactly how the Jiang Dynasty's emperor predicted. The three clans sent out their peak experts for the attack, and the three clans were already like empty cities.

Although they had powerful Protection Formations, without the support of powerful experts, the formation was the same as void, and were easily destroyed by the troops from the three sides.

As for the three clans' wealth, as they could not even guard their dynasties, how could they guard their wealth? Naturally, they were all easily plundered.

It had to be said that despite the continent of the Nine Provinces losing quite a few powerful people, the wealth they looted from the three clans was enough to recompense for everything.

# Chapter 526 - Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation

MGA: Chapter 526 - Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation

Of the three groups of people, Chu Feng was the quickest to return. After all, he, who had the mysterious man following him, no matter if it was speed or strength, could be said to be peerless.

And in less than a few days, the Azure Dragon Founder also returned. He, who had the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, although his cultivation was far inferior to the mysterious man's, his speed was still extremely fast.

The slowest were the people from the Jiang Dynasty. Although the emperor led a group of experts and personally went, regardless of strength, or speed, they were a huge chunk weaker than the mysterious man and the Azure Dragon Founder.

But generally speaking, all three groups had extremely great harvests, but sadly, although there was a lot of wealth, the scope of which they included was too broad.

Real cultivation resources only occupied a third of the wealth. A large portion of the remaining wealth were Elite Armaments, precious treasures, and things like those.

And as Chu Feng wanted to rush into the Heaven realm, he proposed a request. It was to take the Elite Armaments and treasures and things like those to exchange for the Azure Dragon Founder's and the Jiang Dynasty emperor's cultivation resources

To that proposal, the Azure Dragon Founder and the Jiang Dynasty's emperor agreed, but they didn't take Chu Feng's things. They only, without condition, gave all of their cultivation resources to Chu Feng.

Facing such actions by the Jiang Dynasty's emperor and the Azure Dragon Founder, Chu Feng didn't say much. He could only hold gratefulness in his heart and remember the kindness that the two of them showed him.

And as Chu Feng brought a large amount of cultivation resources and was going to close himself to the world, preparing to cultivate them, people in the same generation such as Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, and Jiang Yini gathered with Chu Feng for a short while.

“Brother Chu Feng, although I wasn't able to witness the scene of that day, but just by hearing my sister's narration, my passion boiled.”

“Before, I only knew that you were powerful, but I didn't think you would be stronger than me. Today, I now know that you are this much stronger than me.”

“In my life, I have never truly admired anyone, but now, I really admire you to death. No matter what, as a member of the dynasty, I still have to thank you for your kindness, saving the tens of thousands of my clan members' lives.”

Jiang Wushang's heavy injuries were starting to recover, and he seemed extremely spirited. However, his gaze was examining more at the mysterious man next to Chu Feng because he had also heard of his strong power.

“Brother Wushang, there is no need to be so polite with how we are.” Chu Feng lightly smiled and said.

“Chu Feng, I've heard that you want to cultivate in seclusion in order to break into the Heaven realm. The Heaven realm isn't easy to break into, and at first, I had to attempt dozens of times in order to succeed.” Jiang Yini warmly said.

“Yeah. Junior Chu Feng, the Heaven realm is indeed very difficult because this is a huge barrier. The former I only broke through after twenty attempts.” Zhang Tianyi also spoke.

“Brother Tianyi, you actually needed only twenty attempts? I needed a good thirty times before succeeding.” Hearing that Zhang Tianyi successfully broke through with only twenty times, Jiang Wushang was a bit shocked.

To their words, Chu Feng could only lightly smile. Back then, when Zi Ling was by Chu Feng’s side, he had personally seen her charge into the Heaven realm.

It was indeed very difficult to break into the Heaven realm. First, one needed to do ample preparation. Not only body-wise, but also mentally-wise. Only after doing that could one attempt, and that one attempt would often be a very long time. If it was short, several days; if it was long, over a dozen days, and even several months.

Furthermore, after failing once, one would lose a portion of the Profound power they accumulated before. Their body would also be injured a bit, and they would require a period of time before being able to continue making the breakthrough.

To sum it up, breaking into the Heaven realm was very difficult. Even with Zi Ling’s talent of a Divine Body, she only succeeded after attempting over ten times back and forth, so Chu Feng also knew how huge the hurdle that he was going to face was.

He could not fail because the Profound power he accumulated could not be lost. The amount was really too huge.

If he let Jiang Wushang and Jiang Yini know that the price for breaking into the 1st level of the Heaven realm was a dynasty’s wealth over several thousand years of accumulation, he had no clue how they would feel.

Chu Feng longly chatted with Jiang Yini, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi while toasting.

Within the long chatting, perhaps more or less, he gained the experience of their breakthroughs. However, Chu Feng also didn’t know whether their

experiences would be useful to him or not. After all, he was completely different from them three.

Using several days of time to organize himself and after restoring his body to its peak state, Chu Feng handed the mysterious man to the Azure Dragon Founder and started to cultivate in isolation in the Jiang Dynasty's special historical area of seclusion.

There was a lot to that area of seclusion. It was a place only the emperors, princesses, princes, or people in the dynasty who had done meritorious deeds could do closed-door cultivation.

And that place had a very long history. Moreover, it had special effects, and that place was called the Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation.

After Chu Feng entered, the Azure Dragon Founder, Monstrous Monkey King, Jiang Dynasty's emperor, the dynasty's old ancestor who had awakened from his heavy injuries, dynasty experts such as Jiang Hengyuan, as well as Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, Jiang Yini, and the other people in the dynasty's young generation, gathered on the top of a tall tower.

Because, at that place, they could clearly see the Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation that Chu Feng was cultivating in seclusion in.

"I've heard that there's a lot to the Jiang Dynasty's Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation. However, I wonder what's special about it?" The Monstrous Monkey King could not see the specialness when looking at the flat-surfaced and circular stage, so it asked curiously.

"Senior Monkey King, my clan's Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation was created based off of the dynasty's peerless Secret Skill. It is connected to my Jiang Dynasty's bloodline."

"The area of cultivation is built underground, but after successfully making a breakthrough, undulations appear on the surface. Especially after

someone breaks into the Heaven realm, there will be pillars of light charging into the sky from inside the circular stage.”

“And the more pillars of light there are, it means that the person has stronger potential and talent.” Speaking to that point, the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor couldn’t help but cast his gaze towards the Azure Dragon Founder on the side and said smilingly, “I’ve heard when Senior Azure Dragon broke into the Heaven realm, he was also in this Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation, and at that time, an unprecedented seven pillars of light were activated.”

“That powerful?!” Hearing those words, everyone couldn’t help but exclaim and the gaze they looked at the Azure Dragon Founder with became complicated. Because, of the people there, many broke into the Heaven realm in the Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation so they deeply knew what seven pillars of light represented.

“Hoh, there was indeed something like that.” Facing the crowd’s gazes of somewhat admiration, the Azure Dragon Founder stroked his beard and pleasedly nodded his head.

“Senior Azure Dragon is indeed impressive, but this record has been broken by my young brother. When he broke through, he activated eight pillars of light!” Just at that time, Jiang Yini spoke.

“Oh?” Hearing those words, the Azure Dragon Founder’s expression couldn’t help changing as he looked at Jiang Wushang, but very soon, his suspicion became confirmation.

He discovered that this brat was truly not simple. He was indeed a lot more powerful than his own younger times, and of the people in the young generation on scene, only Zhang Tianyi could be compared to him.

“Then, why is this place called the Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation?” Suddenly, Zhang Tianyi curiously asked.

“Ho... That’s because in the legends, it said that once someone can activate the eighteen pillars of light, the light becomes eighteen golden

dragons. They would coil around in the air, showing a phenomenon.”

“At that time, the effects would not be just that. All of the inherited bloodlines of my Jiang Dynasty would also become stronger.”

“However, it is only a legend.” Speaking to that point, the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor first helplessly sighed, then looked at Jiang Wushang and said, “Because, up until now, the eight pillars of light Wushang activated is already the highest amount. From that, it can be seen how hard it is to activate all eighteen pillars of light.”

# Chapter 527 - Golden Dragon in the Sky

MGA: Chapter 527 - Golden Dragon in the Sky

“I truly look forward to how many pillars of light Junior Chu Feng will activate.” Hearing the Jiang Dynasty emperor’s explanation on the Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation, Zhang Tianyi’s gaze seemed to yearn more and more.

“With Brother Chu Feng’s talent, I believe it will not be difficult for him to surpass my eight pillars of light.” Jiang Wushang lightly smiled and said.

“Of course. My brother’s talent is extremely powerful. I’m guessing if he wants to break through, it is completely reasonable for him to activate ten pillars of light.” The Monstrous Monkey King opened his mouth and had a face full of smug. It could be seen that as Chu Feng’s big brother, he was also very proud.

“Chu Feng’s talent is indeed extraordinary, and all of us do not doubt this point.”

“Forgive my direct words, but the Heaven realm isn’t that easy to break into. From what I know, this is the first time Chu Feng is attempting to break into the Heaven realm.”

“And the chance to successfully make a breakthrough the first time is almost zero. At least, I have never heard of anyone who succeeded breaking into the Heaven realm on their first try.” Just at that time, Jiang Hengyuan calmly spoke.

After hearing his words, many people who had a good relationship with Chu Feng couldn’t help slightly furrowing their brows and cast displeased



gazes.

However, although Jiang Hengyuan's words was a bit inappropriate currently, it was indeed reasonable.

The Heaven realm was a very difficult barrier. Many people had to attempt countless times in order to succeed, and it could be said those able to succeed after dozens of times were already people with extremely good aptitude. After all, even Zi Ling, the Divine Body, needed over ten times in order to succeed. Succeeding with one attempt was indeed unheard of by anyone.

“Will we be unable to witness the instant Chu Feng breaks into the Heaven realm? To be honest, I truly want to see how many pillars of light he can activate when he breaks through.” A dynasty expert said with slight regret.

In reality, the ones feeling regret was not only him. Everyone felt regret, but even so, no one left that place, and without shifting their gazes, they stared at the Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation.

And that one wait was a good half a day. Chu Feng entered at noon, and at present, the sun had already descended in the west. The curved moon first appeared, and the night was engulfing the entire world bit by bit.

“It is already dark, so I urge everyone to have a meal first, then rest early. After all, even if Chu Feng makes a breakthrough, it is impossible for it to be this quick.” Suddenly, the Jiang Dynasty's emperor spoke to urge.

He already prepared a banquet to welcome the crowd, but he could do nothing as no one wanted to miss the moment Chu Feng makes a breakthrough. From start to finish, they kept on waiting. Up until now, none of them had eaten.

“Breaking into the Heaven realm is a very long process. Even if Chu Feng truly hopes to succeed during the first attempt, it will require at least a few days of time.”

“I will have people watching here. If Chu Feng truly breaks into the Heaven realm, I will immediately notify everyone.” The old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty also urged with a light smile.

And hearing him say it like that, even though they were unwilling to, they did prepare to leave. After all, the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor and emperor were correct. Breaking into the Heaven realm was that hard, so how would it be possible for Chu Feng to make a breakthrough that quickly? Them waiting here would only be wasting time.

\*hmm\*

But just at that moment, a muffled sound suddenly rang out. Quickly following that was dazzling light that came behind the crowd.

Turning their heads to look, everyone was greatly shocked because they astonishingly discovered that at the edge of the formation, an incomparably bright golden pillar of light charged into the sky, straight through the clouds.

“He broke through?” At that instant, everyone’s faces changed greatly and they were endlessly shocked.

Because, a pillar of light like that already represented everything. It was that Chu Feng broke through. Not only did he break through during his first attempt, he even broke through in under a day of time.

\*hmm hmm hmm hmm hmm hmm...\*

Quickly after, pillar after pillar of thick light rose into the sky and straight into the clouds. With only a blink, there were ten pillars of light erected in front of everyone’s eyes.

At that instant, everyone was dumbstruck. Their faces were written full of the word “shock” because right now, the pillars of light still charging into the sky were continuing. The ten pillars of light was absolutely not the final number.

Eleven. Thirteen. Fifteen. Eighteen. As the crowd watched, a total of eighteen pillars rose into the clouds, erected under the night sky, in between the heaven and earth.

“Heavens! Eighteen! A total of eighteen pillars of light? Chu Feng actually activated eighteen pillars of light?!” They were thoroughly dumbfounded. Especially the people from the Jiang Dynasty. As they looked at the eighteen dazzling golden pillars of light, it was simply like a dream.

It was because there was a legend in the Jiang Dynasty. As long as there was someone able to activate eighteen pillars of light, the bloodlines of everyone from their Jiang Dynasty would be strengthened.

And at present, the scene from the legends appeared just like that in front of them. That truly made them feel elated and didn't know what to do. They were actually unable to accept that immediately, and even didn't believe it was true.

\*wuaoo~~~~~\*

But just as everyone was submerged in shock, within the eighteen pillars of light, a deafening dragon's roar actually resounded.

And when they were awakened by that dragon roar, they discovered that the eighteen pillars of light were actually changing. They originally pierced through the sky, but currently, with the sky as the center, they were shrinking extremely quickly.

When the pillars of light shrunk to a certain degree, special curves actually appeared. It was a dragon. The eighteen pillars of light became eighteen golden dragons.

\*houao~~~~~\*

The eighteen golden dragons had devastating golden radiance and unordinary atmospheres. They were flying in the air, circling around the Jiang Dynasty in the sky.

At that moment, it was already dark. So, the radiance that the eighteen golden dragons gave off was especially dazzling, and actually lit up the entire Jiang Dynasty.

In that situation, all of the members of the Jiang Dynasty were stunned. As they looked at the eighteen golden dragons in the air, they were endlessly excited. Some people even knelt and kowtowed.

Because, they all thought of the legend spread in the Jiang Dynasty. When the phenomenon occurs with eighteen dragons coiling around in the air, it's their Jiang Dynasty's moment of transformation.

\*bang~~~~~\*

Just as everyone up and down the Jiang Dynasty were submerged in the dream-like joy, the eighteen golden dragons longly roared, then exploded, becoming golden specks. Like raindrops, within bursts of special sounds, they sprinkled down.

“Why is this happening?!” Seeing the golden specks that filled the sky, the people from the Jiang Dynasty were shocked, and their originally incomparably excited faces were instantly replaced by a hint of panic. The eighteen golden dragons shattered. To them, it was not a good omen.

“Wait!” But after the golden specks floated downwards, they did not merge into the earth, but started to merge into the bodies of all the Jiang clan members.

At that instant, the faces of the people from the Jiang Dynasty greatly changed again. A type of indescribable excitement and joy surged onto their faces because they could clearly feel it.

At that moment, the blood in their bodies was boiling. It was burning. The bloodline power that they uniquely had was actually constantly strengthening!

The legend that circulated in the Jiang Dynasty was true!

# Chapter 528 - Great Kindness and Benevolence

MGA: Chapter 528 - Great Kindness and Benevolence

When the phenomenon of the eighteen golden dragons appeared, the Jiang Dynasty's bloodline, also truly like the legend, received an increase in strength.

That caused the Jiang Dynasty members to be ecstatic because that had extraordinary importance to them. Not only did it represent the strengthening in everyone's aptitude, it also meant that the entire Jiang Dynasty was going to rise greatly in power.

And as the people from the Jiang Dynasty were submerged in the joy of their bloodlines explosively increasing in strength, within the inner part of the Eighteen Golden Dragon Abnormality Formation, another phenomenon appeared.

\*bzzz~\*

Within the vast underground palace, three types of lighting, golden, blue, and purple, became innumerable tiny lightning snakes and filled all places in the large palace. They endlessly wandered around, and at the same time, emanated horrifying aura that could destroy the heaven and earth.

Suddenly, the lightings of three colours started to, within the buzzing, rush towards the middle of the underground palace. Moreover, they quickly merged into one.

And after the horrifying lightning completely disappeared, a figure also came into view in the underground palace's center. He had thick brows, big eyes, was handsome, brave, and extraordinary. He was exactly Chu Feng.

At that instant, within his eyes, there were three types of lightning interweaving, and when the three types of lightning coiled and shaped, Chu Feng's atmosphere was already completely different.

The 1st level of the Heaven realm. Chu Feng had already successfully stepped into the Heaven realm, but on his current face, it was not all joy. There was a hint of regret.

“A bit. It fell short just a bit.”

“I felt that just now, I seemed to be able to control the power of the lightning, and I also felt how horrifying they were. If they could truly be used by me, it's likely that with only the power of the lightning, there's no one in the Heaven realm that can fight against me.” Chu Feng tightly clenched both of his eyes, and very regretfully said.

“Just leave it Chu Feng. Some things do not come by forcefully taking them. If it's yours, it's yours. If it's not yours, you can't do anything about it.”

“But this Divine Lightning is clearly yours, so I believe in you. Sooner or later, its power will be obtained by you, and you will then be able to use it.”

“Do not be unhappy because of these things. Right now, you have already successfully broke into the Heaven realm, and you even succeeded with one attempt. Since your comprehension power is so high, you should be happy instead.” Eggy sweetly smiled and said.

“Mm. Eggy, you're correct. The power of this lightning seems to be getting active as my cultivation gets stronger. Even if it doesn't automatically submit to me, if I study it day and night, there will be a day that I force them out from my blood, and I will then control them.”

It had to be said that Eggy's consultation had quite a bit of an effect, but obviously, Chu Feng still had huge confidence in himself.

Before, when the third lightning, the purple-coloured lightning, came out of his dantian and merged into his blood, it was as if the three lightning went out of control, and surged out of his body at the same time.

At that instant, Chu Feng was able to clearly feel horrifying power from the three types of lightning. As to how horrifying the power was, it was a lot more horrifying than an expert in the 9th level of the Heaven realm using their strongest attack from a Elite Armament.

So, only because of that could Chu Feng determine if the power of the lightning could be used by him, with the lightning power, there shouldn't be anyone in the Heaven realm who could defeat him.

Moreover, even though the three lightnings still returned to Chu Feng's body at the end, he discovered that currently, he could sense the lightning clearer.

Eventually, one day, he would fully understand the obscurity of the lightning, and at that time, he believed he could use his unique power.

With Chu Feng current strength, he already had the ability to create martial skills, but he didn't do that because along his growth in cultivation, he discovered even more that the road of martial cultivation was vast and without end.

So, he knew that he was still too weak. Pitifully weak. So, he wasn't going to create some martial skills at a time when he was still so weak.

Because, if he were to create a martial skill, it would have to be a very strong martial skill. He had never thought of creating a martial skill that was very strong in a beginner's eyes, but like trash in an expert's eyes.

So, before that, he would only learn the martial skills of seniors and absorb their experiences. By doing that, one day, he would create a martial skill that belonged to him, and it would definitely not only be a single type.

Every single type would be able to shock the heavens and shift the earth. They would amaze the world's people, and one of them would definitely be related to the obscure meaning of his body's lightning.

\*rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble\*

Just as Chu Feng was immersed in many future fantasies, the entrance to the underground palace was suddenly opened. Focusing and looking over, he saw a large group of people densely surging in.

Those people, no matter male, female, old, or young, all wore a smile that was like a flower blossoming, and their smiles were shining. Furthermore, within their smiles, other than joy, there was also a special feeling.

Those people were exactly the Azure Dragon Founder, Monstrous Monkey King, Zhang Tianyi, and the people from the Jiang Dynasty.

“Chu Feng, I have indeed not been mistaken when I had my eyes on you. However, you have far surpassed my expectations. I must say that you've given me a huge surprise!” The Azure Dragon Founder was the first to walk over. With a face full of relief, he patted Chu Feng's shoulder. It could be seen that he was truly very happy.

“Haha, Chu Feng, you didn't disappoint me and given me face” Quickly after, the Monstrous Monkey King also walked over with a face full of smiles, showing its teeth. Its smile was much exaggerated, and even a bit frightening, but that showed its current excitement even more.

And after those two people walked over, the Jiang Dynasty crowd, with the old ancestor leading, walked over orderly.

Suddenly, the Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor knelt onto the ground. Simultaneously, all of the Jiang Dynasty members knelt down in-sync, and kowtowed to Chu Feng.

An incomparably loud voice that came from their hearts resonated throughout the underground palace, “We Jiang clan members kowtow to Chu Feng as gratitude for his great kindness and benevolence. The help



you gave my Jiang Dynasty will be engraved in all of my Jiang Dynasty's successors, eternally remembered.”

“Senior Jiang, what are you doing?!”

“Everyone, quickly rise! What are you doing?!”

Chu Feng couldn't help but be taken aback by that scene. Not knowing what to do was written all over his face, then he hurriedly went up to first help the Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor up.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, this time, you've truly helped my Jiang Dynasty greatly!” Jiang Wushang walked over, and as he spoke, the area in between his brows changed, and a golden, dazzling “royal” character appeared on his forehead. At the same time, layers of faint radiance covered his body.

“Brother Wushang, your bloodline power is many times stronger again! Congratulations!” Chu Feng was a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, so naturally, he felt Jiang Wushang's bloodline power's increase in strength. Although he didn't know what was happening, he still felt happy for him.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, this is all because of you! You made my bloodline power stronger!” Jiang Wushang smiled and said.

# Chapter 529 - Change in the Emperor Tomb

MGA: Chapter 529 - Change in the Emperor Tomb

“What? You said me?” Chu Feng’s pupils shrunk and his eyes couldn’t help faintly enlarging. Within his slightly widened mouth, it clearly showed his current bewilderedness and shock.

“Heh, not only me, everyone in my Jiang Dynasty, including the future generation, has have their bloodline strengthened because of you.” Jiang Wushang continued to say smilingly.

“Chu Feng, Wushang is correct. This time you really have unintentionally helped my Jiang Dynasty greatly.” The old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty also said with a face full of light smiles, and his gaze was full of gratitude.

“This... What exactly is happening? Can someone explain it to me?” Chu Feng was both shocked and curious. He swept his appealing gaze over the crowd. He truly wanted to know what actually happened.

“Chu Feng, it’s like this...” Seeing that, the Azure Dragon Founder first stroked his beard, lightly smiled, then detailedly narrated the process of what happened to Chu Feng.

And Chu Feng also finally learned why they were so happy, and why the people from the Jiang Dynasty were so grateful towards him.

So, it seemed like when he made his breakthrough, borrowing the power of the Eighteen Golden Dragon Abnormality Formation, it strengthened the Jiang Dynasty members’ bloodline.

After knowing the process, Chu Feng was also very happy. He was happy not only because the Jiang Dynasty became stronger, but the greater reason why he was happy was because he was able to activate eighteen

pillars of light. That made him more confident, and he had more confidence in fighting against the so-called Immortal Execution Archipelago.

On that night, the Jiang Dynasty set up a huge banquet and celebrated with the entire clan. Everyone then knew that it was Chu Feng who made the Jiang Dynasty's legend appear, causing their bloodlines to strengthen.

With that, the people who were already grateful towards Chu Feng became even more grateful, and the people who idolized Chu Feng went even more insane, and as for the people who adored Chu Feng, their feelings were even clearer.

It had to be said that Chu Feng became a person who did great things for the Jiang Dynasty. A true benefactor. Not only did he save the Jiang Dynasty, he even sent the Jiang Dynasty onto a road of rising in power.

That event was personally written, by the Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor, into the Jiang clan's genealogy book. He wanted to let the future generation remember the great kindness and benevolence Chu Feng had shown the Jiang Dynasty.

After shortly resting in the Jiang Dynasty for a few days, Chu Feng and the others returned to the Azure Dragon School.

And when the people from the Azure Dragon School learned that the founder of the Azure Dragon School, the Azure Dragon Founder, was still not dead, people up and down the Azure Dragon School were elated and the entire Azure Dragon School was brimming with excitement.

After all, the Azure Dragon Founder's name was really too well-known. He was simply a legend passed down in the continent of the Nine Provinces. The strongest person to sweep through the continent a thousand years ago. That was absolutely not a joke.

At present, the strongest person who swept through the continent a thousand years ago was actually still living. How could the disciples of the Azure Dragon School not be excited?

Not only was Chu Feng, the genius, there to fortify the school's position, currently, they even had the Azure Dragon Founder regain control over the school. The school was clearly going to become invincible in the continent of the Nine Provinces, and as disciples of the Azure Dragon School, they were extremely honored.

Very soon, the news of the Azure Dragon Founder still being alive as well as that he was going to regain control over the school spread throughout the entire continent of the Nine Provinces. It had to be said that the news shocked the Nine Provinces once again.

Almost everyone felt that the Azure Dragon School was going to rise in power, and was unable to be stopped. Perhaps it would even surpass the Jiang Dynasty. After all, the Azure Dragon Founder a thousand years ago was already that strong, let alone a thousand years later.

In reality, it was also indeed like that. After a thousand years of time, the Azure Dragon Founder already had a very deep understanding of the journey of martial cultivation, and more or less, felt an opportunity to become a Martial Lord.

So, the first thing he did after returning to the Azure Dragon School was announcing to the world that he, the Azure Dragon Founder, was still alive, and was going to regasp the position of school head.

The second thing was that he was going to do closed-door cultivation. He prepared to charge towards the Martial Lord realm. It wasn't his first attempt in his life, and even he himself forgot how many times he attempted.

However, this attempt was his most confident attempt.

It had to be said that the news of the Azure Dragon Founder still being in this world affected everyone in the continent of the Nine Provinces, and once again, caused characters of many places in the Nine Provinces to come forward and join the Azure Dragon School.

Even some martial cultivation seniors who hid from the world walked out from the mountains and forests they lived in and went towards the Azure Dragon School, wanting to seek a position of guest elder in the Azure Dragon School.

And other than that news, there was another that also spread throughout the continent of the Nine Provinces very quickly. It was that the dynasties which ruled over three continents came to attack the Jiang Dynasty.

But they ended in defeat. With the assistance of the Azure Dragon School and the World Spirit Guild, the Jiang Dynasty protected their territory and also proved their strength to the world's people.

When that information was known, powers such as the Jie clan, Yuangang School and Fire God School were frightful and terrified.

After all, when the Jiang Dynasty needed help the most, it had sent out an appeal to them. However, at that time, they chose to refuse.

Currently, the Jiang Dynasty was completely safe, and moreover, was their enemy.

They themselves also knew what awaited them. So, they prepared to secretly slip away and leave the continent of the Nine Provinces.

However, before they left, the Jiang Dynasty's troops had arrived at those powers and gave them their deserved lesson.

The Jiang Dynasty did not completely eradicate them, but only killed some leaders, and thoroughly controlled those powers.

From then on, although the Jie clan, Yuangang School, Fire God School, Free and Unrestrained Valley, and Hidden White Sect still existed, in reality, they existed only in name as they became the Jiang Dynasty's political puppets.

On this day, quite a period of time had passed since the Jiang Dynasty was in danger, and Chu Feng suddenly mentioned a matter to the Monstrous

Monkey King.

“What? You want to return to the Vermilion Bird Mountain Range and enter the Emperor Tomb again?!” A hint of shock emerged onto the Monstrous Monkey King’s face.

“Change has happened in the Emperor Tomb. The entrances in the White Tiger Mountain Range and Black Tortoise Mountain Range has all been closed. Even in my Azure Dragon Mountain Range’s Thousand Bone Graveyard, only the place that my ancestor built is left behind. The area of Anti-Demon Symbols is completely gone, as if they had never appeared.”

“Right now, only the Vermilion Bird Mountain Range’s entrance is still open and if I want to enter the Emperor Tomb, I can only enter it from there.” Chu Feng said. Ever since coming back to the Azure Province, he brought the mysterious man to check the three other entrances.

He thought that since the Azure Dragon Founder was able to meet the Ice and Fire Pearls at the Azure Dragon Mountain Range’s entrance, it meant that other entrances also had unordinary treasures.

Although the black-clothed old man looted all the treasures at the Vermilion Bird Mountain Range’s entrance, he shouldn’t have known about the three other entrances so Chu Feng’s first thought was to get some benefits from the three other entrances.

However, what he never would have thought of was that the other three entrances were actually closed, as if they never even appeared. There weren’t any traces left behind, and only the entrance to the Vermilion Bird Mountain Range remained.

# Chapter 530 - The Powerful, Mysterious Man

MGA: Chapter 530 - The Powerful, Mysterious Man

“It’s like that?!”

“Then someone definitely entered deep into the Emperor Tomb and touched something, causing the three other entrances to automatically close.”

“But who exactly is it? They actually have such powerful skills?” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, the Monstrous Monkey King contemplated.

After thinking deeply for a while, he was still unable to think of a result. However, the uneasiness on the monkey face became more distinct. So, he said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, you can absolutely not go.”

“Putting aside that the mysterious person who destroyed layers of barriers may still be there, even if that person is gone, the treasures within the Emperor Tomb has definitely been completely engulfed by him.”

“If you want to go there and obtain harvests, you can only step into places that he hadn’t stepped in yet. However, since the Emperor Tomb is that dangerous, with your cultivation entering alone, aren’t you just looking to die?”

“Monkey Bro, don’t worry. With him, I’m sure even if it’s the Emperor Tomb, it may not be able to stop me.” Chu Feng cast his gaze towards the mysterious man who was following behind him, and as he was yawning, he was eating chicken feet.

Looking at that mysterious man, the Monstrous Monkey King’s blood-red eyes slightly flickered and couldn’t help but think of back then, at the man

who was above the Jiang Dynasty, caused the sky and earth to change, and emanated the airs of a king

Although the man in front of his eyes and the man of back then were as if they were two different people and could not be compared together, the Monstrous Monkey King still deeply feared him.

Because, the scene back then was really too terrifying. Even if he thought back today, he would still feel uneasiness and panic. He also had a feeling that the mysterious man's strength was very possibly above the Martial Lord realm.

But seeing that Chu Feng seemed to have truly grasped the mysterious man, and recalling the matter between Chu Feng and Zi Ling, he thought of Chu Feng's urgent feelings of becoming stronger. So, he no longer urged, and said with slight helplessness, "Whatever, you brat. If you want to go, go. I can't hold you back."

"But beware, you must be careful. If you discover anything wrong, immediately turn around and don't forcefully continue. The Emperor Tomb is too powerful. It is absolutely not as simple as you imagine, and even with him protecting you, you might not be able to go wherever you wish to in the Emperor Tomb."

"As for the Azure Dragon School, I will help you look after it. Before Senior Azure Dragon comes out of cultivation, I guarantee that it will be safe."

"Thank you Monkey Bro. I will be careful, and I will quickly go and quickly return." Seeing that the Monstrous Monkey King allowed it, Chu Feng was endlessly ecstatic. With the Monstrous Monkey King protecting the ones close to him, he could also go explore the Emperor Tomb without worries.

So, with the allure of an impatient heart, like back then, Chu Feng went forth to the Vermilion Bird Mountain Range, and entered the Emperor Tomb once again.



At that instant, Chu Feng already entered the Emperor Tomb, and returning to that place, there was a special feeling in his heart.

Back then, when he entered, although he also embraced the thought of wanting to obtain opportunities and treasures, when he faced the tomb left behind by a Martial Emperor, he was still very uneasy back then.

However, today, it was different. With the mysterious man, the exceptional expert, following him, Chu Feng was full of confidence. Even if he met the black-clothed old man, Chu Feng was not be afraid.

At that instant, like back then, with Chu Feng's agitation, the mysterious man returned to his former manliness. The flames in his eyes surged, and the long hair behind him fluttered.

Chu Feng was covered by golden Spirit Formation, being above the mysterious man's head. Although he was at a safe place, he also had an unordinary atmosphere. [1]

“Forward. Kill everything you see.” Chu Feng pointed forward and loudly commanded.

“As you wish!” The man was obedient and didn't dare to delay in the slightest. With a thought, he flew up, and like light, speedily went forward along the edgeless Emperor Tomb passageway.

The man's speed was really too quick. With only a blink, he rushed past the area Chu Feng and the others walked before, and passed the structure that originally sealed the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

“Die.”

Shortly after the mysterious man dashed past the place where Chu Feng and the Monstrous Monkey King hid before, he suddenly explosively yelled.

\*wuaao\*

After the explosive yell, without even moving his hand, an Evil Spirit's cry of misery rang out from below. At the same time, dust rose down there and the dark surface collapsed. An enormous thing also came into view. It was an Evil Spirit.

However, the Evil Spirit's enormous body was currently becoming countless strands of light and rising into the sky quickly, dissipating with the wind. It no longer had the aura of life.

“So powerful. An Evil Spirit in the 9th level of the Heaven realm can actually be killed with only a thought.” Chu Feng felt shocked in his heart. Although after such a long time, he already knew that the mysterious man was terrifyingly strong, he never would have thought that he could kill those in the Heaven realm with merely a thought.

The Heaven realm that was akin to a god in the continent of the Nine Provinces was even weaker than an ant in front of him. It could be seen how big of a difference there was between the realms.

After Chu Feng gave the order of death, the mysterious man slaughtered. Any living beings that he felt would be mercilessly killed by him.

The Evil Spirits got stronger and stronger, and even at the later stages, what appeared was no longer an Evil Spirit, but organic huge beasts, and guardians condensed by Spirit Formations.

On the road, not only was Chu Feng amazed by the arrangements and the imprisonment of powerful existences, he was also amazed at the vastness of the Emperor Tomb. It was simply an inestimably huge underground world.

At the same time, Chu Feng also rejoiced hiddenly. Although he didn't see any treasures on the road and only saw places that protected treasures, he saw a lot of Spirit Formation Essence. An extremely large amount. From a small puddle to a large puddle. Slowly, Spirit Formation Essence was everywhere, and it could definitely allow Chu Feng to break through again.

“Strange. Many of the barriers here have clearly been destroyed, so why are the Evil Spirits and guardians here not running everywhere and are orderly guarding?” On the forwarding road, Chu Feng felt confused when he saw that scene.

“Very simple. Deterrence.” Eggy’s sweet voice suddenly rang out.

“Deterrence? What do you mean?” Chu Feng was puzzled.

“When a person reaches a certain degree in strength, in reality, there is no need to set up too many restrictions. With a single sentence, a single command, it can bind an exceptional expert for his entire life.”

“Putting aside others, let’s say the person under you. He’s so powerful, yet he listens to your orders. For what? Because of you?” Eggy said while smiling

“So it’s like that.” At that instant, Chu Feng came to a realization.

The reason why the mysterious man listened to him was likely because of his father. It was Chu Feng’s father who bound the mysterious man.

And the reason why the Evil Spirits and guardians in this place were so orderly and obedient was definitely because of the master of the Emperor Tomb. It was the master of the Emperor Tomb who made them afraid. It was the master of the Emperor Tomb who made them not dare to go against his orders, even if he already disappeared for almost ten thousand years.

After that, they continued forward. Powerful and horrifying guardians appeared in front of Chu Feng one after the other.

When every single one appeared, it would cause Chu Feng’s heart to jump out of his chest because they were really too strong. So strong that Chu Feng had to be afraid because purely the atmosphere they gave off affected Chu Feng

But they could do nothing as even if they were more horrifying, more powerful, they were all heartlessly killed by the mysterious man. Not a single one of them was able to block a single of the man's strike, and not a single was able to take his so-called Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven.

# Chapter 531 - The Mystical Emperor Tomb

MGA: Chapter 531 - The Mystical Emperor Tomb

The mysterious man was like a killing god. On the path, he was unstoppable. It was as if everything was swept by the wind and nothing could block a single one of his strikes.

At that instant, Chu Feng was amazed by the man's horrifying strength once again because his strength already far surpassed his expectations.

But at the same time, he also thought of a question.

If the mysterious man was already so impressive, then how powerful would the person who restricted the mysterious man, Chu Feng's father, be?

At that instant, Chu Feng finally understood why his talent surpassed normal people. It was because he had such a powerful father. If he didn't surpass normal people, that would instead be illogical.

"Chu Feng, more and more, I feel like the Divine Lightning in your body is possibly also a type of inherited power." Suddenly, Eggy spoke. Clearly, she also thought of something because of the mysterious man's powerful strength.

"Eggy, why so?" Chu Feng asked.

"Heh, just intuition. This madman is definitely an expert in the Martial King realm. Although he isn't in the peak of the Martial King realm, having this cultivation at this age is already quite strong."

"Your father is able to make him so afraid. Even after his mind becomes muddled and forgets everything about himself, the only thing he doesn't

forget are the words your father said. Do you know why this is?”

“Why?”

“It’s because he doesn’t dare to forget. He doesn’t dare to forget the words your father said, and how powerful would a person be if he can even make a Martial King expert act in this manner?”

“A character like him is absolutely not be a normal person. He definitely grasps special power.” After sighing, Eggy curled her lips and said, “Boy, to be able to seal my power and imprison me in your Spiritual World, your background is truly not simple.”

“I...”

Chu Feng understood Eggy’s words. The meaning Eggy wanted to say was very clear. It was that if Chu Feng’s father was extremely powerful, Chu Feng’s background was extremely powerful.

But no matter what, it meant that behind Chu Feng’s back, he likely had a powerful shield and he could have originally become the pride of the heavens.

But he could not understand why such a powerful shield would abandon him. Could it be that his father truly met an even stronger enemy?

Chu Feng already thought of that question countless times, but in a situation where he had so little clues, he could really not think of a conclusion.

“This Emperor Tomb is too big. With his speed, we have actually still not reached the end after such a long time.”

“The area of this Emperor Tomb far surpasses the Azure Province.” As the mysterious man went deeper in, Chu Feng was fully convinced by the Emperor Tomb’s powerful methods.

“This Emperor Tomb is deep underground and we are not heading forward on the same level. We are heading downwards, and this is indeed an

underground world. It is inestimably large.”

“But don’t be too shocked. Although an Emperor Tomb is big, compared to an Ancestor Tomb, it is simply a child’s play.” Eggy naughtily smiled and said.

“Ancestral Tomb? What’s that?” Chu Feng was endlessly curious. If an Emperor Tomb was already so powerful, what would an Ancestral Tomb look like?

“Heh, I’m afraid saying those things would frighten you. You are still too young, so there are some things that are better not told to you.” Eggy sweetly smiled, then no longer explained anything.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng also felt slightly helpless. He was already hooked on curiosity, but if Eggy wasn’t willing to say, he could indeed not do anything about it.

But simultaneously, he was also amazed. Exactly how powerful was Eggy? She actually knew so many things! What kind of strength did she have before she was sealed?

That question looped around Chu Feng’s heart for a long time. In reality, he did ask Eggy before, but she refused to respond. However, just by looking at Eggy’s experience, he knew she was not simple at all.

Moreover, he also knew one more thing. It was that Eggy had never made a contract with a human before, also meaning that Eggy had never come into this world.

Everything she knew should have been learned from other World Spirits, but no matter where Eggy came from, Chu Feng already confirmed that her strength before was likely very strong, at least more powerful than the mysterious man.

On the road, Chu Feng already got used to the many surprises brought by the Emperor Tomb. It had to be said that the journey in the Emperor Tomb opened up Chu Feng’s world and let him experienced a lot more things.

But after coming to this place, Chu Feng was really shocked once again because he saw a Monstrous Beast clan formed by countless huge Monstrous Beasts.

The huge adult Monstrous Beasts were dozens of meters tall, and several hundred meters long. Their enormous bodies were even larger than palaces, and were like small hills.

The weakest Monstrous Beast infants were all in the Profound realm, and the Monstrous Beasts just growing up were in the Heaven realm. As for the adult Monstrous Beasts, all of them passed the Heaven realm and were Monstrous Beasts in the Martial Lord realm.

However, the enormous and horrifying Monstrous Beast clan, currently, were already destroyed by someone. What remained were only huge dried-up corpses, their Source energy already being absorbed.

“Powerful. This Emperor Tomb is truly impressive. There is actually a terrifying Monstrous Beast clan reproducing and living in this place.” Chu Feng was endlessly shocked, and was thoroughly stunned.

It was because the Monstrous Beast clan was too powerful. Chu Feng was completely able to imagine how powerful of an existence the Monstrous Beast clan was when they still lived.

“Dammit, dammit! We were a bit too slow. So many Monstrous Beasts! So many powerful Monstrous Beasts with special bloodlines all absorbed!”

“AHHHH! I’m so angry! It must have been that black-clothed old man. It must have been him! He truly picked up a heavenly huge advantage, and such a huge benefit was seized by he himself!”

“Chu Feng, if you see that old man, you must get this madman to kill him. I will cleanly refine his Source energy or else my heart’s hatred will not be dispelled!” As Chu Feng sighed in admiration towards the Emperor Tomb arrangements, Eggy grinded her teeth. Her heart ached since so much Source energy was all taken by the black-clothed old man himself.



“Don’t worry. If we meet that black-clothed old man, I will definitely get him to spit a portion out to me.” Chu Feng calmly smiled and said as a hint of fierceness emerged into his eyes

On the road, he saw many imposing and grand palaces and high stages dazzling in gold and jade. Those originally were places that stored treasures.

But sadly, the treasures stored there flew despite having no wings. Without even thinking, Chu Feng knew who took away the treasures. It was definitely the black-clothed old man.

Of so many treasures, there was likely also cultivation resources within them. Possibly even weapons more powerful than Elite Armaments. So, naturally, Chu Feng didn’t want to miss out on them. If there was a chance, he would definitely demand some from the black-clothed old man.

“Chu Feng, look over there!” Suddenly, Eggy spoke.

After hearing Eggy’s words, Chu Feng also cast his gaze towards the front. Though the glance seemed insignificant, Chu Feng’s face instantly changed, becoming dumbfounded.

Because, at that very instant, in front of Chu Feng, it was no longer a simple underground world. At that place, there were actually white clouds, a blue sky, tall mountains, flowing water, and it was so beautiful that it was like a dream.

# Chapter 532 - Four Symbols Binding Formation

MGA: Chapter 532 - Four Symbols Binding Formation

“What is this? Is it possible that I walked out of the Emperor Tomb?!”

Chu Feng’s first thought was that he possibly walked out of the Emperor Tomb because the distant scenery didn’t match the Emperor Tomb at all. It was simply like an otherworldly paradise.

“Wait!” But very soon, Chu Feng rejected that thought because he knew he hadn’t arrived at the deepest place of the Emperor Tomb, so how would it be possible that he came out?

In addition, on the road, the experience Chu Feng gained was very abundant. So, Chu Feng already determined that it was not a real scene, and was likely an illusion.

“Wait. Don’t enter that place.” Feeling that something was wrong, Chu Feng hurriedly said.

And after hearing Chu Feng’s words, the man was very obedient and speedily stopped in mid-air, no longer continuing to fly towards the area that was like a painting.

At that instant, Chu Feng started to detailedly observe the scene in front of him. However, with his strength, he was simply unable to be sure whether it was an Illusion Formation or not.

At that place, mountain peaks were steep, white clouds floated around, and there were both waterfalls that flowed down, as well as huge red-crowned cranes that formed rows. It was absolutely beautiful, and impossible to determine whether it was real or fake.

“Look carefully. Is the scene in front of your eyes an Illusion Formation?!” In that situation, Chu Feng could only ask the mysterious man.

“No matter what it is in front, I can kill all!” However, to Chu Feng’s question, the mysterious man did not respond directly. Instead, he coldly snorted, leaped, and flew into the scenery.

“Crap! His mind is muddled and he is simply unable to thoroughly understand the meaning in my words!” At that instant, Chu Feng’s face changed. He originally wanted the mysterious man to use his Spirit power to check it out. After all, he was a Gold-cloak World Spiritist, and with his strength, he should be able to determine whether it was an Illusion Formation or not, but he didn’t expect that the situation would be like this.

“Don’t worry. No matter if it’s an Illusion Formation or not, one must be in it in order to break it. With this madman’s methods, he should be able to destroy it.”

“Besides, the road in front is the only road. If you don’t break it, there is no way to continue forward.” Eggy reminded.

“Mm. As things are right now, it can only be done like so.” It wasn’t that Chu Feng didn’t understand the meaning behind it, but as he learned of the Emperor Tomb’s terror, he became more cautious. However, he could do nothing about the scene in front of his eyes, and could only rely on the madman attacking on his own.

“My Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven can burn all things in this world!”

Suddenly, the mysterious man howled longly, and instantly, the entire world at that place trembled, then quickly after, the flames in his eyes scuttled and the places he looked at were immediately overwhelmed by flames and became oceans of fire. No matter if it was the sky or ground, all of it started to be engulfed by the fierce, intense flames.

Not to mention the green mountains and grasses, the rivers and waterfalls, even the vast white clouds in the sky were unable to endure the scorching

heat and if they weren't melted on scene, they were immediately evaporated.

“Who are you? You dare to come here to release such insolence?!”

But suddenly, a deafening and furious roar suddenly resounded. After that voice rang out, Chu Feng's face couldn't help but change because he felt that the voice was very familiar.

\*boom\* Just at that time, an explosion suddenly resounded and a horrifying oppressing feeling came from behind. Turning his head to look, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that a huge white-coloured tiger's claw was approaching him. That appearance was actually the exact same as his White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

However, the tiger's claw was vivid and lifelike. Other than emitting faint radiance, it was simply no different from the real White Tiger.

“Hmph.” Facing the attack that came suddenly, the mysterious man coldly snorted, then quickly after, he leaped, and dodged the horrifying White Tiger huge claw.

“Heavens! This is?!” In the instant he dodged it, Chu Feng's pupils suddenly shrunk because he astonishedly discovered that in the distant sky, there was actually an enormous object.

It was the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique. However, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique was several times more powerful than when Chu Feng saw it at first. The aura it emanated was also several times more horrifying, and it could be said to be not inferior to the mysterious man's.

“White Tiger, you are unable to defeat this person alone. It's better to let us help you out.”

Just at that time, another deafening roar rang out. Following that, the flames distant in the sky suddenly split, and were finally extinguished.

And after the flames were extinguished, another enormous thing appeared. It was a black-coloured huge turtle, but a sinister big snake coiled on its body. Covering up and down it was a dazzling shield of light. It was the Black Tortoise Armor Technique, without a doubt.

“I, the Dragon King, have come as well!” Quickly after, a thick azure dragon appeared in the sky. Its body was surrounded by mist, giving off the overbearing airs of a king.

“You dare to intrude into the Four Symbols Binding Formation? You are truly looking to die.” Suddenly, an ear-piercing cry rang out. A red-coloured beautiful huge bird also appeared, flying over with the azure dragon.

Although Chu Feng did not truly see those two before, looking at their shapes, Chu Feng knew that they were definitely the two Secret Skills: the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique and the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

“Four Symbols Binding Formation?! This is indeed an Illusion Formation. They are not true and are all fake.” At that instant, Eggy reminded.

“It’s fake? Then what should I do?” Chu Feng lightly frowned. Although he clearly knew it was fake, the auras of the four huge beasts weren’t fake. So, he didn’t dare to be sure whether the mysterious man would be able to defeat the four huge beasts.

“I am the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven! I can burn all things in this world! Who can stop me?!”

However, just as Chu Feng worried, the mysterious man suddenly yelled explosively. At that instant, the scar of flames on his forehead actually started to wiggle. Quickly after, it started to enlarge and change, and actually like vines, crawled all over his body.

The most important thing was that the scars were actually not the colour of skin. They were fiery red, as if burnt red by a piece of iron.

So, when scars like those covered the man's entire body, he seemed very sinister and scary, but didn't lose any overbearingness.

\*wuaoo~~~~~\*

Seeming to have felt the mysterious man's change, the four huge beasts longly roared facing the sky, and with their unique Secret Skill might, from all sides, they surrounded and attacked the man.

“Those who dare to stop me, die!”

However, facing the horrifying might of the four huge beasts, not only was the man not afraid, he even furiously shouted.

And after his furious shout rang out, the world swayed, and at the same time, from his body, boundless raging flames also started to surge out.

The flames were not simple flames. There was a difference in essence than the flames he was using before because not only did the flames make sounds, they even had shape, and was simply like a huge beast of flames.

If it was said that the huge beasts transformed from the four Secret Skills were as big as small hills, then the enormous beast that was gradually being transformed into by intense flames would be a huge mountain peak that touched the sky. In terms of volume, it already suppressed the four huge beasts completely.

\*roar~~~~~\*

Moreover, in terms of power, the huge beast of flames was clearly stronger than the four Secret Skills. In only an instant, it engulfed the four of them, and even started to chew.

And at that time, Chu Feng was able to distinctly hear the four peerlessly powerful Secret Skills actually starting to make heart-tearing and lung-splitting cries of misery.

# Chapter 533 - Emperor Might Appearing for an Instant

MGA: Chapter 533 - Emperor Might Appearing for an Instant

With the huge beast of flames chewing, the cries of the four Secret Skills also became fainter and fainter, and finally disappeared.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng could clearly see that world's scenery starting to change. Like a picture scroll, it started to twist and spin.

“So powerful.” Chu Feng slightly widened his mouth and his gaze glittered, because once again, he saw the strong strength of the mysterious man. With absolute power, he actually broke such a powerful Illusion Formation.

When the world around them returned to normal and when the huge beast of flames returned to the mysterious man's body again, Chu Feng was also able to clearly see everything around him.

At that instant, Chu Feng's gaze was attracted to the front at first. Even Chu Feng's gaze started to endlessly flicker, and the shock on his face became extremely strong.

Because, in front of him, deep in the Emperor Tomb, there was an incomparably huge door. That door had ten thousand feet of height, and had a thousand feet of width. It was truly incomparably huge, as if it was erected from the earth to the heaven.

That door was golden-coloured, and gave off radiance even more dazzling than gold. However, the material it was made out of was clearly not simply just gold because it even gave off a feeling of indestructibility, and even a holy uninvadable feeling.

Involuntarily, Chu Feng was deeply attracted by the huge door. Although he only saw the surface, it was as if Chu Feng saw everything inside.

It was a world. A completely different world from what Chu Feng saw, and it was a world that all living beings wanted to step into.

At that instant, a thought was born into Chu Feng's heart, and it was to open that door. He wanted to enter that world. He had to enter that world.

“Brat, don't look at that door!” But just at that time, an aged voice came from below Chu Feng, cutting off his thoughts.

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng's couldn't help but be taken aback and hurriedly cast his gaze downwards. Although it was a simple action, joy instantly appeared on Chu Feng's face.

Because, below Chu Feng, on the surface, there was a vast formation with radiance shooting in all directions. On the four sides of the vast formation, the picture of a huge beast was carved there.

And those four huge beasts were the original shapes of the four Secret Skill's bodies. In between the four Secret Skills, there were even layers of chains, forming the cage-like Sealing Formation.

The most important thing was that in the center of the vast formation, there was an old man. He wore black clothing, and had a torch-like gaze. He was exactly the mysterious black-clothed old man.

“Haha, so it's him! He's been locked up there, and

this

is the original form of the Four Symbols Binding Formation.”

“I now know why the madman was able to easily break the Four Symbols Binding Formation. It's because a large portion of its power was already used to imprison this black-clothed old man, that's why he was able to easily destroy it.” At that instant, before letting Chu Feng speak, Eggy lively cheered while being incomparably elated.



“Hoh, truly, ‘cannot be found when searched to the ends of the world, but obtained without any effort’.” And similarly, Chu Feng was also incomparably elated because on the old man’s body, there were many treasures from the Emperor Tomb, and currently, he was also locked up at that place. It was simply the heavens helping Chu Feng.

But although he was joyful in his heart, Chu Feng did not immediately make his move on the black-clothed old man, and put on an appearance of confusion, then asked, “Senior, why can’t I look at this door?”

“Ahh, in the end, for a brat who grows up in such a desolate place, no matter how much more extraordinary your talent is, you are still dull.”

“Whatever, let me give you some pointers. This place is an Emperor Tomb, and that door is an Emperor Door.”

“The Emperor Door was personally made by a Martial Emperor expert. Not only is it something that is indestructible, it also has a charm that bewitches one’s heart.”

“If you stare at the Emperor Door for a long period of time, you will be bewitched by the Emperor Door’s illusion, and will involuntarily go attack the Emperor Door, as you want to enter it.”

“But how can the Emperor Door be easy to open? By attacking the Emperor Door, you will only receive the rebound of the Emperor Might, and ultimately, you are looking for your own destruction.” The black-clothed old man reminded.

“Oh?” After hearing his words, Chu Feng lightly frowned, then asked Eggy, “Eggy, is the words he said true? Is the Emperor Door truly that powerful?”

“Honestly speaking, I’m not too clear on things like these. I only know that an Emperor Tomb is dangerous, but to the specific obstructions within, I don’t know much about it. After all, it is also the first time that I came to this world, so it can be said that it’s the first time I entered this so-called Emperor Tomb.” Eggy’s pouted, and naughtily shook her head.

“It is better to believe it is than to not. As long as the treasures on this black-clothed old man can be obtained, this journey has already been plentiful and there is no need to go towards that Emperor Door.”

Chu Feng looked back at the Emperor Door dazzling in golden radiance. However, he didn't feel any danger coming from the inside of the Emperor Tomb. Rather, he still felt that behind the Emperor Tomb, there was an extreme beautiful world, making him to want to open it.

But the more it was like that, the more Chu Feng was alert in his heart. He increasingly felt that the black-clothed old man's words was correct, that the Emperor Door wasn't simple and would absorb one's mind, and confuse them.

“Don't look at that door, it's dangerous!” So, Chu Feng hurriedly reminded the mysterious man, deeply afraid he would be caught by the Emperor Door's enticement.

However, what Chu Feng did not think of was that to his reminder, it was as if the mysterious man couldn't hear it, and instead, leaped, quickly flying towards the Emperor Door.

“Crap, this is bad!” At that instant, Chu Feng was frightened because the man was clearly caught by the Emperor Door's allure, and currently, he was deaf to Chu Feng's urges.

“Stop! Quickly stop! It is dangerous in front of you, and if you go there like this, you will send your life to the grave!” Seeing the rapidly expanding Emperor Door, Chu Feng's voice got louder and louder, but it was useless and it simply did not stop the mysterious man.

\*hmm\* However, just as Chu Feng and the mysterious man were a hundred thousand meters away from the Emperor Door, a burst of undulation suddenly came from inside.

The undulation was originally formless, but people were able to clearly feel it, as if it could overturn rivers and oceans and destroy everything. It had the ability to ruin the heaven and earth.

“Emperor Might? It is possible that this is Emperor Might?” At that instant, Chu Feng’s face changed greatly because he truly felt the threat of death. In front of the formless aura, no matter who, they could not resist against it.

\*hmm\* However, what Chu Feng did not expect was that the formless aura didn’t directly engulf them, but when it was ten thousand meters away from them, it stopped, didn’t continue forward, and also started to change.

The formless aura started to have form, and in the areas covered by the aura, a blue sky actually appeared. White clouds appeared. Rivers and the earth appeared. In only a blink, the vast underground world became a beautiful scene once again.

Not only that. The aura was actually still changing, and at the end, within the scenery, golden radiance was actually extended outwards. The golden radiance rapidly enlarged, and at the end, became humanoid.

His head touched the blue sky, and his feet stepped on the earth. Although golden radiance shot everywhere from his body and his face was unable to be seen clearly, when a figure such as that appeared in front of one’s face, no matter who, they would not dare to doubt how strong he was.

# Chapter 534 - This Is An Emperor Armament

MGA: Chapter 534 - This Is An Emperor Armament

When a figure so large, it could touch the sky while standing on the ground, appeared in front of someone, no matter who it was, they would be unnerved by the powerful atmosphere.

Chu Feng was able to clearly feel, at that moment, that it wasn't a consciousness, but more like a body of energy. To be more precise, it was likely an Emperor Might.

And the so-called Emperor Might was just the might of a Martial Emperor.

But even though it was only might, the might that was left behind by a Martial Emperor was the most powerful existence Chu Feng had seen before. It was countless times more powerful than the mysterious man, and it could be said that the two could not even be discussed together.

“So this is the strength of a Martial Emperor? It is only might, yet it can transform, shape, never be extinguished, and deter all things?!” Chu Feng was both frightened and terrified, and endlessly shocked as well.

It was because he truly felt his own tininess. He was so minuscule that he was like a speck of dust. In front of the Emperor Might, he was so insignificant.

“No. Even consciousnesses will die out, let alone Emperor Might. The reason it can survive for ten thousand years is definitely related to that Emperor Door. That Emperor Door is a treasure. A piece of true treasure, and if I'm not mistaken, that door is very possibly an Emperor Armament.”

“Its Emperor Might is being attached to that Emperor Door, so that’s why it isn’t gone and has survived for such a long time. To be more precise, Emperor Armament and Emperor Might coexist. The reason why Emperor Armaments are powerful is not only because it is made by a Martial Emperor, but also because it contains power unique to Martial Emperors.” Eggy explained.

Although it was also Eggy’s first time seeing Emperor Might and the Emperor Door, her experience was a lot more abundant than Chu Feng’s, so she knew a lot more than Chu Feng as well.

Even though she didn’t have Spirit power, with her naked eye, she could find out some facts by analyzation.

“Emperor Armament?!” After hearing Eggy’s words, Chu Feng’s expression instantly changed greatly and shock emerged into his eyes.

Ever since getting the Mastered Elite Armament, the Asura Ghost Axe, Chu Feng had asked Eggy many times what weapons in the world were more powerful than Elite Armaments.

And with his many times of pestering, Eggy finally told Chu Feng some knowledge regarding armaments.

Normal armaments were created by iron. Ordinary people could create them.

Slightly better armaments were created with special materials, but regardless of what materials were to be used to create them, in front of a powerful cultivator, the armaments would not be able to even take a single attack.

So, when a cultivator’s cultivation reaches a certain level, armaments created by special materials already become of not great use. Only armaments created by the concentration of a peak expert’s unique power could display powerful might.

The armaments created by the power of Martial Lords are called Elite Armaments. The armaments created by the power of Martial Kings are called King Armaments. As for the armaments created by the power of Martial Emperors, they are called Emperor Armaments.

In the continent of the Nine Provinces, Elite Armaments were already treasures. There were simply no King Armaments, and as for Emperor Armaments, it was likely that even in the Eastern Sea Region, no one owned any.

But in front his eyes, an Emperor Armament actually appeared, and it was under the Azure Province's surface in the continent of the Nine Provinces. At that instant, it was in front of his eyes. Naturally, that made Chu Feng endlessly shocked, and he felt disbelief.

Even though he clearly knew it was dangerous, he couldn't help casting his gaze back at it, and examined it anew.

And when he looked back at the golden, bright Emperor Door, Chu Feng discovered that the feeling the door gave him was strange as usual, but it was indeed, inestimably powerful.

It had to be said that if the Emperor Door was truly an armament, it would definitely be an armament that had plenty of killing power, and could even kill all living matter.

So, Chu Feng believed it. He believed Eggy's analysis, and that the Emperor Tomb was very possibly not an ordinary formation and obstruction, but an Emperor Armament from the legends.

In front of the Emperor Armament, Chu Feng had great desires of wanting to grasp it within his hand, for it to be used by him.

But regretfully, even if it was him, he knew that the current him simply didn't have any qualifications to grasp the Emperor Armament.

“My Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven can burn all things! Those who block me, die!” Suddenly, the mysterious man suddenly explosively

yelled.

Quickly after, the fiery-red scars on his body flashed once again, boundless flames burst out from his body, became a fierce huge beast of flames, and attacked the Emperor Armament that was erected in between the heaven and earth.

“No!” Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly yelled loudly to stop, deeply afraid that the mysterious man would anger the Emperor Might.

But he could do nothing as the mysterious man was already thoroughly caught by the Emperor Door’s enticement. He simply didn’t hear Chu Feng’s words, and was urging the flames with his full force, attacking the Emperor Might.

However, just as the huge beast of flames neared the Emperor Might, the figure that touched the sky extended its big hand that surged with golden radiance, and abruptly grabbed, holding the huge beast of flames in its palm.

With a bang, the flames shot everywhere, but quickly after, completely disappeared. The mysterious man’s Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven, which could burn everything, was actually extinguished just like that.

“Ahh!”

When the huge beast of flames exploded from being crushed, the mysterious man’s face changed and a mouthful of blood was sprayed out, as he clearly received the rebound.

At the same time, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that the golden Spirit Formation surrounding him started to become faint, and in a blink, it completely disappeared.

“So strong.” At that instant, Chu Feng couldn’t help gasping deeply. He knew that the Emperor Might was strong, but he never would have thought that with only a single strike, the Emperor Might was able to cause the mysterious man to receive heavy injuries.

“I will kill you!” However, the mysterious man seemed to have not understood the situation in front of him clearly. Not only did he not retreat, he even attacked the Emperor Might again.

“Chu Feng, quickly retreat! Don’t get dragged down by this madman!” Seeing that, Eggy hurriedly reminded.

“Truly damn it.” And in that situation, Chu Feng could also do nothing. He could only turn around, and escape in the direction he came from.

The mysterious man already lost control completely, and the Emperor Might was also very powerful, so if the mysterious man thoroughly angered the Emperor Might, not only would the mysterious man die, Chu Feng would clearly be affected as well.

\*hmm\*

However, this time, the Emperor Might did not resist. It stood where it was, and emitted a formless ripple from its body.

\*boom\*

When the ripple intertwined with the mysterious man’s attack, within the deafening explosion, it dissolved the mysterious man’s attack.

“Your strength is too weak. Leave. Go back to where you came from. You want to take relics? You are not worthy!” Suddenly, a voice filled with Emperor Might came from inside the Emperor Door.

When that voice rang out, the heaven and earth did not tremble, but it was enough to shake one’s heart, straight into their soul. Chu Feng could even feel the voice’s ability to kill him, to destroy his consciousness, and to make him disappear like dust and smoke dissipating.

However, the voice only reminded, and did not have killing intent. Moreover, after that voice rang out, the beautiful scenery and the Emperor Might erected in between the heaven and the earth actually started to shrink, and ultimately, returned to the Emperor Door.



That area returned to its former tranquility as well.

# Chapter 535 - Huangfu Haoyue

MGA: Chapter 535 - Huangfu Haoyue

“Huu.”

“So close.”

Seeing that everything returned to its starting state, Chu Feng couldn't help but breathe a sigh of relief because the master of the Emperor Tomb didn't seem to be a bloodthirsty person. He didn't choose to kill Chu Feng and the others, and rather, decided to give them a path of living.

And as long as he recalled the horrifying scene just now, Chu Feng had that feeling of “surviving after a calamity”. If a single Emperor Might was already so powerful, how terrifying would a Martial Emperor be?

Chu Feng was truly unable to imagine how terrifying a Martial Emperor's true strength would be. Perhaps a part of the world would be destroyed by him.

At that instant, Chu Feng finally understood the danger of the Emperor Tomb. Even with the mysterious man opening the path he was unable to pass through, so there was no need to mention himself. It had to be said that the treasures within the Emperor Tomb were really not so easily gained.

“Ahh~~~~~”

However, just as Chu Feng felt that the danger was already gone, the mysterious man hugged his head with his hands, faced up, and roared. Also, as he roared, he loudly said, “Where am I from? Where am I from? Where am I from?!”

His voice was extremely loud. It was like ten thousand simultaneous claps of thunder, rumbling and exploding. At the same time, the red-coloured

scars all over his body became extremely bright.

But his tone was filled with fear, and very clearly, he was frightened. He was frightened by the Emperor Might, and frightened to the point he could not control his own emotions.

“Ahh~~~~~”

“Where am I from? Where am I from?!”

The mysterious man’s howl became louder and louder, and it also became more and more fearful. He even started to hammer his own head, tear his own hair, and no matter how Chu Feng yelled, he did not pay attention.

“This is not good.”

The mysterious man’s change caused Chu Feng to feel uneasiness because he felt that the mysterious man really seemed to have went insane, as if he was possessed. If that continued, he would die.

“You are from the Eastern Sea Region, your name is Huangfu Haoyue, and you are the Burning Heaven Church’s forty-second Holy Son!”

But just as Chu Feng was out of methods and didn’t know what to do, the black-clothed old man imprisoned in the Four Symbols Binding Formation suddenly spoke.

And after hearing the black-clothed old man’s words, the mysterious man’s expression actually changed, then he muttered to himself, “Eastern Sea Region? Huangfu Haoyue? Burning Heaven Church? Forty-second Holy Son?”

At that very instant, not only did the mysterious man’s face change, in only an instant, over a hundred expressions appeared. No one knew what he was thinking about.

\*swish\*

Suddenly, the mysterious man leaped, and flew towards the direction that they came from. However, he did not stop in front of Chu Feng again.

His speed was really too fast. Chu Feng only felt a burst of strong wind brushing past him, and as he watched, the man disappeared in the distance.

“Dammit!” Seeing that, Chu Feng couldn’t help loudly cursing. The mysterious man actually abandoned himself and ran off alone.

If he could find him in the future, then it was fine; but if he could not, that meant he lost a Martial King henchman! At present, he went back to being alone.

His dream of bringing a Martial King henchman into the Eastern Sea Region was clearly going to be shattered like that.

However, Chu Feng was not too dispirited because of that. Instead, a hint of hidden joy emerged into his eyes, then he moved, and flew up to the Four Symbols Binding Formation that the black-clothed old man was in.

Because, just now, since the old man knew the man’s name and place of origin, clearly, he recognized the mysterious man.

And since the black-clothed old man knew the mysterious man, would he know his own father as well, and know his background? No matter if he knew or not, Chu Feng had to ask once.

At that instant, he originally wanted to descent, but he discovered that there was a layer of pressure around the Four Symbols Binding Formation, and with his strength, he was simply unable to lower himself to the deeper parts.

So, he could only stay in the air and ask the black-clothed old man, “Senior, you recognize that man?!”

“Of course I recognize him. The only Holy Son in the history of the Burning Heaven Church who surpassed the Pope before inheriting the position of Pope! Huangfu Haoyue! How can I not recognize him?”

“However, brat, how did you get yourself related to him? Looking at his appearance, his mind seems to be muddled, but before, he seemed to listen to your words quite closely. What exactly is your relationship?” The black-clothed old man smiled and asked.

But at the same time, his pair of old fox-like eyes were tightly staring at Chu Feng, seemingly trying to see through Chu Feng’s upcoming lie.

Chu Feng was not close to the old man, so naturally he wouldn’t tell him the relationship between him and the mysterious man. So, he feigned a bitter smile, “To be honest, before I met him, I truly didn’t know he was that powerful because he of that time didn’t have any martial cultivation aura, and was a normal person.”

“I noticed he was being beaten up by people on the street, and seeing that he was pitiful, I gave him some money and food. But who would have thought he chose to only eat the food and not take the money. Furthermore, he kept on following me.”

“I was afraid he would be bullied by others again, so I kept him next to me. That continued until one day, I met a strong enemy and almost lost my life, but in the moment where everything was hanging by a thread, he suddenly faced the sky and roared, instantly killing my enemy.”

“However, his cultivation was fully shown and it was as though they were two different people. He had overwhelming strength, something that I never seen before”

“Seeing that he was so strong, I wanted to borrow his power to open this Emperor Tomb, but I don’t understand his identity at all. Senior, I wonder if you can reveal a bit more to me?”

“Hehe, you brat, your luck is truly not bad, but sadly, you cannot pass that Emperor Door. As for the other treasures outside of the Emperor Door, they have all been taken into my pocket. This journey of yours? Hehe, it is truly the so-called ‘drawing water with a bamboo basket, gaining nothing’ and ‘losing on two levels’.” The black-clothed old man did not reply to Chu Feng’s question, and smugly smiled, seeming to be teasing Chu Feng.

“Senior, if you feel it is inconvenient, it doesn’t matter if you don’t say it. In the future, when I go to the Eastern Sea Region, I will naturally know everything.”

“As for truly earning nothing by coming to this place, that may not be so.” Seeing that, Chu Feng no longer asked deeper and cast his gaze towards the area in front of the Four Symbols Binding Formation.

At that place, there was a pond. The water in the pond glittered with a faint lustre, and was very strange and special.

After Chu Feng came above the pond, without saying anything, he leaped, and rushed in. Quickly after, he opened his mouth and actually started to madly swallow the pond water.

“Brat, what are you doing? You don’t want your life?!”

“I only didn’t tell you things about that Huangfu Haoyue. You don’t need to take that so hard!”

“Stop drinking, quickly come up! I’ll tell you okay?”

Seeing Chu Feng’s action, the black-clothed old man’s face changed greatly and was not lightly frightened because it was not ordinary water within the pond, but Spirit Formation Essence that was viewed as a taboo material.

Spirit Formation Essence contained berserk power, and if one touched it, it would cause some damage to their body. But if it was directly consumed, that was simply suicidal.

# Chapter 536 - History of the Sea Region

MGA: Chapter 536 - History of the Sea Region

However, Chu Feng did not pay attention to the black-clothed old man's words. He swallowed the Spirit Formation Essence in large mouthfuls and not only did he not have the slightest bit of a painful expression, instead, on his face, he even wore an expression of excitement.

As if the Spirit Formation Essence wasn't even any poison, but the most delicious food in the world.

The most important thing was as the pond was consumed by Chu Feng bit by bit, his aura actually started to climb, and when the pond was one third consumed by Chu Feng, he broke through. From the 1st level of the Heaven realm, he entered the 2nd level of the Heaven realm.

Although Chu Feng did not make any more breakthroughs after that, he alone devoured all of the large pond's Spirit Formation Essence, and did not leave even a single drop behind.

“Can it be that this brat is a monster?”

Personally seeing everything, the expression on the black-clothed old man's face was truly as wonderful as it could get.

Although he had checked out Chu Feng's body and discovered that there was special power surging within his blood, thus knowing his talent was extraordinary as he had a special body, and would definitely have quite some achievements in the future, he never would have thought that Chu Feng would be so abnormal and actually madly consumed the Spirit Formation Essence.

Spirit Formation Essence was an extremely horrifying thing! Normal people, if they took just a single drop, would die. Even people with high cultivation would be heavily injured, and a root of diseases would possibly be left behind, affecting their future development.

But Chu Feng, he actually fully consumed an entire pond of Spirit Formation Essence! How could the black-clothed old man not be shocked?

If he didn't personally see it, he would have absolutely not believed that someone in the world could actually consume Spirit Formation Essence, and moreover, even cause cultivation to rise greatly because of that. It also meant that Chu Feng truly refined the Spirit Formation Essence, and did something that normal people could not do.

Recalling when he first saw Chu Feng, at his cultivation, then thinking he actually broke through in such a short period of time, he became aware of something inconceivable.

It was that Chu Feng's potential was simply a lot more terrifying than he expected.

"I'm almost there. After refining all of the Spirit Formation Essence I saw when I came here, I should be able to break into the 3rd level of the Heaven realm." Chu Feng wiped his mouth, and after taking in all the Spirit Formation Essence on the edges of his mouth, he smiled rather satisfiedly.

"Brat, come over. Quickly come over, I have something I want to discuss with you." Suddenly, the black-clothed old man yelled loudly. On his aged face, excitement was filled.

"Senior, what's the matter? Are you going to tell me things about that man?" Chu Feng lightly smiled and walked over, but he could only stand outside of the Four Symbols Binding Formation.

"Hehe, it is merely things about Huangfu Haoyue. If you want to know, naturally, I can tell you."



“But before that, I need to ask you a question. Which power do you think is the strongest in the Eastern Sea Region?” The black-clothed old man smiling asked.

“To be honest, although I haven’t went to the Eastern Sea Region, I have heard that the strongest power in the Eastern Sea Region is the Immortal Execution Archipelago.”

“Ha! The Immortal Execution Archipelago, worthy of being the strongest power in the Eastern Sea Region?” However, just as Chu Feng finished speaking, the black-clothed old man spat out a large piece of phlegm with a face full of disdain.

“Senior, could it be that the Immortal Execution Archipelago isn’t the strongest power in the Eastern Sea Region?” Chu Feng curiously asked.

“Whatever, since it is destiny that brought us together, and I also know that sooner or later, you will go to the Eastern Sea Region, I’ll provide you with some knowledge about the Eastern Sea Region.”

“The strongest power in the Eastern Sea Region has never been any dog butt Immortal Execution Archipelago. Not before, not now. It’s my Crippling Night Demon Sect!” The black-clothed old man pleasedly said.

“Crippling Night Demon Sect?!” Chu Feng’s complexion changed. It was the first time he had heard of that name.

“That’s right. Under the command of my previous leaders, my Crippling Night Demon Sect has been titled as overlord of the Eastern Sea Region for countless years. Who could defeat us?!”

“However, because the most recent sect head died from Demonic Art cultivation failure, my Crippling Night Demon Sect split into pieces and endless internal conflicts arose.”

“But despite all of that happening, my Crippling Night Demon Sect is still the strongest power in the Eastern Sea Region. As long as my Crippling

Night Demon Sect gathers together, it is still the overlord of the Eastern Sea Region.”

“And other than my Crippling Night Demon Sect, there’s also another power, and that’s the Burning Heaven Church Huangfu Haoyue belongs in.”

“This Burning Heaven Church is relatively low-profile, but it also has the ambition to name themselves as the overlord of the world. However, their ambitions were no longer in the Eastern Sea Region, so very rarely did they fight for fame and benefits. Thus, they also hadn’t have much conflicts with my Crippling Night Demon Sect.”

“But the Burning Heaven Church’s strength absolutely does not allow for any underestimation. Although they have very few members, they are the elites within elites.”

“Their disciple selection process is extremely harsh, as they have a screening system of choosing one person within ten thousand, and those ten thousand people are even people with extremely good aptitude.”

“From that, it can be seen how harsh the Burning Heaven Church chooses its members.”

“However, that did indeed form the legend, which says that the Burning Heaven Church is made out of only geniuses. Especially the historical Holy Sons and Holy Daughters. They were the strongest people within the Eastern Sea Region’s young generation.”

“That brat Huangfu Haoyue particularly. He can be said to be a genius whose name shocked the Eastern Sea Region, and had strength that surpassed the Pope before even inheriting the position of Pope.”

“Moreover, I heard a secret relating to Huangfu Haoyue.” Suddenly, the black-clothed old man’s tone became low and deep.

“What secret?” Chu Feng asked quickly.

“The Burning Heaven Church had high ambition, yet didn’t start conflicts against the world. The reason why I said it was inferior to my Crippling Night Demon Sect is because his Burning Heaven Church’s past Popes were indeed inferior to my sect’s head.”

“Even if the Burning Heaven Church’s Pope was stronger than my sect’s young head at their younger times, since my sect’s Demonic Arts needs time to mature, so when both of them succeed their grand positions, my sect’s heads were always superior, and they always got more and more powerful.”

“However, Huangfu Haoyue was an abnormality. I heard my sect’s head say one thing to me before. It was that Huangfu Haoyue looked for him for a spar.”

“My sect’s head was the publicly recognized number one expert in the Eastern Sea Region, and even though Huangfu Haoyue’s development was flourishing, after all, he was in the young generation, so naturally, my sect’s head did not put him in his eyes. He originally wanted to give him some lessons so he wouldn’t be so wild.”

“But he could do nothing as with one fight, my sect’s head fought against Huangfu Haoyue for three days and three nights. At the end, the two of them were actually unable to determine the outcome, and ended up with a tie.”

“At that time, the age of my sect’s head neared a hundred, and he was at the period where the Demonic Arts were at their strongest.”

“Yet, Huangfu Haoyue just passed thirty years. So, my sect’s head said to me, that in a few more years, Huangfu Haoyue would definitely be able to defeat him.” Speaking to that point, a hint of sorrow emerged onto the black-clothed old man’s face.

Listening to that point, Chu Feng’s expression changed and he hurriedly asked, “Senior, from what you’ve said, doesn’t that mean Huangfu Haoyue is one of the strongest people in the Eastern Sea Region, and no one can threaten him?”

# Chapter 537 - Holy Land of Martialism

MGA: Chapter 537 - Holy Land of Martialism

“Accordingly, it should be like that. Even my sect’s head was unable to defeat him, so who could have threatened him?”

“On that topic, it was exactly because of Huangfu Haoyue’s challenge that caused my sect’s head to have a knot in his heart and impatiently wanted to become stronger. Because of that, he went astray and died.” The black-clothed old man sighed again. It could be seen that he felt very sorrowful to his sect head’s death.

Hearing that, Chu Feng felt a lot of suspicion. Since Huangfu Haoyue was already so strong, then where did he meet his own father?

Was it possible that his own father was an expert hidden from the world, and even the black-clothed old man didn’t know of his father’s existence?

“Senior, then do you know why this Huangfu Haoyue turned into his current state?!” Chu Feng closely asked while feigning confusion. He was “following the vines to obtain the melon”, and wanted to gain more clues regarding his father from that.

“Hoho, to be honest, I don’t know the reason why he turned into his current state. In reality, I feel very amazed to have seen him again.” The black-clothed old man smiled while shaking his head.

“Senior, why so?” Chu Feng asked with face of puzzledness.

“Because, seventeen years ago, the entire Burning Heaven Church moved, and left the Eastern Sea Region.” The black-clothed old man said.

Hearing that, Chu Feng rejoiced in his heart because he already roughly thought of some things. Quickly afterwards, he asked, “Senior, do you know where they went?”

“The Holy Land of Martialism.” The black-clothed old man said.

“Holy Land of Martialism! Where is that?” Chu Feng curiously asked, but in his heart, he more or less had an answer.

“The Holy Land of Martialism can be said to be the center of this world, but rather than saying it’s the center of this world, it’s better to say it’s a completely different world.”

“Because, at that place, no matter if it’s spiritual energy, Origin power, Profound realm, Heaven power, battle power, all of it is extremely strong, and is absolutely incomparable by this land here.”

“At that place, a group of extremely strong characters and things, beasts and monsters, have been raised. At the same time, it also contains countless treasures, as well as oddities of this world.”

“The Holy Land of Martialism can be said to be the dream of all martial cultivators. However, if they want to enter the Holy Land of Martialism, they have to pass the heaven’s test.”

“And this test is called the Heavenly Road.”

“Heavenly Road?!”

“That’s right. The Heavenly Road. It’s said that for those who enter the Holy Land of Martialism, their cultivation can reach the heavens in one step. So, the road to the Holy Land of Martialism is called the Heavenly Road.”

“The Heavenly Road only appears once every year. Those who have ambition can enter, but for those who enter the Heavenly Road, their fates cannot be predicted.”

“Some people say that the Heavenly Road is a checkpoint and those, whose aptitude qualify, can pass.”

“There are also some people who say that the Heavenly Road is a reincarnation cycle. Entering the Heavenly Road is equal to rebirth. Their memories get washed away, and are reborn later in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“There are also some people who say that inside the Heavenly Road, there are countless dangers and only those with powerful strength can pass through. The weak ones will all die within.”

“But no matter which saying is correct, presently, of those who stepped into the Heavenly Road, not a single has returned.”

“Thus, two sayings have been passed down.”

“The first was that the so-called test of the Heavenly Road simply does not exist. Everyone who step in can enter the Holy Land of Martialism, but they cannot return.”

“The other saying is that the Holy Land of Martialism simply does not exist, and that the Heavenly Road is a tomb. Everyone who enter it do not return, and will all die.”

“Those two sayings encouraged some people, and also deterred some people. The Burning Heaven Church is a power that believes in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“They firmly believed that as long as talent reached a certain degree, they would be able to enter the Holy Land of Martialism. So, their hearts embraced ambition, but not towards the Eastern Sea Region. Their ambition was directed at the Holy Land of Martialism. So, when they felt that the time was ripe, they brought the entire church and aimed to move into the Holy Land of Martialism, and entered the Heavenly Road.”

“And exactly because of the departure of the Burning Heaven Church and the fragmentation of my Crippling Night Demon Sect, the people in the

Eastern Sea Region thought that the Immortal Execution Archipelago became the strongest power in the Eastern Sea Region.”

“However, right now, something unexpected seemed to have happened.” Suddenly, the black-clothed old man smiled.

“Senior, you are talking about Huangfu Haoyue?!” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. Back then, when the Burning Heaven Church entered the Heavenly Road, I did go watch them and personally saw Huangfu Haoyue and the others enter, and also personally saw the Heavenly Road close.”

“At present, Huangfu Haoyue has actually reappeared in this land, which means that something must have happened. To be honest, I truly hope that his mind can be restored because as long as it is, the mystery of the Heavenly Road and the Holy Land of Martialism can be unraveled.”

“Whether the Holy Land of Martialism exists or not, and what does the inside of the Heavenly Road look like, I’m sure that they are something that everyone in the Eastern Sea Region want to know.” The black-clothed old man lightly smiled, then his gaze suddenly flashed, seeming to have thought of something, and said, “That’s right. If you want to know more about Huangfu Haoyue, you

can

look for a person.”

“Who?”

“Qiushui Fuyan!”

“Qiushui Fuyan?”

“That’s right. Qiushui Fuyan was the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church of back then. She was originally Huangfu Haoyue’s fiancée.”

“The two of them had a very close relationship, but in the past, when the Burning Heaven Church entered the Heavenly Road, I discover a small detail, and it was that I couldn’t see the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church, Qiushui Fuyan.”

“Later on, with my inquiry and searching, I finally learnt that Qiushui Fuyan went to a place called the Lovers Terrace. However, because of her special status, I did not go find her.” The black-clothed old man said.

“Lovers Terrace? Is that also in the Eastern Sea Region?” Chu Feng asked, because he was definitely going to go there.

After all, he knew that when Huangfu Haoyue first came to the continent of the Nine Provinces, he had a clear mind, or else he wouldn’t have entrusted him to Chu Yuan.

And no matter if he returned from the Heavenly Road or the Holy Land of Martialism, since his relationship with Qiushui Fuyan was that special, it was likely that he went to visit her.

If he did visit her, then he should have told her about some things. Although it was only a possibility, at least he had some hope.

In reality, hearing the black-clothed old man talk about those things, and associating it with the words of insanity Huangfu Haoyue talked about before, Chu Feng already roughly guessed some things.

It was that his family, or at least his father, was definitely not located in the Eastern Sea Region, and if he was not located on the Heavenly Road as well, he was definitely within the Holy Land of Martialism. However, Chu Feng felt that the possibility he was in the Holy Land of Martialism was greater.

After all, the Divine Lightning he grasped was very special. He could not be sure it was from a Divine Body, nor could he be sure it was from a bloodline. At least, it was something that people here didn’t understand, but if he came from the Holy Land of Martialism, that would make much more sense.



Of course, after all, everything was speculation. The one who knew the true answer was only Huangfu Haoyue.

And other than Huangfu Haoyue, it was likely that only Qiushui Fuyan possibly knew some more things.

So, Chu Feng had to go find Qiushui Fuyan,

because he did not want to miss the single strand of hope in knowing his ancestry.

# Chapter 538 - I Can Help You

MGA: Chapter 538 - I Can Help You

“Hehe brat, your name is Chu Feng right?” After talking about Huangfu Haoyue, the black-clothed old man suddenly smilingly asked.

“Senior, you know my name?” Chu Feng was a bit surprised at first, but quickly after, he relaxed. After all, the black-clothed old man even knew things about the Emperor Tomb, so he had definitely secretly heard Chu Feng and the others’ conversation. Knowing Chu Feng’s name was also very normal.

“Hehe, not only do I know that your name is Chu Feng, I even know you have a fiancée called Zi Ling.”

“Your fiancée is not simple at all. Not only does she look like flower and jade, superior to fairies, she is even a Divine Body. Accordingly, by having a fiancée like her, is it truly luck cultivated from your past life.”

“But sadly, your fiancée got a group of worthless elders. For their own benefit, her parents and family sold her off. Sold her off to the Immortal Execution Archipelago.”

“Four years later, your fiancée will marry that dog butt young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.” The black-clothed old man chuckled and said.

At that instant, Chu Feng slightly furrowed his brows, then bitterly laughed and said, “I didn’t expect you to even know these things. Indeed, four years later, if I don’t have the ability to save her, she will marry that person.”

“Heh, don’t worry brat. I can help you.” The black-clothed old man suddenly said with a face of seriousness.

“Senior, you’ll help me?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s gaze flashed and cautiously examined the old man because he was aware that things were possibly not that simple.

“That’s right. I am the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s Four Protectors, and in the sect, I still have some rallying power. If I make my move, more or less, the Immortal Execution Archipelago will feel some fear.”

“However, there is no free lunch in this world. You and I only met by chance, so naturally, I won’t help you for nothing. So, I have a condition.” The black-clothed old man chuckled and said.

“Senior, what condition?” Chu Feng asked. At present, the mysterious man had already left his grasp, and with himself, to want to fight against the entire Immortal Execution Archipelago four years later, that could truly be said to be difficult on top of difficult.

And the black-clothed old man did indeed have some strength. If he was truly willing to help him, then that would still be quite a good choice. However, the only thing Chu Feng could not be sure of currently was whether the old man was trustworthy or not. So, he was also very cautious.

“This condition is actually very simple. I have cultivated for many years, but I have yet to accept a disciple. Seeing that your talent is not bad, and that you have some potential, why not become my disciple? As long as you enter my sect, I can reasonably go call some sect members to help you out.” The black-clothed old man said.

Listening to that point, Chu Feng was a bit surprised. He never would have thought that the old man actually planned to take him as his disciple, but Chu Feng was clearly in a difficult situation. After all, he already had Zhuge Liuyun as his master. Although right now, his cultivation was far from his, after all, he was his master.

So, Chu Feng said, “Senior, thank you for your approval, but without hiding anything, I already have a master, and he treats me quite well. I don’t think I can become your disciple.”

“Ahh, you seem to be quite a smart person, but how can you also have such stupid moments? Who said you can’t take me as your master after taking another person as your master?”

“Who told you a person can only have master in his entire life, and that if you want to have someone else as your master, you must betray your former master?” The black-clothed old man bared his teeth and said while being a bit displeased.

“This...” At that instant, Chu Feng was a bit speechless. In the continent of the Nine Provinces, taking another master was indeed not something that was glorious, but in the black-clothed old man’s perspective, he didn’t seem to mind things like those, and didn’t have any intention to make Chu Feng betray his former master.

So, Chu Feng asked, “Senior, do you mean, that in a situation where I already have a master, I can take you a master as well? You are willing to share me, a disciple, with another person?”

“Rubbish. For an excellent young person, who doesn’t strive to take him as a disciple?”

“He passes his abilities to you, I’ll pass my abilities to you. They don’t interfere with one another.”

“Besides, brat, by taking me as a master, the benefits I can give you are not limited to only taking your bride back.”

“I have gotten quite a few of the treasures in this Emperor Tomb! There are also uncountable number of cultivation resources, and I even got myself a Secret Skill. It’s that Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.” The black-clothed old man pointed at the Four Symbols Binding Formation, at the picture of the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

At that instant, Chu Feng’s expression couldn’t help but change as he hiddenly said, “That Vermilion Bird Revival Technique was indeed taken by him. The Evil Spirit trap must also have been set by him.”

“I know that you’ve gotten good things before in this Emperor Tomb, and already have two Secret Skills. So, I only collected that Secret Skill and did not use it. As for why, I planned to make that into a present and gift it to you when taking you as a disciple.”

“But it’s my fault for being too greedy and underestimating this Emperor Tomb’s danger. I didn’t stop when appropriate, causing me to be stuck in this place. Right now, I am sealed inside this Four Symbols Binding Formation, so even if I want to give these things to you, it is be impossible.”

“However, as long as I am able to get out, I will satisfy you. I can see that your cultivation method is very special, as it seems that as long as you have cultivation resources, it can help your cultivation rise quickly.”

“And to be honest, if I told you about the cultivation resources I got from the Emperor Tomb, it will definitely scare you to death, but they will let your cultivation rise to a very powerful level.”

“As for me, reaching this realm, I no longer dare to rely on cultivation resources or else it will only make me stuck and prevent advancement. So, as long as you are willing to become my disciple, all of the cultivation resources I got here, I can give to you.” The black-clothed old man solemnly said. As he spoke, his face was actually filled with sincerity, as if he truly already planned to take Chu Feng as his disciple.

And after hearing the black-clothed old man’s words, Chu Feng was endlessly moved, but he was also a bit suspicious. So, he asked, “Senior, you are truly willing to accept me as a disciple? You are truly willing to help me?!”

“But, why? I am but a poor boy with weak cultivation, yet you are actually willing to help me, ignoring the cost?”

“Haha, why? Why else? I only want to find an excellent successor for myself, and coincidentally, you qualify.”

“If you truly want a reason, I can give you one.”

“My age has already passed a hundred, and even if I continue living, it will not pass several hundred years. My talent isn’t that great either and becoming a Martial King is already luck. To want to continue making breakthroughs in order to prolong my life, it can be said to be very hard.”

“Right now, normal cultivation resources cannot help me, and on my own, it is difficult for me to comprehend the intricacies of each level. Only if a Martial Emperor is willing to use his special Emperor Battle Power to help me could I rise a level.”

# Chapter 539 - Mission

MGA: Chapter 539 - Mission

“However, in the Eastern Sea Region, Martial Kings are already the strongest. Where would Martial Emperors come from? Even if there are Martial Emperors, those are supreme existences.”

“How could great characters like those be willing to exhaust their own power to help a petty old man like me to make breakthroughs in cultivation?”

“So, I have always been searching for a successor. A successor who has the potential to become a Martial Emperor. I would then, regardless of cost, raise him into a Martial Emperor.”

“Although I cannot confirm whether that person can become a Martial Emperor or not, and I cannot confirm whether he would still bother with an old man like me after becoming a Martial Emperor, this is the road I decided to walk on.”

“When clearly knowing that it is already impossible for me to have greater achievements, I will entrust everything to another person, and you, are the person who I want to entrust everything on.”

“Heh, brat, do you think this reason is acceptable?” The black-clothed old man suddenly laughed loudly, as if the words he said before was only him joking.

However, Chu Feng discovered that some helplessness permeated throughout the black-clothed old man’s laughter. His laugh was a self-deprecating laugh.

“Senior, forgive my rudeness. After chatting for such a long time, I have yet to ask your name.” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s face was filled with

solemnness and pettiness as he saluted the black-clothed old man and asked.

“Haha, in the Eastern Sea Region, when the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s Four Protectors is mentioned, everyone knows my name.”

“But that’s fine. In such a desolate place, you haven’t even heard of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, so how could you know who I am?”

“Chu Feng, remember. My name is Qiu Canfeng.” The black-clothed old man said his name one word at a time.

“Disciple Chu Feng greets his master!” And at that instant, Chu Feng hurriedly knelt onto the ground and paid his respects to Qiu Canfeng.

He did that because he didn’t want to miss that chance. In a situation where he was facing such a huge power like the Immortal Execution Archipelago, as well as the enticement of the Emperor Tomb’s treasures, Chu Feng decisively chose to have Qiu Canfeng as his master.

Of course, although Chu Feng only performed that action because it was promoted by mutual benefit, he had deeply contemplated it.

In the conversation between him and Qiu Canfeng just now, Chu Feng had detailedly observed Qiu Canfeng’s facial expression and his speaking tone.

So, Chu Feng determined that Qiu Canfeng’s words were likely the truth, and that he truly wanted to take Chu Feng as his disciple. As for the reason, it was as he said just now.

On his journey of martial cultivation, when it was very difficult for him to have too great of an advancement, he chose to develop a person who could surpass his achievements.

If he succeeded, he could borrow the favour and get the person he developed to help himself. Although that was very risky, it did count as a method.



Though that was only Chu Feng's judgement, as he could also not confirm whether Qiu Canfeng only wanted to use him or not, at present, there was clearly no other choice.

“Haha, good good good! Quickly rise.”

“Oh Chu Feng, I am very happy to be able to accept a disciple like you.”

“I couldn't be sure of it before, but right now, I can. You are definitely able to surpass me. You are able to surpass everyone else in the Eastern Sea Region. You will become a Martial Emperor.”

“In your journey on becoming a Martial Emperor, I will do my best to help you. But before that, you still need to help me do something.” Qiu Canfeng smilingly said.

“Master, if you have anything, please instruct me. I will do my utmost to complete it.” Chu Feng respectfully replied.

“Heh, actually, it's not any big thing. I believe you can also imagine that I can't help you with anything as I am stuck in here.”

“But this Four Symbols Binding Formation isn't something you can break open. So, I want you to go ask for support.” Qiu Canfeng smiled and said.

“Support? Who?” Chu Feng asked.

“One of the Four Protectors of my Crippling Night Demon Sect, Fu Liansheng.”

“Although back then, there were some conflicts between the four of us because we were fighting for the position of sect head, later on, Fu Liansheng owed me a favour.”

“Moreover, although that person has vicious methods, he isn't a person who doesn't care what methods he uses to reach his goal. As a person, he still emphasizes camaraderie and honor. As long as you find him and tell him the situation, he will definitely come and find me.”

“But beware, other than Fu Liansheng, do not tell any other person in the Crippling Night Demon Sect about my whereabouts, or else, it will be hard to prevent others hitting me while I’m down.” Qiu Canfeng said.

“Then master, where is that Senior Fu Liansheng right now? What characteristics does he have, and how can I make him believe that I’m your disciple?” Chu Feng asked.

“Your thoughts are quite meticulous, but I too don’t know where Fu Liansheng is right now. I only know he won’t leave the Eastern Sea Region, but regarding the specifics, you can only rely on yourself to find them.”

“As for making him believe you, that’s very simple. After seeing him, as long as you say to him that within the Black Mist Abyss, you once owed someone a favour and that person now needs your help, that’ll be fine.”

“Remember. Do not speak useless words to him or not only will he ignore you, he will even kill you.” Qiu Canfeng seriously reminded.

“Don’t worry master. I will find Senior Fu Liansheng soon and come to get you out.”

Those were words that came from Chu Feng’s heart because he impatiently wanted to become stronger. He impatiently wanted to obtain an insurance against the Immortal Execution Archipelago. And the precondition of all that was to save Qiu Canfeng first.

“Mm. You are very sharp, but after arriving at the Eastern Sea Region, you still need to carefully handle matters. That place is not something that’s comparable to your little continent of the Nine Provinces. No matter if it is people or strength, or the methods of doing things.” Qiu Canfeng reminded again.

“I will be careful.” Chu Feng compliantly nodded his head, but after carefully examining the Four Symbols Binding Formation, he said once more, “But master, right now, you are imprisoned in this Four Symbols Binding Formation and you can’t even move. The road to the Eastern Sea

Region is so far as well, and putting aside that I can find Senior Fu Liansheng after arriving at the Eastern Sea Region, even if I

can

find him, on the road back, that still requires quite a bit of time.”

“During such a long period of time, what will you eat? What will you drink?”

Chu Feng knew that no matter how much stronger cultivators got, they still had to eat and drink. Back then, because the Monstrous Monkey King prepared sufficient food, that was why he was able to stay so long in the Asura Ghost Tower. Qiu Canfeng wouldn't have also prepared food right?

“Haha, don't worry. Although this Four Symbols Binding Formation has locked me in here, it is constantly channeling special power into me. This is to preserve my lifeforce. It will not let me starve to death, but only age to death.”

“So, no need to worry about me. It'll be fine as long as you just quickly find Fu Liansheng. Even if it's not for the old man me, for your little girlfriend, you need to hurry!”

“Although that Immortal Execution Archipelago isn't enough to be afraid of, I still need to organize my fragmented Crippling Night Demon Sect members before being able to fight against the Immortal Execution Archipelago.”

“Or else, with only my own strength, that would be a bit risky, and combining the Crippling Night Demon Sect does require some time.” Qiu Canfeng lightly smiled and said.

# Chapter 540 - Present

MGA: Chapter 540 - Present

After that, Qiu Canfeng gave Chu Feng many instructions, and those instructions were only for one goal. It was to prevent Chu Feng having any accidents in the Eastern Sea Region.

And within those words, Chu Feng was also able to discover that not only did Qiu Canfeng want Chu Feng to help him obtain reinforcements, he was also, truly, caring about Chu Feng's safety.

It could be seen that Qiu Canfeng really seriously recognized Chu Feng, his disciple, and didn't seem like he was only using him to leave that place. At least, Chu Feng felt that it was like so.

If he was wrong and Qiu Canfeng had never planned to help Chu Feng, and only wanted to use Chu Feng to leave the Emperor Tomb, that could only mean that Qiu Canfeng's acting abilities were too high and that Chu Feng failed in knowing people. At that time, Chu Feng would not be angry at the heavens nor at anyone. If he were to blame anything, he could only blame his lousy eyes.

Quickly after, Chu Feng left the Emperor Tomb. Although he already knew that it was going to be a long journey, he still underestimated the Emperor Tomb's deepness.

Although, with the mysterious man leading the way, reaching the Emperor Door required only half a day of time, on the journey in which Chu Feng returned alone, he was hurrying during both day and night. He used over ten days in order to fly out of the Emperor Tomb. From that, it could be seen how vast the Emperor Tomb was. It was simply even larger than the continent of the Nine Provinces. It was really frightening when one learnt of it.

But luckily, on the road, after Chu Feng refined all of the Spirit Formation Essence, he obtained quite a bit of harvest.

As expected, he successfully broke into the 3rd level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, within his body, he even accumulated a large amount of Heaven power. He was no longer far from the 4th level of the Heaven realm.

In addition to the power of the three lightnings, Chu Feng's real strength was likely in the 6th level of the Heaven realm. The 6th level of the Heaven realm. Although it wasn't considered really strong, when going forward to the Eastern Sea Region, it was enough. At least he had some ability to back him up.

After walking out of the Emperor Tomb, Chu Feng did not directly leave. He diligently laid a Spirit Formation, sealing and hiding the entrance to the Emperor Tomb in order to avoid any accidents from happening.

Only after he felt everything was ready did Chu Feng step back onto the road of return, and flew towards the Azure Dragon School.

When Chu Feng returned to the Azure Dragon School, he discovered that all of the main buildings in it were already complete. Vast buildings were erected on the Azure Dragon Mountain Range, and they were very grand-looking.

Compared to the former Azure Dragon School, it was a lot more magnificent. It would even be reasonable to say that other than the Jiang Dynasty, they were the vastest buildings in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

Moreover, within the current Azure Dragon School, it was extremely lively. It could even be described as extremely joyful.

There were not only disciples from the Azure Dragon School. There were even quite some people from the World Spirit Guild such as Gu Tianchen and the others, and also people from the Jiang Dynasty.

Without thinking, Chu Feng also knew what was happening. The Azure Dragon School was finally finished, and the so-called opening ceremony was going to start as well. Those people came up to give their congratulations.

“Chu Feng you brat, you’ve finally come back. How was it? Successful?”

“Eh, Chu Feng, your aura, you’ve actually broke through again? It seems like you’ve gotten quite a bit from this journey!”

“Wait, Chu Feng, how about the insane man that followed you? Where did he go?!”

After the Monstrous Monkey King and the crowd saw Chu Feng, they discovered that his cultivation already rose from the 1st level of the Heaven realm to the 3rd level of the Heaven realm. To that, everyone felt happy for Chu Feng.

However, they also discovered that the insane man was gone, yet the Monstrous Monkey King had told them that Chu Feng clearly brought the insane man and left together. That made them lightly frown, feeling that something might have happened.

“This matter has a long story.” Chu Feng lightly smiled. Because the people on scene were trustworthy people, he didn’t hide much and told the process of what happened in detail to the crowd. However, he avoided the matter regarding taking Qiu Canfeng as his master.

“Ahh, no matter what, it’s great that you’re fine. It’s great that you’re fine!” After knowing what happened, people also felt some fear from Chu Feng’s experience. Although they didn’t personally see the Emperor Might, they were able to feel the strong power of it from Chu Feng’s description.

“That’s right. Chu Feng, since you’re back, let’s see the ancestor. He’s waiting for you.” Suddenly, Li Zhangqing spoke.

“Ancestor, he’s come out? What, has he broke through?” Chu Feng concernedly asked.

“Heh, right now, he is inside the Azure Dragon Hall. Won’t you know when you go over and see?” Li Zhangqing smiled in a very suspenseful way.

Seeing that, Chu Feng no longer asked anymore because looking at his joyful smile, Chu Feng could already guess that the Azure Dragon Founder broke into the Martial Lord realm.

And after Chu Feng came to the Azure Dragon Hall, he discovered that the Azure Dragon Founder was resting with his eyes closed while sitting in the middle of the hall. After feeling someone enter, he abruptly opened his eyes, and simultaneously, a burst of fierceness was given off and aimed to engulf Chu Feng.

That might was extremely frightening. It simply shocked one’s soul, but after the Azure Dragon Founder saw that the person who came was Chu Feng, he hurriedly put away that gaze and said with a face full of smiles, “Chu Feng, you’re back.”

“Ancestor, congratulations on breaking into the Martial Lord realm, becoming a supreme Martial Lord!” Chu Feng quickly paid his respects because he discovered, as he expected, that the Azure Dragon Founder successfully broke through.

From then on, the Azure Dragon Founder had a long chat with Chu Feng. The first thing they talked about was the Azure Dragon School’s opening ceremony.

So it turned out that the Azure Dragon School’s construction had been completed for several days, and even the guests from many places arrived already. The reason why the opening ceremony hadn’t started yet was because they were waiting for Chu Feng.

The reason why the Azure Dragon School was able to have today and was able to be reborn was all because of Chu Feng. Even the Azure Dragon

Founder being able to revive, speaking from certain aspects, was because of Chu Feng.

So, everyone kept on waiting for Chu Feng. Waiting for him to return, and then the opening ceremony would immediately start. Thus, the Azure Dragon Founder decided that tomorrow, the opening ceremony would be held.

“Ah Chu Feng, I heard that you want to go to the Eastern Sea Region’s Four Seas Academy for cultivation with Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi?” Suddenly, the Azure Dragon Founder asked.

Only after hearing his words did Chu Feng abruptly remember. The date they agreed on back then was already approaching, and they were going to head towards the Eastern Sea Region.

But to the Azure Dragon Founder’s question, Chu Feng shook his head and said, “I am indeed planning to go with them to the Eastern Sea Region, but I don’t plan to enter the Four Seas Academy.”

“Mm. No matter if you go to the Four Seas Academy for cultivation or not, going to the Eastern Sea Region to expand your horizons is still good. Especially since your talent is this good, that place is indeed more suitable for you. Staying in the continent of the Nine Provinces will instead disgrace your abilities.”

“But the Eastern Sea Region is a place where dragons and tigers fight. In the east side of this world, there are countless continents like the Nine provinces, and on each continent, there will always be a few special geniuses born, and their goals would also be the Eastern Sea Region.”

“And since you are preparing to go to that place, before you depart, I’ll give you a present.” The Azure Dragon Founder lightly smiled and said.



# Chapter 541 - School Opening Ceremony

MGA: Chapter 541 - School Opening Ceremony

“Present?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng couldn’t help but be taken aback.

However, the Azure Dragon Founder only lightly smiled, then sat cross-leggedly, overlaid his palms, and performed a special hand seal.

At that instant, Chu Feng could clearly feel layers and layers of odd waves endlessly flipping and surging within the Azure Dragon Founder’s body.

Moreover, his originally reddish complexion immediately turned as white as paper, and he started to grimace, showing a painful expression.

\*wuaao\*

Suddenly, a dragon’s roar came from the Azure Dragon Founder’s body. At the same time, a Spirit Formation actually appeared on his forehead.

The Spirit Formation shot radiance in all directions, and under the envelopment of the radiance, a small azure dragon flew out, and at the end, landed on the Azure Dragon Founder’s palm.

Although that azure dragon was very small, its appearance was the exact same as the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique Chu Feng saw within the Four Symbols Binding Formation. In addition to its special and powerful aura it emanated, without even thinking, Chu Feng knew that it was definitely the Secret Skill that made the Azure Dragon Founder’s name, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique.

But at that instant, looking back at the Azure Dragon Founder, he was already drenched in sweat and was gasping deeply. It was as though he

received heavy injuries, and he was extremely feeble.

“Ancestor, what are you doing?” Seeing that scene, Chu Feng panicked a bit because just by looking, he could tell that the Azure Dragon Founder’s action was making him pay quite some price.

“Back then, I promised I would pass this Azure Dragon Dashing Technique to you as long as you could revive me. Right now, I am only honoring my word.” The Azure Dragon Founder spoke and smiled, but his tone was very weak, for he no longer had his former vigorous power.

“No, ancestor, don’t! This present is really too heavy. I cannot accept it.” Chu Feng hurriedly refused.

“Chu Feng, you don’t need to feel burdened. This Secret Skill is an object with intelligence. Although it chose me back then, clearly, I am still unable to show its strength.”

“Besides, a Secret Skill’s master is chosen by itself. Even though I made it detach from my body, you still have to see whether it is willing to choose you or not.”

“Hold on. I will completely unseal it. At that time, it will naturally have its own decision. If it feels that you are more suitable, it will, of course, choose you. If you are still not qualified, then it will return to my body.”

“So, no need to push this away. It is better to let us respect this Azure Dragon Dashing Technique and let it choose for itself.”

The Azure Dragon Founder lightly smiled, then raised his finger, and with a “ao”, the dragon’s roar rang out again, and the azure dragon coiled on the Azure Dragon Founder’s palm actually rose into the air, and immediately became a huge azure dragon with extraordinary might.

It was twisted in the air, there was mist surroundings its body, and it emanated powerful might. Even if it was the Azure Dragon Founder, he was very inferior.

But it did not speak. It only indifferently looked over the Azure Dragon Founder and Chu Feng, then its dragon body went forward quickly, became a strand of azure light, and entered Chu Feng's brain.

“Ahh!” At that instant, Chu Feng felt his brain ache, and a large amount of information also appeared.

The Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, the supreme Secret Skill, unhesitatingly chose Chu Feng. That result made one feel shocked, yet it was within expectations.

“Indeed. I knew that between you and me, it would definitely choose you. After all, back then when it chose me, it was something that could not be helped.” At that instant, the Azure Dragon Founder relievedly smiled, and on his pale-white face, a hint of a comforted expression emerged.

When a strong power attached itself to someone, it would always make them feel happy and excited.

But when they discover because of their limited strength, they restricted the strong power, it would make them feel huge pressure. It could be said that the strong power became a huge burden, and would suffocate them from the pressure.

And the Azure Dragon Founder was exactly like that. His talent was limited, and he simply could not fully show the supreme Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique. To him, it was already a huge burden. At present, passing it down to Chu Feng instead became the best liberty.

“So powerful.” At that instant, Chu Feng was also endlessly shocked because in the instant the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique entered his body, he already grasped that Secret Skill.

So, he understood more than anyone else the strong power of the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique. Its speed was over several times quicker than the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens.

If he used the three Secret Skills at the same time, Chu Feng was completely able to imagine how powerful he of that time would be. It would likely be a lot more powerful to the him who grasped a Elite Armament.

“This disciple thanks the ancestor.” Suddenly, Chu Feng greatly saluted to the Azure Dragon Founder to express his thanks, because that present was really too precious.

“This Secret Skill should have originally belonged to you. I only safeguarded it for a thousand years.” But the Azure Dragon Founder hurriedly helped Chu Feng up, and his face was full of expectant smiles.

His looked very forward to the kinds of storms Chu Feng, who was of mysterious origin, had extremely powerful talent, and grasped three Secret Skills, would stir up after entering the Eastern Sea Region.

The next day, the Azure Dragon School’s opening ceremony officially started.

Within the Azure Dragon Mountain Range, it could be said that all of the huge characters of the Nine Provinces were gathered there. Even the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor and emperor personally came and went to congratulate.

And other than the powers and experts invited, there were many experts and powers who didn’t receive the invitation yet wanted to witness the great occasion, and also came to the Azure Dragon School.

On that day of great joy, the Azure Dragon School put away its former proud attitude and opened its doors, welcoming guests who came from all directions. In and out the mountain range, there was great rapture everywhere.

“Look! Is that the old ancestor of the World Spirit Guild, Gu Tianchen, the genius who shocked the continent a hundred years ago?”

“Waa, I didn’t expect that today, not only have I seen the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor, I have even seen the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor!”

“Heavens! Is that the Azure Dragon Founder? It is! The strongest person to sweep through the continent of the Nine Provinces a thousand years ago is actually still living?”

When people saw Gu Tianchen, the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor, the Azure Dragon Founder, and other grand characters like them, they were all extremely excited because right now, many of the people who appeared in the Azure Dragon School were like legends to many in the Nine Provinces.

“Look, it’s Chu Feng! I never would have thought that he, right now, already entered the 3rd level of the Heaven realm. This speed of cultivation is really frightening.”

“Ahh, thinking back then when Chu Feng was wronged by several big powers and his wanted poster was spread all over the continent of the Nine Provinces. At that time, how many people slandered him? How many people wanted to kill him?”

“But, with his own power, he forcefully killed the people who chased after him, and moreover, made the several big powers pay an extremely hefty price.”

“At present, he has already become the idol of countless people in the continent of the Nine Provinces. He has already created countless legends, and is fully worthy of being the number one person in the young generation.”

# Chapter 542 - Who's The Strongest In The Young Generation?

MGA: Chapter 542 - Who's The Strongest In The Young Generation?

“Chu Feng is indeed powerful, but to say he’s the number one person in the continent of the Nine Provinces’ young generation, there is no proof of that.”

“Look. Not to mention that there’s also a Zhang Tianyi in the Azure Dragon School, even in the Jiang Dynasty, there are people able to be compared to Chu Feng.”

“Jiang Yini, the strongest in the Jiang Dynasty’s young generation, already has the cultivation of the 6th level of the Heaven realm right now. Even the old generation fear her.”

“Jiang Wushang, the number one genius in the Jiang Dynasty. He is sixteen years old, yet he is already in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm. In terms of talent, he’s stronger than Chu Feng right?” Although Chu Feng was powerful, that was indisputable, there were also some people who felt that Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Yini, Jiang Wushang, and the others, might not be weaker than Chu Feng.

“You don’t understand. Not only is Chu Feng’s talent outstanding, and his speed of improvement godly, his battle power is extremely horrifying as well. Although he is only in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm, even those in the 5th level of the Heaven realm may not be able to defeat him.”

“Chu Feng’s battle power is strong, that’s a fact, but Zhang Tianyi is similarly terrifying. As for Jiang Yini and Jiang Wushang, they are from the Jiang Dynasty! They have noble bloodlines! Would it be possible that their battle power is inferior to Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi?”

“Ahh, if they can spar once, that would be great. We wouldn’t have to argue here then.”

“Yeah. I truly want to see a comparison of skills between them. With that, we would also know who exactly is the strongest in the Nine Provinces’ young generation.”

Looking at the four people, Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Yini, and Jiang Wushang, with extraordinary might and superb complexions on the high stage, up and down the crowd of people, there were many people checking into who was strong and who was weak.

To those sounds, even if it was the people on the high stage, naturally, they heard them clearly. So, the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor looked at the Azure Dragon Founder who was sitting on the school head’s chair, and said, “Senior Azure Dragon, it seems like everyone wants to know who the number one person in the current continent of the Nine Provinces is.”

“It is rare to have a day of great joy like today, so why not let a few in the young generation spar? Take it as satisfying everyone’s desires.”

“Actually, I also had this intention.” The Azure Dragon Founder lightly smiled, then looked at Chu Feng and the others and said, “But I just don’t know, are you four willing to spar for one round?”

After the Azure Dragon Founder spoke, everyone’s faces turned to joy. They cast their gazes towards Chu Feng and the others, looking forward to their response.

Because, not only did the experts who came from the other provinces wanted to know, even they, the people who were rather familiar with Chu Feng and the others, also wanted to know who was the strong and weak ones of them four.

And facing the crowd’s expecting gaze, Jiang Wushang bitterly laughed, and helplessly said, “Actually, I have already sparred against Brother Tianyi, but I could not defeat him.”

“As for Brother Chu Feng, even the abnormality of eighteen golden dragons was lit up by him. I do not feel it is possible for me to defeat him when we both have equal cultivation.”

“What? You’ve already fought and Wushang, you’re actually unable to defeat Zhang Tianyi?!”

After hearing Jiang Wushang’s words, the faces of the people from the Jiang Dynasty changed and on their originally expectant and excited faces, expressions of shock surged.

Because, after Chu Feng activated the Eighteen Golden Dragon Abnormality Formation, the bloodlines of everyone in the Jiang Dynasty were strengthened. Their strengths were also strengthened.

Many people even directly broke through, and Jiang Wushang was one of them. So, his cultivation already entered the 3rd level of the Heaven realm, the same as Zhang Tianyi.

Their bloodlines were extremely strong already, and currently, they received a transformation. Yet Jiang Wushang, who was viewed as the Jiang Dynasty’s hope by the Jiang Dynasty, was actually defeated by Zhang Tianyi’s hands. That was naturally difficult to accept.

In reality, even the face of the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor was a bit unsightly. As he could do nothing about it, he could only cast his gaze towards his daughter, Jiang Yini.

Although Jiang Yini’s bloodline wasn’t as dense as Jiang Wushang’s, luckily, her cultivation was powerful, and was already in the 6th level of the Heaven realm at that moment. At least in terms of cultivation, she could pressure Zhang Tianyi and Chu Feng.

However, just as the people from the Jiang Dynasty all cast their gazes towards Jiang Yini, hoping she could fight for the Jiang Dynasty’s glory, she sweetly smiled, and said, “Although I am in the 6th level of the Heaven realm, I am inferior to Wushang who is in the 3rd level of the



Heaven realm. So, without sparring, I already know I will not be able to defeat Zhang Tianyi and Chu Feng.”

“This...” At that instant, everyone from the Jiang Dynasty were stupefied. The spar hadn’t even started, yet their Jiang Dynasty’s young generation already lost. That made them feel helplessness.

“Haha!” Facing that situation, the Azure Dragon Founder laughed, then looked at Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi, and said, “It looks like right now, within the continent of the Nine Provinces’ young generation, only you two can fight. Are you willing to spar for a round?”

“Actually, I’ve always wanted to experience Junior Chu Feng’s abilities. Especially after Junior Chu Feng’s cultivation became the same as mine, my thought got more intense.” With a light smile on his face, within Zhang Tianyi’s fierce gaze, immense intention to fight was already emanated.

“Since it is like so, I ask Senior Zhang to grant me pointers.” Seeing that, Chu Feng did not refuse, and also leaped, rose into the air, and stood above the blue sky.

Actually, it was not only Zhang Tianyi who wanted to experience Chu Feng’s strength. Chu Feng had always wanted to experience Zhang Tianyi’s strength as well.

After all, back then, Chu Feng’s cultivation was too weak, and he simply couldn’t fight against Zhang Tianyi. But at present, his cultivation finally caught up. So, naturally, he also wanted to experience the power of Zhang Tianyi’s Forbidden Mysterious Technique.

Because, looking at it back then, Zhang Tianyi’s Forbidden Mysterious Technique didn’t seem to lose to Zi Ling’s Divine Body. So, Chu Feng also wanted to know, when they both had the same cultivation, who was the stronger one and who was the weaker one between the two of them.

“Haha, Junior Chu Feng, although it is only sparring, I will not restrain myself. Do not be careless~” Seeing Chu Feng agree to the spar, Zhang

Tianyi also loudly laughed excitedly, and quickly after, also rushed into the high sky.

And at that instant, within the Azure Dragon School, cheers continuously rang out, and everyone's blood started to boil.

They roundly widened their eyes, and without moving their gazes, they stared at the two people in the air, their faces full of yearning.

Because, on that day, their dreams finally became real. They were going to personally witness the glory of the two peak geniuses in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

# Chapter 543 - Battle of Geniuses

MGA: Chapter 543 - Battle of Geniuses

People formed mountains and oceans in the Azure Dragon School. It could be said that all characters who were well-known in the entire continent of the Nine Provinces gathered there.

The famous, the unknown, the old, the young, the ones belonging to schools, the ones belonging to parties, the leisure, the multitude of types, all sorts of characters that one could think of were there.

But at that instant, everyone's gaze was concentrated on an area above the Azure Dragon Mountain Range because they knew that at that place, an exciting battle was going to start.

Moreover, that was not only the confrontation between two peak experts. It was the great battle between two geniuses. The battle between the strongest geniuses in the current continent of the Nine Provinces.

“Junior Chu Feng, I'll make my move first then.” Suddenly, as Zhang Tianyi stood on air, he politely clasped his hands towards Chu Feng while he was a thousand meters away from him.

“Senior Zhang, please.” Chu Feng also lightly smiled, and similarly clasped his hands towards him.

“Haa!”

Seeing that, Zhang Tianyi also didn't hesitate. He explosively yelled and attacked first. He did not use any martial skills, and only punched in the air.

When that punch came out, Heaven power surged. A ripple visible by the naked eye streaked through the peaceful sky, and with horrifying might, pressed towards Chu Feng.

“Senior Zhang, I’m afraid an attack of this degree is useless to me.”

However, facing Zhang Tianyi’s attack, Chu Feng only calmly smiled. He stood with his hands behind his back, and didn’t even move. With a thought, a blue-coloured Spirit Formation appeared in front of him to block the blow.

With a huge explosion, Heaven power and Spirit Formation interweaved. But when the horrifying ripples dissipated, everyone astonishedly discovered that Zhang Tianyi’s punch had actually been unable to move the Spirit Formation in the slightest. Zhang Tianyi’s casual attack was easily blocked by Chu Feng.

“Heh, This Spirit Formation thing is truly not simple. However, if you only rely on the Spirit Formation, you will definitely be unable to block my following strikes.”

However, Zhang Tianyi strangely smiled, then the steps under his feet changed. Quickly after, his left hand grabbed the air and formed a bow, his right hand pulled the air and formed an arrow. As his arm expanded and contracted, golden and dazzling arrows, like a storm, densely flew towards Chu Feng.

“Bow of Hundred Transformations?!” Seeing the arrows that filled the sky come towards him, Chu Feng couldn't help but recall the scene back then.

When he met Zhang Tianyi the first time, he had used the Bow of Hundred Transformations. At that time, Zhang Tianyi’s Bow of Hundred Transformations could be said unstoppable. Not to say him, even Zi Ling was unable to block them.

And today, Zhang Tianyi used the Bow of Hundred Transformations once again, causing Chu Feng to be secretly joyful, and he was even a bit excited.

Because, he had always wanted to know whose Bow of Hundred Transformations would be superior when he, who was also skilled in that martial skill, was in the same cultivation level as Zhang Tianyi.

So, as the golden arrows that filled the sky densely flew towards him, not only did Chu Feng not dodge, he even dissolved the blue-coloured Spirit Formation in front of him.

Quickly after, Chu Feng entered a horse stance, waved both of his arms, and similarly, a huge golden bow appeared within his palm. As his right arm pulled, countless golden arrows explosively shot out.

\*whoosh whoosh whoosh\*

At that instant, the wind sounds in the sky sounded and golden radiance shot in all directions. Very quickly, the golden arrows from both sides interweaved and within the air, golden ripples kept on being created. It was extremely blinding.

“Heavens! Powerful, that is really too powerful! Is this the clash between the strongest in the young generation?”

And seeing the dazzling and horrifying might in the sky, the observing people endlessly sighed because even many people in the old generation could not create attacks like those.

Some people had even not seen a fight with such might before, so they were deeply attracted to the atmosphere the two of them created, and all of them were endlessly excited as they watched.

And it had to be said that the Chu Feng’s and Zhang Tianyi’s Bow of Hundred Transformations were used very skillfully. But no matter how much closer their strength was to one another, there was still a separation between the strong and the weak. After the countless arrows endlessly interweaved, change appeared.

The golden arrows Chu Feng shot out actually started to break through the center points of intersection, then continued on shooting towards Zhang Tianyi.

At first, Zhang Tianyi was still able to use some bodily methods to evade them in the air, but gradually, the golden arrows Chu Feng shot out became

more and more, and already surpassed the scope that Zhang Tianyi could endure.

“Haa!”

Finally, just as several arrows came and were going to meet their mark, Zhang Tianyi suddenly explosively yelled, then the Bow of Hundred Transformations in his hand immediately disappeared. Replacing it was a flickering red-coloured glow within both of his palms.

\*boom\*

Quickly afterwards, he waved his robe, and threw out both palms. A large area of flames sprayed out of his palms and forcefully melted all of the golden arrows in the sky. That was actually a rank 6 martial skill.

But Chu Feng was also not a simple character. Seeing the flames that filled the sky and was like a tide as they pressed close, he didn't even frown.

He sneered, and as he clenched a single fist, with a dragon's roar, a golden and dazzling longsword appeared within his hand.

After that golden longsword appeared, boundless pressure also descended from the sky, immediately extinguishing the flames that Zhang Tianyi sent out.

“This... Isn't this Void Zhenren's unique skill, the Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry?!” Seeing the golden longsword Chu Feng held as well as the pressure covering the entire sky, the Azure Dragon Founder's eyes lit up because he already recognized that it was the rank 7 martial skill which Void Zhenren created, the Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry!

“What? The Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry? Is it possible that my ancestor's unique skill has been grasped by Chu Feng?!” And after hearing the Azure Dragon Founder's words, the faces of some manager elders from the Void School changed greatly.

Because, to them, the Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry could be said to be the unique skill which held the fort down. However, it was useless as no one was able to comprehend it, so that was why it was lost for many years.

Yet at present, Chu Feng actually grasped their Void School's unique skill that had been lost for almost a thousand years. How could they not be shocked?

“Powerful. Truly too powerful. Chu Feng is indeed a godly genius. Of one thousand years in my Void School, so many people were unable to comprehend this Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry.”

“I never would have thought that Chu Feng was actually able to do it. In my life, it is truly an honor to be able to see the martial skill my ancestor created!” Compared to the other elders' shock, the head of the Void School had a face full of honor.

In reality, Chu Feng's Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry was indeed peerlessly powerful. After using the Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry, he was simply unstoppable.

Regardless of what martial skill Zhang Tianyi used, it was unable to defeat Chu Feng. Even similarly a rank 7 martial skill, it was unable to fight against Chu Feng's Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry.

As he could do nothing about it, Zhang Tianyi pulled out the Divine Wood Sword from his back and used the Elite Armament to fight against Chu Feng's Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry.

It had to be said that the might of the Elite Armament was indeed strong. After he grasped the Divine Wood Sword in his hand, Zhang Tianyi's entire atmosphere was several times stronger.

Symbols moved all around his body, as if human and sword were one. His styles were well-articulated, and his demeanor was oppressing. He actually forcefully pushed Chu Feng continuously back.

“Junior Chu Feng, make your move. Let I, Zhang Tianyi, feel the power of your Asura Ghost Axe. Let us see whether your Asura Ghost Axe is stronger, or my Divine Wood Sword is stronger.”

Suddenly, the two of them clashed once again. With the Divine Wood Sword’s powerful might, Zhang Tianyi forced Chu Feng back several meters again. A hint of smug couldn’t help appearing onto his face, and he actually went ahead and asked Chu Feng to use his Elite Armament.



# Chapter 544 - Going With Full Strength

MGA: Chapter 544 - Going With Full Strength

“I will accept that proposal.”

To Zhang Tianyi’s request, Chu Feng did not refuse. He lightly smiled, then radiance flashed in his palm, and the huge and domineering Asura Ghost Axe appeared within his hand.

When the Asura Ghost Axe appeared, even the air couldn’t help trembling. When the powerful might engulfed everything, every single person could feel Chu Feng’s powerful strength.

“So strong. That’s the Asura Ghost Axe? I heard that the Jie clan and other powers framed Chu Feng back then because of this Asura Ghost Axe. Furthermore, they list Chu Feng as wanted, the reason being that they wanted to take the Asura Ghost Axe for themselves.”

“It is indeed worthy being a Mastered Elite Armament. This might is clearly a lot more powerful than Zhang Tianyi’s Divine Wood Sword. It seems like the outcome of today’s battle has already be set, and the strongest is indeed still Chu Feng.” After seeing the Asura Ghost Axe, the crowd endlessly sighed in admiration and were deeply stunned by the Asura Ghost Axe.

“Haha, that’s more like it.” And seeing Chu Feng finally also using the Elite Armament, Zhang Tianyi seemed extremely excited and actually leaped, waved his longsword, and started fierce attacks on Chu Feng again. Moreover, this time, it was several times more powerful than his might before.

“Ho.” Facing Zhang Tianyi’s attacks that so suddenly increased in power, the corners of Chu Feng’s mouth rose, and he stood where he was, not dodging nor evading. Only until Zhang Tianyi’s Divine Wood Sword, which swirled with glowing symbols and had bursts of pressure, neared did Chu Feng wave his hand and use his Asura Ghost Axe.

\*ao~~~~~\*

When the Asura Ghost Axe moved, it instantly made wind sounds akin to those of wolves crying and ghosts howling. Quickly after, it became a half-moon-shaped black-coloured blade of light, and interweaved with the Divine Wood Sword.

\*cang\*

The two weapons clashed into one another, causing an ear-piercing noise of steel collision to spread in the air. The strong force moved even Chu Feng back a few steps.

But looking back at Zhang Tianyi, he was actually forced to fly backwards for dozens of meters. Moreover, if one looked carefully, they would discover at that very instant, Zhang Tianyi’s arm that tightly held the Divine Wood Sword was actually lightly trembling, having clearly received huge pressure.

“Junior Chu Feng’s Asura Ghost Axe is indeed powerful. Purely in terms of power, he has already completely suppressed me. Is this the power of a Mastered Elite Armament? It is possible that ordinary Elite Armaments can truly not be discussed on the same level as a Mastered Elite Armament?!” At that instant, Zhang Tianyi also tightly furrowed his brows. It was the first time he felt Chu Feng’s powerful strength.

“Senior Zhang, before victory and defeat is decided, do not be distracted and careless!” And just at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly explosively shouted, and when Zhang Tianyi reacted to it, he had already arrived in front of him. The huge Asura Ghost Axe, with sounds of piercing through the air, sliced down at him again.

Chu Feng's speed was really too quickly. He simply did not give any time for Zhang Tianyi to dodge, and in that situation, he could only hold tightly the Divine Wood Sword in his hand and channel the power in his body into it.

When the symbols on the Divine Wood Sword lit up again, he suddenly waved it to block Chu Feng's Asura Ghost Axe which was striking downwards towards his face.

With a "cang", sparks went in all directions, and ripples were born from the collision.

However, Zhang Tianyi flew back several meters again. What was different was that the trembling of his right arm became more distinct, and a type of even intenser numbing feeling filled his entire arm.

"Wait. That is not only the Asura Ghost Axe's power. It is Junior Chu Feng's. His physical body has always been powerful, and only with the Asura Ghost Axe in his hand can the overbearing and direct power be sufficiently used by him."

"No, I cannot clash against him head-on. I should pull apart the distance and start long-distance fights or else my Divine Wood Sword will simply be unable to fight against his Asura Ghost Axe." When the second confrontation ended as Zhang Tianyi losing again, he became aware of the Asura Ghost Axe's offensive speciality.

So, he hurriedly changed his footsteps and used a unique bodily martial skill, wanting to increase the distance between him and Chu Feng, then use the Divine Wood Sword's long distance attacks to fight against Chu Feng.

\*whoosh\*

However, just as he used his bodily martial skill, before he was able to shift away, Chu Feng's attack arrived once again. Moreover, no matter if it was speed or attacking strength, it was a lot fiercer than before.

“Hoh. Fine.” And seeing the faint amused smile that Chu Feng wore on the corners of his mouth, Zhang Tianyi suddenly smiled.

He already knew everything. Not only was Chu Feng’s battle power brutally strong, his battle tactics were even not inferior to him, possibly even more experienced than him.

From the start, Chu Feng clearly knew that his Asura Ghost Axe’s advantage was close combat. So, he would not give Zhang Tianyi any chance to pull apart the distance.

His miscalculation and carelessness already caused him to sink into a dangerous situation. With circumstances like those, if he continued using the Elite Armament to fight against Chu Feng, what awaited him was only failure.

However, he did not want to lose the spar. He was originally a person who was unwilling to easily admit defeat and really enjoyed victory.

Even though he knew how terrifying the power Chu Feng stored in his body was, even though he knew that Chu Feng still hadn’t used his trump card, he still wanted to fight with his full strength, and was absolutely not going to give up a single strand of chance.

That was not only for winning. It was also giving Chu Feng respect. Even though he knew that it was impossible for him to defeat Chu Feng, he still wanted to use his strongest side to fight against Chu Feng.

So, facing Chu Feng who came striking again, not only did he not use the Divine Wood Sword to block, he willed, and blue-coloured flames burst out from his body.

Zhang Tianyi’s Forbidden Mysterious Technique had been activated. His entire person’s aura rocketed, and currently, his battle power was already extremely horrifying. Even those in the 6th level of the Heaven realm weren’t able to defeat him.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng's face also slightly changed. He hurriedly caused radiance to flash under his feet, and flew backwards, not daring to clash against him head-on.

However, when Chu Feng chose to retreat, Zhang Tianyi instead rushed forward. Holding the Divine Wood Sword, he pressed towards Chu Feng again. The most important part was after he explosively activated the power of his Forbidden Mysterious Technique, even his speed received an increase.

In only a blink, the battle turned around. From passive, Zhang Tianyi became aggressive and started to suppress Chu Feng instead.

“Heavens! They are actually blue-coloured flames! What exactly is that martial skill? What a strong feeling!”

“This Zhang Tianyi is actually has this power! This horrifying battle power simply surpasses the 6th level of the Heaven realm. This does not make sense. How can he have such horrifying power? Is it possible that he's a Divine Body?”

“So powerful. It is really too powerful. He is actually able to suppress Chu Feng, who has a Mastered Elite Armament, to this state. Could it be that Zhang Tianyi is the strongest person in the young generation?”

Seeing Chu Feng who was being continuously pushed back in the air, everyone was stunned because they could feel Zhang Tianyi's current strong power. It could be said that Zhang Tianyi's made many people on scene convinced.

Even many people who leaned towards Chu Feng currently felt that Zhang Tianyi's strength was superior. After all, the battle power Zhang Tianyi showed at present was really too strong. It was something that many people hadn't seen before.

As for the people who originally leaned towards Zhang Tianyi, their faces were even fuller of smug, and felt that for this battle, Zhang Tianyi was undoubtedly going to win.

# Chapter 545 - Gradual Strengthening Secret Skill

MGA: Chapter 545 - Gradual Strengthening Secret Skill

In the sky, Zhang Tianyi became stronger and stronger. The flames that originally surged everywhere actually became an endlessly burning blue-coloured armor that covered his body. Even the Divine Wood Sword in his hand was wrapped by the blue-coloured flames.

At that very instant, he was like a battle god formed by blue-coloured flames. He was both handsome and mighty, and extremely overbearing as well.

“This Zhang Tianyi is so powerful. He actually grasps such powerful methods.” In reality, not only the observing people, even the people from the Jiang Dynasty expressed admiration towards Zhang Tianyi’s strength.

“This type of strong power... Could it be that Zhang Tianyi is truly a Divine Body?” Some people even suspected what Zhang Tianyi had was a Divine Body.

“This is Forbidden Mysterious Technique.” Suddenly, the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor spoke.

“Father, what he cultivated truly is a Forbidden Mysterious Technique? Can such strong power truly be obtained by a Forbidden Mysterious Technique?” The Jiang Dynasty’s emperor asked with shock.

Actually, he had once suspected what Zhang Tianyi cultivated possibly was the Forbidden Mysterious Technique, and in reality, he had also seen some people who cultivated the Forbidden Mysterious Technique, yet not a single one could cultivate to such a perfect state like Zhang Tianyi.

And exactly also because of the perfection, it made him feel doubt. Doubt that the power Zhang Tianyi used wasn't from a Forbidden Mysterious Technique.

“It should be a Forbidden Mysterious Technique. However, the power of this Forbidden Mysterious Technique has been very thoroughly grasped by him.”

“He's not simple, not simple! This child is truly not simple. It is also the first time that I've seen a person able to so perfectly grasp the Forbidden Mysterious Technique. No wonder even Jiang Wushang could not defeat him.” The Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor firmly said. At the same time, on his face, he also wore an amazed expression.

Because, Forbidden Mysterious Techniques were not something that normal people could cultivate. After all, they were techniques that allowed one to gain power comparable to the powers from Divine Bodies.

If everyone could cultivate them, then there would be no weak people in the world. So, Forbidden Mysterious Techniques were extremely difficult to cultivate, and many people would die just as they started.

Even if there were people who succeeded in cultivating it, they could not completely grasp the strong power of the Forbidden Mysterious Technique. So, it was very difficult to avoid receiving restrictions on the powers gained from Forbidden Mysterious Techniques.

Moreover, there was a difference in strength for Forbidden Mysterious Techniques, and the one Zhang Tianyi grasped was clearly a very powerful one. But the more powerful the Forbidden Mysterious Technique got, the harder it was to control.

Being able to grasp such a powerful Forbidden Mysterious Technique so perfectly also showed Zhang Tianyi's own strong strength. So, that was why despite Jiang Wushang lost to Zhang Tianyi, it caused the Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor to feel that it was reasonable, because Zhang Tianyi was truly very strong.

“I never would have thought that Zhang Tianyi would be this strong. I truly don’t know how Chu Feng will handle this.”

“Or does it mean that Zhang Tianyi is truly superior to Chu Feng?” After hearing the words of the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor, everyone looked at Zhang Tianyi in another light, and felt that that child was truly not a simple character.

They even felt if Zhang Tianyi wasn’t covered by Chu Feng’s radiance, if Chu Feng didn’t exist, perhaps he would be the most blinding existence in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

“Hmph. This brat Zhang Tianyi does indeed have some skill, but that’s already his strongest method, yet my brother has yet to use his full strength. If my brother uses everything he has, Zhang Tianyi will doubtlessly be defeated.” The Monstrous Monkey King fiercely glared at the crowd, as if ridiculing their ignorance.

As for the Azure Dragon Founder, with light smile on his face, he looked at the sky, did not speak, but his gaze locked onto Chu Feng’s body.

“Junior Chu Feng, don’t hold anything back. Use the lightning you grasp to finish this fight off.” Suddenly, Zhang Tianyi sent a mental message and said.

“Dammit. This brat is quite full of himself! Chu Feng, don’t give him any face! Use your lightning power, raise your cultivation to the 6th level of the Heaven realm, and press this brat into the ground with a single finger. Let’s see if he dares to be full of himself then.” Eggy’s little face reddened completely as she furious howled.

To Eggy’s words, Chu Feng only lightly smiled. If he used the lightning power in his body and raised his cultivation, naturally, he could easily defeat the current Zhang Tianyi. Even if he used a single golden lightning he could win.

However, he did not want to do that. He wanted to have a comparison of strength with his own methods when they were both in the same level of



cultivation because he felt that only then could the clash be fair.

“Senior Zhang, I will not use the lightning power to raise my cultivation, but similarly, I will not hold anything back. I will fight against you with my full strength.”

Chu Feng wore a smile on his face, but his gaze became serious. Suddenly, with a thought, a layer of faint-green gas burst out of his body. Moreover, it started to rapidly change, and at the end, became a circular faint-green screen of light.

And on top of the screen of light, a picture was engraved. It was a very strange monster, and the reason why that was said was because the monster was a huge tortoise, but on its body, there was even a large snake twisting around it. It was as though the two were one, and it was extremely horrifying.

The most important thing was that the picture was not only a picture. It even had two pairs of blood-red eyes as well, and furthermore, the two pairs of eyes were turning. They first looked at Zhang Tianyi, they actually looked at the crowd below. Furthermore, when its feet moved, it actually started to walk within the circular screen of light. Not only was the monster a picture, it was truly an entity that had a spiritual nature.

“Heavens, what is that? Not only does it have such a real spiritual nature, it is actually emitting such indestructible power?”

At that instant, everyone was dumbfounded. There were dumbfounded by Chu Feng’s Black Tortoise Armor Technique because not only did they see the shield which was so strange it had a spiritual nature, they even felt indestructibility within the shield.

\*roar~~~~~\*

Quickly after, Chu Feng opened his arms, then a roar actually sounded out. But the thing that made people most shocked was that within Chu Feng’s arms, white-coloured radiance actually extended outwards.

Finally, the white-coloured radiance charged out of the Black Tortoise Armor Technique and became two huge monster paws. Every single one was dozens of meters long, and even the claws were several meters long, as if they were huge sickles.

And those with sharp eyes could tell that they were not the claws of a monster, but two claws of a white tiger. Because of the white fur that gave off a gleam and the jet-black tiger stripes, it showed that it was undoubtedly a white tiger.

However, they didn't dare to be sure because not only were the two white tiger claws huge, they even emanated a horrifying aura that could rip through everything, as if nothing could stop their attacks.

“What martial skill is actually this powerful? In my life, I have never seen such a terrifying martial skill.” Everyone was stupefied by the Chu Feng's Black Tortoise Armor Technique and his White Tiger Slaughtering Technique because as the two of them gave off an offensive and defensive aura, they were similarly matchlessly powerful.

# Chapter 546 - The Winner and Loser Revealed

MGA: Chapter 546 - The Winner and Loser Revealed

\*ao~~~~~\*

But just as people felt endlessly shocked towards Chu Feng's change, another ear-piercing sound rang out. It was actually a dragon's roar.

And after that dragon's roar resounded, almost everyone on scene had their eyes widened and their tongues tied, being dumbstruck. They were stunned by the scene in the sky.

Because, at that instant, under Chu Feng's feet, a huge azure dragon actually appeared. That huge dragon's eyes glowed with red light, and its dragon's tail swayed.

The dragon whiskers, the dragon horn, the dragon scale, the dragon claw, as well as the incomparably noble atmosphere. It made many people firmly believe it was a true dragon.

“Heavens! Exactly what martial skill is that? It can actually summon a real dragon?”

“Too terrifying. I never would have thought that Chu Feng actually grasps such powerful methods.”

“No wonder. No wonder he could flip several big powers upside down back then. I never would have thought that he has already increased his strength to this state.”

Seeing the real dragon in the sky, everyone was stunned because for Chu Feng who already had a powerful atmosphere, after the azure dragon appeared under his feet, he was many times stronger. It could be said that

in terms of aura, Chu Feng already suppressed Zhang Tianyi's blue-coloured flames that covered the sky.

Indeed, when the current Chu Feng stood on the body of a huge dragon, with the black tortoise armor surrounding his body, and both of his hands forming white tiger claws, he was simply a battle god who had unstoppable might. As long as a person glanced at him, they would, involuntarily, feel respect and fear towards him.

And the reason why the Black Tortoise Armor Technique, Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, and White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, which Chu Feng currently grasped, had their current transformations was because along with Chu Feng entering the Heaven realm, the power of the Secret Skills also increased.

According to Chu Feng's estimations, if one day, he truly reached a certain state in strength, he could even summon the four Secret Skills from his body and they would help Chu Feng fight with their own awarenesses. To be brief, Secret Skills were indeed extremely powerful because they transformed along with their master's strength. That point was something martial skills could never be compared to.

"Senior Zhang, let me use this state to finish off this round." Chu Feng lightly smiled and said to Zhang Tianyi.

"Hahaha, good good good! I didn't expect that Junior Chu Feng's Secret Skills have strengthened to this state, already not inferior to the Mysterious Technique I grasp."

At that instant, Zhang Tianyi was also incomparably excited. He first loudly laughed excitedly, then quickly after, the Divine Wood Sword in his hand rapidly waved, creating several blue-coloured flames and blades of light, and they flew towards Chu Feng.

The blades of light that the Divine Wood Sword sent out were already powerful. At present, the power of the blue-coloured flames was added, so it was even more frightening. As the blades of light flew through the sky, even the air was cut open by them. It was extremely terrifying.

“Heh.” However, facing the blades of light Zhang Tianyi sent out, Chu Feng only lightly smiled, then with a thought, the huge azure dragon under his feet became mist, and quickly after, a violent gust suddenly rushed up, and Chu Feng had disappeared.

\*ao~~~\*

Suddenly, a dragon’s roar rang out, and Chu Feng had already appeared behind Zhang Tianyi. With the three Secret Skills’ might, he pressed towards Zhang Tianyi.

\*whoosh whoosh whoosh\*

Seeing that, Zhang Tianyi also did not panic, and did not dodge. He waved the Divine Wood Sword in his hand again, and several blades of light in half-moon shapes flew towards Chu Feng once again.

\*roar~~~\*

However, this time, Chu Feng did not choose to dodge. Rather, he waved both of his arms abruptly, and slammed the two huge white tiger claws together.

When the two white tiger claws were slammed together, a deafening tiger’s roar instantly resounded. At the same time, layers of white-coloured symbol undulations were continuously sent out.

When the white-coloured symbols undulations interweaved with the blades of light which the Divine Wood Sword sent out, the blades of light actually shattered like a mirror piece, then became strands of blue-coloured gas, dispersing in the air.

The originally extremely terrifying blades of light were actually unable to fight against the symbol undulations. The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique was truly peerless in offensive strength.

And after dispersing the blades of light, not only did the attacking might of the symbol undulations not diminish, instead, they became stronger and

stronger, and were heading towards Zhang Tianyi and slamming down.

“Such powerful methods! So this is a Secret Skill?!” Seeing that scene, Zhang Tianyi also tightly frowned as he became aware of the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique’s powerful strength.

“Haa!” But Zhang Tianyi did not give up because of that. Instead, he furiously howled towards the sky, then the blue-coloured flames covering his entire body burst out like an exploding volcano, and like a huge blue-coloured wave of flames, it counter-pressed towards Chu Feng’s White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

\*boom rumble rumble rumble rumble\*

Finally, within the deafening rumbling, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique collided into the blue-coloured flames.

Quickly after, the boundless blue-coloured flames and the white-coloured symbol undulations melded together, formed a circular shape, and like a shock wave, engulfed outwards.

“This is bad!”

Seeing that, the face of the Azure Dragon Founder, who was calm from start to finish, changed greatly because the ripple that the two created was really too terrifying. If it exploded downwards, it would definitely blow up the mountain range and cause countless people to lose their lives.

\*whoosh\*

So, he hurriedly stood up, waved his big sleeve, causing a boundless purple-coloured Spirit Formation to engulf outwards with him as the center.

The Spirit Formation’s speed of creation was very fast. In almost an instant, it already shaped and covered the sky above the Azure Dragon School.

“Heavens! What is happening?!” Seeing the purple-coloured Spirit Formation covering the sky, many people were endlessly shocked and simply did not know what it was.

Only the Monstrous Monkey King and the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor knew that it was a purple-coloured Spirit Formation. In reality, after the Azure Dragon Founder was resurrected, he already grasped the power of a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

But at that instant, even if it was the Monstrous Monkey King and the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor, great characters who were similarly also Purple-cloak World Spiritists, were stunned by the Azure Dragon Founder’s methods.

In only a blink, he laid a Spirit Formation that covered the sky. That method was at least something they could not do. So, they couldn’t help but sigh in admiration towards the strong power of a Martial Lord.

\*boom rumble rumble rumble rumble\*

And just at that time, the horrifying ripples formed by the blue-coloured flames and symbols interweaving already crashed down, and collided into the purple-coloured Spirit Formation.

Although the Spirit Formation blocked it, people were still able to clearly feel the earth under their feet intensely trembling once.

And outside of the Spirit Formation, the trembling was clearly more horrifying. Although a surging terrifying ripple could only be seen outside of the Spirit Formation, just by looking at the ripple, everyone was able to imagine what kind of destruction the sky over there was.

“So powerful. So this is the strongest in the young generation? This battle power can simply destroy a sect easily. It is too powerful. They are really too powerful.” People were dumbstruck by the scene in the sky.

Even if it was the Azure Dragon Founder, he couldn’t help saying a low voice as well, “The battle power of these two is truly not simple. But,

victory and defeat should be revealed right?”



# Chapter 547 - Preparing to Depart

MGA: Chapter 547 - Preparing to Depart

The rumbling in the sky persisted for a very long time. The ripples which were like huge waves and fierce beasts going wild started to gradually dissipate after a long time.

But the Azure Dragon Founder was very careful. He kept the purple-coloured Spirit Formation open and used it to defend against the wild ripples in the sky, deeply afraid that the ripples would come down and harm the people on scene.

Only until the horrifying ripples completely disappeared and became rolling white mist and dense smoke did he put away the Spirit Formation.

At that instant, everyone was tightly staring at the sky, their eyes filled with excitement and expectation.

And while being watched by the stares, which were full of expectation, finally, within the diluting mist, they finally found Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi.

“This... What is this situation?”

“They... Who won and who lost? Could it be that it’s a tie?!”

However, as their bodies completely appeared, everyone was astounded by the scene in the sky. Quickly after, on the crowd’s faces, expressions of bewilderment and puzzledness emerged.

Because, in the sky, Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi already put away the Secret Skill and blue-coloured flames. The two of them returned to their normal appearances.

But similarly, their clothes were complete, and there was not the slightest bit of damage. So, that was why people were so bewildered because looking at their state, they had clearly stopped the spar, yet based off of their outer appearances, it was impossible to see who won and who lost.

“Junior Chu Feng, thank you for your kind intentions, but I lost, so I lost. Just now, if you didn’t hold back, right now, I would have been heavily injured.” Suddenly, Zhang Tianyi spoke. He wore a faint, light smile on his face. It was a smile of gratitude.

“Senior Zhang, you...” Seeing that, Chu Feng originally wanted to say some more, but after looking at Zhang Tianyi’s expression, Chu Feng also understood his intentions so he no longer urged.

Just now, the two of them used their powerful methods to undergo the final clash. However, ultimately, Zhang Tianyi still lost. His Forbidden Mysterious Technique, the blue-coloured flames that surrounded his body, lost to Chu Feng’s three Secret Skills.

But, in the moment when everything hung by a thread, Chu Feng held back. As for why Chu Feng held back, Zhang Tianyi understood clearly.

It was intentional. Chu Feng intentionally gave Zhang Tianyi space to stand on the stage. Chu Feng wanted to end the spar as a tie. Zhang Tianyi was very grateful for Chu Feng’s actions because he knew that Chu Feng truly took him as a brother. Otherwise, with Chu Feng’s nature, he would have definitely not done that.

But, the more it was like that, the more he had to give Chu Feng fairness. So, he swept his gaze to the crowd below, and with a light smile on his face, he loudly said, “For this spar, it is I, Zhang Tianyi, who have lost, and I have lost very convincingly. Junior Chu Feng is indeed superior to me. He is above me.”

“What? It’s Zhang Tianyi who has lost?”

Hearing those words, at first, many people still felt disbelief, but after seeing Zhang Tianyi’s and Chu Feng’s relieved expressions, they believed.

They could already tell that Zhang Tianyi's lost, and indeed, he lost very convincingly.

Facing that result, it was within some people's expectation, whereas others felt endlessly shocked. But no matter what, they had an entirely new understanding of Chu Feng's strength.

Along with the ending of Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi's spar, the Azure Dragon School's opening ceremony also officially started. However, in ceremony, what everyone had their deepest impressions on was the spar between Zhang Tianyi and Chu Feng.

That spar caused almost everyone there to feel shocked. Moreover, it made them strongly remember that Chu Feng was the strongest person in the continent of the Nine Provinces' young generation. No one dared to doubt that anymore.

After the opening ceremony, Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang prepared to head towards the Eastern Sea Region.

Because, calculating the time, there was only three months to the day that the Four Seas Academy accepted disciples.

Although Chu Feng and the others were currently in the Heaven realm and their speeds were extremely quick, they still had to leave quickly or else if the date was missed, they had to wait for another year.

At present, everything was prepared. Within a plaza in the Azure Dragon School, people formed mountains and oceans. They came to send Chu Feng and the others off.

And in the center of the palace, a huge silver-white chariot was placed there. That chariot was extremely eye-grabbing, and almost became the current focus of everyone.

“Brother Wushang, your chariot is this big, so there's definitely a decrease in speed right? Can a chariot like this arrive at the Four Seas Academy within three months? From what I see, it's better to rely on our own

strengths to hurry. It should be faster that way.” Seeing the chariot in front of his eyes, Zhang Tianyi murmured.

Because, the chariot in front of his eyes was very big, and very luxurious. Rather than saying it was a chariot, why not say it was a moving small-scale palace?

But if there were benefits, they were detriments. Although a chariot like that was indeed very comfortable when it was used to travel, it would be hard to avoid a decrease in speed. So, he was afraid that there wasn't enough time.

“Brother Tianyi, don't worry. My chariot here is the most precious Elite Armament in my Jiang Dynasty. There is no stronger one.”

“The reason why it is so precious is not because how much power it has, but because it has extremely quick speed.”

“Although its speed can perhaps not be discussed equally with the Secret Skill Brother Chu Feng grasp, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, but with our strengths, if we taking turns channeling power into it, within three months, we will definitely arrive at the Eastern Sea Region.” Jiang Wushang said on the side.

“So it's like that.” Only after hearing those words did Zhang Tianyi relievedly nod. He also knew that there were different types of Elite Armaments, and there were indeed some Elite Armaments that had an extremely minuscule effect when used in battle, but had very strong support effects.

“That's right. Brother Tianyi, where's Brother Chu Feng? Why hasn't he come yet?” Jiang Wushang curiously asked because everything was prepared right now. They lacked only Chu Feng, and when he came, they could head towards the Eastern Sea Region.

“He...still has some people he cannot let go of.” Zhang Tianyi helplessly sighed.

“Ahh~~~” At the same time, Chu Yue, Chu Guyu, Li Zhangqing, the Azure Dragon Founder, and the others close to Chu Feng couldn’t help sighing longly. More or less, a hint of helplessness emerged onto their faces because they knew that within the continent of the Nine Provinces, there were indeed two people who Chu Feng was worried about and couldn’t let go.

Although at present, the Emperor Tomb changed and the Emperor Tomb entrance at the Azure Dragon Mountain Range was already closed, because the Thousand Bone Graveyard was created by the Azure Dragon Founder, naturally, it still existed. It just didn’t connect to the Emperor Tomb.

And within the Thousand Bone Graveyard, the Spirit Formation sealing Su Rou and Su Mei was still flowing. The two of them peacefully laid within. Their faces were reddish, they were full of spirit, and even their auras reached the 9th level of the Profound realm. But sadly, from start to finish, they had been in deep sleep, and hadn’t been able to reawaken.

“Little Rou, Little Mei, while in deep sleep. I truly feel happy for you two when I can see your strengths becoming stronger as you receive the nourishment of the mysterious pearls.”

“I truly want to watch over you two like this every day, but I cannot.”

“Right now, I have a very important thing to do. This relates to Zi Ling’s life, and it also relates to my ancestry. So, I have no choice but to leave.” Chu Feng sat in front of the Spirit Formation, and as he looked at Su Rou and Su Mei inside, he faintly smiled, but his smile was filled with unwillingness.

# Chapter 548 - Smile of Happiness

MGA: Chapter 548 - Smile of Happiness

“Little Rou, Little Mei, look. These are the presents I prepared for you two.”

Chu Feng took out two long skirts out from his Cosmos Sack. One was light-green and embroidered by willow leaves, the other was pink with peach blossoms.

They were not two simple skirts. Both of them were surrounded by faint green light and pink light respectively. Moreover, huge pressure was hidden within them, as they were both Elite Armaments.

Chu Feng obtained them from the Ji Dynasty. After returning from the Ji Dynasty, Chu Feng gave a lot of the treasures to Chu Yue and the other family members. However, as for the two beautiful skirts, he left them for Su Rou and Su Mei.

“These are specially prepared for you. I felt that the green-coloured one is more suitable for Little Rou, as it can emphasize your mature demeanor. The pink-coloured is more suitable for Little Mei, as it can emphasize your liveliness.”

“I believe if you two wear these two skirts, both of you will definitely be very beautiful because both of you have always been beautiful, no matter what you wear.”

“I... really want to personally see what you two look like after wearing them.”

Speaking to that point, Chu Feng's voice became a bit choked and even his eyes reddened.

It's said that the only reason why boys have tears but do not easily cry is because their hearts hadn't been wounded yet.

Facing his two lovers, who almost lost their lives because of himself, had currently slept for a full two years, and it was unknown how much longer they were going to sleep for, the guilt in Chu Feng's heart kept on torturing him. That kind of pain was very stabbing.

"Wait for me. I will return. At that time, if you reawaken, I will come to bring you away." Finally, Chu Feng said those words with a face full of unwillingness. He did not cry, because he didn't want to cry in front of his own lovers.

He had to be strong. Only by being strong could he endure even more, because he was fated to have many burdens.

So, after shooting another glance of deep emotions and reluctance at the two beauties Su Rou and Su Mei, only then did he stand up, turn around, and prepare to leave.

\*hmm~~~~\* But, just as Chu Feng walked for a short distance, blinding radiance suddenly came from behind.

Turning his head to look, Chu Feng's expression couldn't help but change because he astonishedly discovered that within the originally stable and spiraling Spirit Formation, two layers of horrifying power actually surged currently.

One layer was a scorching flame, the other was fierce ice. The two interweaved together, formed an extremely frenzied body of energy, and was slamming into the purple-coloured Spirit Formation.

"What is happening?!" Seeing that scene, Chu Feng instantly panicked because his first thought was that the already stable Ice and Fire Pearls lost control again.

But those pearls were not something he could control. So, at that instant, the first thing Chu Feng did was turn around, leave, wanting to ask for help

from the Azure Dragon Founder.

\*boom\* But just as Chu Feng turned around, a deafening explosion suddenly rang out from behind. Turning his head to look, his face even changed greatly because the power interwoven by the flames and ice already broke open the Spirit Formation, extended out, and filled the entire room.

“Crap.” Facing that situation, Chu Feng was already unable to leave because he felt that if the pearls thoroughly lost control, Su Rou and Su Mei were going face a disaster.

Not only would they become puppets, they would even be directly engulfed. So, he could not leave just like that. Even if he put his life on the line, he had to do something to fight for a strand of hope for Su Rou and Su Mei.

\*hmm\* However, just as Chu Feng wanted to use a Spirit Formation to attempt to seal the flames and ice, the destructive flames and ice actually started to shrink back.

At the end, the two types of power, the flames and ice, not only did they split, they even became two figures, and those two figures were exactly Su Rou and Su Mei.

However, at that instant, within Su Rou’s beauty, there was an extra tiny trace of coldness, and within Su Mei’s sweetness, there was also an extra trace of fieriness.

The most important part was that their current auras were actually no longer in the Profound realm, but in the Heaven realm. The two of them already stepped into the 2nd level of the Heaven realm.

“Chu Feng!” After Su Rou and Su Mei saw Chu Feng, on their faces of exceptional beauty, they both revealed enchanting smiles.

After the call filled with joy and excitement, the two of them leaped, and went up to Chu Feng. At the same time, they jumped into Chu Feng’s



embrace and hugged Chu Feng on both the left and right, unwilling to let go. They used their little faces to tightly stick to Chu Feng's chest, to hear the long-awaited heartbeat and to feel the warmth.

“Little Rou, Little Mei, you two, you two are fine?” And seeing the two beauties in his embrace, Chu Feng was taken aback, and felt that it was extremely inconceivable.

The two lovers he had longed for day and night for two years but had yet to awaken actually woke up at that time. It caused Chu Feng to not know what to do, and it was even hard to believe.

“Chu Feng, let's go. I want to go to the Eastern Sea Region with you. I want take back Zi Ling together with you. She belongs to you, and only to you.” Suddenly, Su Mei raised her sweet and youthful little face and said to Chu Feng while being full of seriousness.

“What, this, Little Mei, you...” However, Chu Feng, who already didn't know what to do, after hearing Su Mei's words, was even more stupefied. He thought in his heart, how did she know about the Eastern Sea Region? Could it be...

“Chu Feng, although I have been in deep slumber for such a long period of time, I was able to clearly hear everyone's laughters and conversations.”

“So, I know everything that happened in this period of time, and I believe that Little Mei is the same as me right?” Just at that time, Su Rou's pair of water-like big eyes lightly blinked, and she revealed an understanding smile. As she spoke, she looked at her own younger sister, Su Mei.

“Yeah. I am the same. Although I was always in deep sleep, I was able to hear your conversations.”

“So, I already know what you did and who you met during the period of time we were in deep sleep.”

“Chu Feng, bring us to the Eastern Sea Region. Right now, we are no longer the girls who were nothing but hindrances.”

“I seemed to have already completely grasped the power of this Flaming Pearl. To be honest, even I’m a bit afraid of the power currently flowing in my body.”

“I, right now, will absolutely not become your burden. I am able to help you out. Bring me with you, I want to help you take back Zi Ling.” Su Mei pouted her little mouth, grabbed Chu Feng’s hand, and endlessly shook it as she asked like a pampered child.

“Little Mei, you, this...” At that instant, Chu Feng was truly a bit confused because the arrival of happiness came too suddenly.

Not only did Su Rou and Su Mei awake one after the other, they even grasped the strong power from the two pearls. Chu Feng was able to feel their current powerful strengths. Putting aside cultivation, purely in terms of battle power, it was likely that they weren’t inferior to himself.

Chu Feng paid so much hard work, experienced so many difficulties, and charged past so many life and death situations in order to gain his current cultivation and methods.

But Su Rou and Su Mei on the other hand, they only slept deeply for two years and gained the power they had. Although during that period, the two of them also received painful suffering, it had to be said that they truly gained good things from a disaster.

What was

luck? Now this was truly luck. The so-called luck Chu Feng met before was simply fart when compared to them.

But what Chu Feng was the most happy about was not that. It was that Su Rou and Su Mei, in the two years, actually stayed awake from start to finish, and heard the words they said.

Not only did they know about Zi Ling’s matters, they did not have the slightest bit of jealousy nor egoism. They had actually went up and asked

to go with Chu Feng together to take Zi Ling back. That truly made Chu Feng feel incomparably happy.

“Chu Feng, Zi Ling is a good lady. Although we were unable to see her, Little Mei and I have heard the conversations between you two. She was concerned about us, and I’m sure that’s because of you. We are concerned about her, and that’s also because of you.”

“We sisters are the same as Lady Zi Ling. As long as you can be happy, we are willing to do anything for you.”

“Bring us as well to the Eastern Sea Region.” Just at that time, Su Rou also spoke. Moreover, on her beautiful face, she even wore an expression of firm decisiveness.

“Chu Feng, bring us there.” At the same time, Su Mei also requested with her sweet voice.

And facing the two beauties who were so close to him, Chu Feng really did not know how to show his feelings with words. So, he did not waste his breath, opened both his arms, tightly hugged the two beauties, and said with a light smile, “Sure!”

# Chapter 549 - Pulse Searching Method

MGA: Chapter 549 - Pulse Searching Method

“Big Brother Tianyi, how about you go call for Big Brother Chu Feng? The sky’s going to be dark soon.” Jiang Wushang said a bit worriedly.

“Yeah! This time, you will all soon begin a long trek, so you must select a fortuitous hour and day for departure to obtain great fortune. It will truly be a shame if you were to let today’s chance pass.” In reality, even many other people started to feel anxious.

They had assembled there at dawn and prepared to send Chu Feng and the others off, yet now, the sun already started to set in the west, an entire day’s worth of time passed.

At present, the sky was turning black right in front of their eyes, so naturally, they were slightly unable to remain still.

“Ah Tianyi, go call for Chu Feng. Don’t let everyone wait for him.” Seeing all of that, the Azure Dragon Founder spoke as well.

“Mm.” After he spoke, Zhang Tianyi also nodded his head.

\*whoosh whoosh whoosh\*

But just at that moment, from the direction of the main palace, three rainbows appeared abruptly. Those three rainbows first stormed straight into the sky, but quickly after, like meteors, streaked down, and at the end, landed in the center of the square.

After the three rainbows landed, they became three figures. When their faces could be seen clearly, all of the people at that place were taken aback.

Especially the ones who were close to Chu Feng. Even their mouths widened greatly, their faces showing ecstatic expressions quickly after

The three people were precisely Chu Feng, Su Rou, and Su Mei.

At that very instant, the two beauties, who had their own special traits, already wore the two skirts Chu Feng gifted to them. Their beauty was embellished by the Elite Armament skirts, making them appear even more bewitching.

As for Chu Feng, he stood in between the two of them, his two hands unrestrainedly over their soft

things

. He said to the crowd, “Everyone, please excuse me, I’ve come late.”

“Little Rou, Little Mei, you’re awake, you’re awake!”

At that moment, a middle-aged man suddenly dashed up to Su Rou and Su Mei, bawling with snot and tears. That person was none other than Su Rou and Su Mei’s father.

“This is great, this is great! Sisters, you two are finally awake!” Quickly after, Su Rou and Su Mei’s elder brother and his wife also ran over. Seeing their family, Su Rou and Su Mei were very touched as well.

In reality, seeing the two of them reawaken, those who recognized them were all very happy. No matter how they reawakened, from the bottom of their hearts, they felt happy for them and Chu Feng.

Of course, some were happy, and some were puzzled as well. After all, not everyone knew about Su Rou and Su Mei.

For example, Jiang Wushang. Currently, fog filled up his head, so he patted Zhang Tianyi’s shoulder and asked quietly, “Big Brother Tianyi, who are these two beauties? Why do they seem so intimate with Big Brother Chu Feng? Even their cultivation isn’t weak.”

“Heh, I almost forgot. You still don’t know about them.” In regards to that, Zhang Tianyi smiled faintly, and then simply explained to Jiang Wushang the relationship between Su Rou, Su Mei, and Chu Feng, as well as what happened between them.

And after knowing everything, the gaze Jiang Wushang looked at Chu Feng with contained only one word: admiration. At the same time, he couldn’t help exclaiming, “Big Brother Chu Feng, your luck with beauty runs deep!”

“Ah, Chu Feng! The time is late. It is better to depart early.” The Azure Dragon Founder had no choice but to urge them as he saw the sun, which already descended halfway down the western mountains.

“Mm.” Hearing that, Chu Feng nodded his head, then quickly after, went up to Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang, and said, “Senior Zhang, Brother Wushang, Little Rou and Little Mei also want to head to the Eastern Sea Region along with us. Can they?”

“Of course they can.” Without even thinking Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang nodded their heads and agreed.

Jiang Wushang even took the initiative to open the Elite Armament chariot’s door, pulled Chu Feng into it, and said to him, “Big Brother Chu Feng, this Elite Armament is not for battle, but for journeying. There is no difference between this and a palace. Not only is its speed strangely fast, it is very comfortable living inside as well.”

“There’s exactly three rooms in here. The biggest room over there was originally for my own use because I like sleeping on large beds, but now, I’ll give it to you. Hehe, relish it well! Hehehe...” As his voice faded away, a hint of lasciviousness even appeared on the corners of Jiang Wushang’s mouth as he smiled.

Chu Feng calmly smiled as he faced Jiang Wushang who acted like that, then said in a low voice, “Brother Wushang, good job.”

Thus, just like that, Chu Feng, Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang, the five of them, rode on that Elite Armament chariot, and departed from the continent of the Nine Provinces, heading towards the Four Seas Academy in the Eastern Sea Region.

“I truly don’t know what accomplishments these children will achieve in that sea region.” Seeing the Elite Armament chariot that disappeared on the horizon in a blink, the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor felt rather despondent.

“Don’t worry. These children’s abilities all surpass me by a huge margin. Even if it’s the Eastern Sea Region, they will definitely have a certain amount of achievements.” The Azure Dragon Founder calmly smiled and said.

Hearing the Azure Dragon Founder’s words, everyone also smiled relievedly. It was really not only he who had such thoughts, but everyone as well.

Elite Armaments. At the end, it’s still a tool, so if one wants it to move, they must use their cultivator’s power to spur it forward. The stronger the power of the one who spurs it, the speed it moves becomes quicker.

This Elite Armament is the same. In order to more quickly reach the Eastern Sea Region and arrive at the Four Seas Academy, it required the circulatory propulsion of Chu Feng and the others, constant travelling through day and night.

However, because of the special relationship between Chu Feng and Su Rou and Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang themselves requested the mission of urging the Elite Armament forward to be covered by them two. It would be sufficient for Chu Feng to put his focus on accompanying Su Rou and Su Mei well.

At first, Chu Feng still felt rather bad. After all, the road was far. Chu Feng really felt ashamed to let only the two of them drive the Elite Armament forward.

But when he saw Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang's firm stance, Chu Feng gave up, and at the end, said only a sentence.

Good brothers need no explanation.

So, Chu Feng was able to concentrate on being with the two sisters Su Rou and Su Mei and enjoy the beautiful scenery on the road while being in the Elite Armament. That feeling of happiness really made Chu Feng feel extreme rapture.

However, when it was deep in the night, when all of them should have been asleep, a scene that Chu Feng could do nothing about occurred.

Chu Feng, who was initially lying perfectly fine on the bed next to the sisters, was heartlessly kicked onto the ground by Su Rou. Moreover, she flashed a warm smile, then said to Chu Feng, "Before marriage, don't even think of committing immoral acts towards me and my sister."

"Little Rou, don't do this! The ground is cold!" Chu Feng's face was filled with appeal, but as it did nothing to Su Rou, he could only cast his pleading gaze towards Su Mei.

However, Su Mei also sweetly smiled, and said "She's right" before quickly pulling down the canopies, thoroughly excluding Chu Feng from the large bed.

"Sigh." Seeing the canopies that already blocked his vision, Chu Feng sighed helplessly, but very quickly, his face brimmed with a hint of a joyful smile.

In reality, Chu Feng had never planned to commit any indecent acts to Su Rou and Su Mei. The two of them, being able to cheerfully jump around in front of him, Chu Feng already felt content.

"Chu Feng, right now, you are already a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, and you are also going to enter the Eastern Sea Region. I think it's time to teach you the Pulse Searching Method." But just as Chu Feng closed his eyes and prepared to sleep, Eggy's voice suddenly rang out.



# Chapter 550 - Deep and Profound

MGA: Chapter 550 - Deep and Profound

“Pulse Searching Method?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s grogginess immediately vanished.

A long time ago, Eggy had told him about the Pulse Searching Method. It was a special method that could search for Natural Oddities, myriads of mystical treasures, and cultivation resources.

However, cultivating that method was very troubling. In addition, the things Chu Feng needed to handle before never ended, so Eggy hadn’t mentioned that to Chu Feng.

Eggy didn’t mention, Chu Feng didn’t ask; but in reality, Chu Feng always had his mind on the Pulse Searching Method. At present, Eggy was finally willing to teach him that method, so of course, Chu Feng was very excited.

Thus, as he willed, he shot his awareness into his own Spiritual World and came inside the World Spirit Space.

Seeing Eggy who was coldly beautiful without detracting from cuteness, and cute without detracting from sweetness, Chu Feng grinned, chuckled, and said, “Eggy, you’re finally willing to teach me that Pulse Searching Method?”

“Chu Feng, listen carefully. This Pulse Searching Method is a method that normal World Spiritists are unable to grasp. Even above the ranks of Gold-cloak World Spiritists, there is almost no one who grasps this method.”

“It can be said to be a secret that hasn’t been passed down. The number of people who grasp this method is few within few. It is even more precious than your Secret Skill. If this gets known, it will definitely cause a bloody catastrophe to arise.” Eggy said.

“What? This Pulse Searching Method is something that normal World Spiritists cannot grasp, and it is actually that precious?!” Hearing those words, Chu Feng couldn’t help gulping, then curiously asked, “Eggy, where did you get such a thing? Could it be your Asura World Spirit’s unique method?!”

“Of course not. This Pulse Searching Method was created by a very mighty World Spiritist. I learnt it from a World Spirit senior who is even several times more powerful than me because this senior was the World Spirit of that mighty World Spiritist.” Eggy said.

“What? A senior even several times more powerful than you?” Being told that, Chu Feng was very startled. Before Eggy was sealed, she should have been already extremely strong. If so, what level of existence was the World Spirit even stronger than her?

“It’s a World Spirit that very few people dare to be disrespectful towards in the entire Asura Spirit World.” Mentioning that World Spirit, even on the face of the usual prideful Eggy emerged a hint of respect. From that, it could be seen that the World Spirit was truly extraordinary.

But what made Chu Feng even more amazed was the master of that World Spirit. If the World Spirit itself was already so powerful, what strength would the master of that World Spirit have?

“But Chu Feng, something I need to remind you beforehand. Although I know the cultivating method of this Pulse Searching Method, I do not know if it will be successful.”

“The only thing I can tell you is that this Pulse Searching Method is not easy to cultivate.”

“Hehe, in this world, what things are easy? Eggy, just tell me. What do I need to do?” Chu Feng indifferently smiled as he asked.

“The Pulse Searching Method requires one to cultivate three things. First, cultivation of the eye. Second, cultivation of the brain. Third, cultivation of the heart.”

“The cultivation of the eye can be said to be the critical juncture of the Pulse Searching Method because the method requires you to use your eyes to see everything, and eyes like those are called the Heaven’s Eyes.”

“Heaven’s Eyes?”

“That’s right. As long as you cultivate your eyes to the point where you see things that others cannot see, and notice things that others cannot notice, then you can say that you’ve grasped the early stage of the Heaven’s Eyes.”

“And cultivating the Heaven’s Eyes requires enormous Spirit power. The lowest standard is Spirit power that can use blue-coloured Spirit Formation power. That’s also why I had to wait until you were a Blue-cloak World Spiritist before willing to pass down the Pulse Searching Method.”

“Then what is cultivation of the brain?”

“Cultivation of the brain is the replenishment of your knowledge. Of the millions of things and organisms in this world, its rivers, streams, mountains, hills, there are truths to their existences. There are meanings in their shapes.”

“For example, a seemingly ordinary mountain range can possibly contain many peculiar objects; a seemingly ordinary book can possibly hide unseen artifacts.”

“However, no matter how much more special they are, ordinary people cannot see such things. However, if you have the Heaven’s Eyes, you can see their remarkability from their external shapes.”

“But if you needed to determine whether there are truly treasures hidden within, then you are required to grasp the related knowledge. I have here a chant. This chant records almost all geographical shapes of areas that conceal various Natural Oddities. As for how much you can comprehend from it, that will depend on yourself.”

“Regarding the cultivation of the heart, it is actually very simple.”

“For all things, if there are benefits, there are detriments. Danger always coexists with advantages. The greater the advantage, the greater the danger.”

“And after you grasp the Heaven’s Eyes as well as the knowledge related to the Pulse Searching Method, you will be able to dig out many buried oddities, or locations with treasures.”

“But you need to know that even though the things there can possibly turn you into a dragon, causing your cultivation to greatly soar, it can also evaporate all your work, killing you within.”

“When you discover a place that hides treasures, to enter or to not, and what to do after entering, all of that needs to be determined by your heart. A serene yet strong heart can always guard your life, and allow you to gain even more results.”

“Chu Feng, that’s the Pulse Searching Method. Simple when said, difficult when done. Are you certain you want to cultivate it?” Eggy, with her pair of slender brows and big eyes glittering in jet-black, she stared at Chu Feng solemnly. She was waiting for Chu Feng’s answer.

Confronting Eggy’s question, Chu Feng lightly smiled, and answered, “Of course I want to.”

After obtaining Chu Feng’s answer, the corners of Eggy’s mouth curved upwards, revealing a devastatingly beautiful smile because she precisely liked Chu Feng’s spirit of fearless adventuring.

From then on, Eggy told the three cultivation methods of the Pulse Searching Method to Chu Feng. The proverb “the master shows you the door, but you must walk through it” was very evidently shown in the Pulse Searching Method.

Eggy had also never truly seen a person cultivate the Pulse Searching Method, she only knew the method of cultivation, so she had no clue if he

could succeed or not, or how fast he could grasp it.

In reality, the Pulse Searching Method was truly very difficult to cultivate. It was so hard that even Chu Feng, who had extremely powerful comprehension power, had a muddled head and had to intensely study it word-by-word.

But, the more Chu Feng cultivated, the harder he worked; the more he cultivated, the more serious he became; the more he studied, the more absorbed he got into it.

It was because he discovered that the Pulse Searching Method was truly deep and profound, and he wondered what kind of divine being the creator was, actually being able to produce such a thing.

Putting all other aside, just the Pulse Searching Method's cultivation of the eye was an upgraded version of Spirit power.

If one were to succeed in learning the method, there would be no need to use Spirit power for detection. With merely a glance, they could see through everything that Spirit power could perceive.

Let's say it like this. If the cultivation of the Heaven's Eyes succeeds, Chu Feng would be able to see objects through walls. The so-called x-ray vision.

Reaching the later stages of cultivation, Chu Feng's pair of eyes would have savage destructive abilities. With a look, he could flatten mountains and evaporate lakes.

If he were to master it, he could see one's inner heart and soul, ascertain the evil and just; with only a glimpse, he could see through a person's nature, and possibly with only a look, he could force others to be submissive, and serve himself for their entire life.

# Chapter 551 - Luxurious Tavern

MGA: Chapter 551 - Luxurious Tavern

As for cultivation of the brain, it was even more impressive. The chant had no more than a hundred words yet contained the world's boundless mysteriousness. Just a single word encompassed many profound matters. However, as for how much he could understand from it, that relied solely on the cultivator's own comprehension strength.

In short, the Pulse Searching Method thoroughly engrossed Chu Feng because he felt if he were to completely grasp the Pulse Searching Method, in the future, he truly need not worry about any cultivation resources. Perhaps relying on the Pulse Searching Method, he would become a supreme expert because he felt hiddenly that the Pulse Searching Method seemed to conceal some divine secret.

So, Chu Feng's days were entirely cast into the cultivation of the Pulse Searching Method, and that lasted over two full months of time.

In two months, the Elite Armament chariot flew over innumerable deserts and plains, and rivers and lakes. They even flew past several small-scale sea regions.

And after two full months non-stop all-out hurrying, Chu Feng and the group finally entered the Eastern Sea Region.

“Chu Feng, Chu Feng!” At that instant, Chu Feng was currently in his room, painstakingly studying the Pulse Searching Method, but when Su Mei's beautiful and excited voice rang out without end, Chu Feng had no choice but to stop cultivating.

“Little Mei, what's the matter?” Opening his eyes, Chu Feng discovered that Su Mei and Su Rou, the two sisters, were standing in front of him presently. Moreover, sweet smiles were worn on their pretty little faces.

“Heh, quickly come, come and look! You’ll know when you see it!” Su Mei didn’t explain. She directly grabbed Chu Feng’s hand and pulled Chu Feng out.

After walking out of the room and coming up to the window, Chu Feng’s pupils couldn’t help shrinking abruptly before similarly his face brimmed with excited emotions.

Because, at that very instant, underneath the Elite Armament chariot, it was an edgeless and endless sea, but that sea was completely different from what Chu Feng saw before.

The seawater was azure, and large waves rose into the sky. Even the smallest were several meters tall, while the largest reached heights of several hundred meters. They were truly incomparably fierce.

At that very instant, despite standing within the Elite Armament chariot, Chu Feng was also able to hear the sounds of the waves, and the noises of the wind. A sea like that was absolutely not something ordinary people could survive in, and a region of sea like that was clearly the Eastern Sea Region.

“The Eastern Sea Region, completely boundless. Above this sea are only islands, but the sizes of these islands are over several times larger than the continent of the Nine Provinces.”

“The Eastern Sea Region, imperceptibly deep. From what I’ve heard, there lives within the bottom of the sea enormous and vicious sea creatures. There are even powerful Monstrous Beast species living deep under the sea for very long years.”

“Similarly, within the bottom of the sea, countless artifacts can be found, and the number of treasures is even immeasurable.” Jiang Wushang said on the side.

“It is indeed not simple. Entering this place is truly like coming to another world.” Chu Feng was quite amazed as well. It was as though he entered a new point in his life.

The Eastern Sea Region was very big. Even though the Four Seas Academy was located at a relatively eastern location, if they wanted to reach it, they still needed a few more days.

After roughly two weeks of rushing, an island finally appeared within their lines of sight, and on the island, finally, they saw traces of humans.

“Look! There’s a tavern ahead. Since we’re not far from the Four Seas Academy anyway, why not go down there and have a meal? Let’s check out how the Eastern Sea Region’s dishes taste like.”

Jiang Wushang pointed forward and loudly yelled out. Looking over at that direction, a very large tavern was indeed situated there. Many chariots and special horses halted outside. There were even Monstrous Beasts bound by Spirit Formation ropes.

Simultaneously, many figures were scuttling. Even though the distance was still very far, they could see that almost everyone there was a cultivator. Even many chariots were pulled by Monstrous Beasts.

How was that even like a tavern? It was simply like a small-scale city. At least, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, Chu Feng and the others had never seen a tavern of such magnitude. They had never seen so many cultivators gathered in a single tavern as well.

“Waa, there’s so many people! Let’s go down and have a look. After eating rations for so long, I also want to savor appetizing dishes.” At the same time, Su Rou also exclaimed with a face full of longing.

Seeing that, Zhang Tianyi who was currently responsible for urging the chariot forward looked at Chu Feng, and after seeing him nod his head, he willed, drove the chariot forward, and entered the vast tavern directly.

Following the entrance of the Elite Armament chariot, driven by Chu Feng and the others, into the tavern, the attention of quite a few people was aroused. After all, Elite Armaments were treasures. Even in the Eastern Sea Region, they were still priceless.



Especially when the Elite Armament chariot Chu Feng and the others sat in was extremely luxurious, naturally, it attracted some observers.

Even in the first instant, some people gave birth to malicious thoughts. Since this place wasn't within the borders of the Four Seas Academy, and it was located quite remotely, there would usually not be any investigations after an instance killing, robbing, and silencing via extermination. So, many criminals stood guard at a place like that, specializing in finding weak people for unlawful activities.

However, after Chu Feng and his group walked out of the Elite Armament chariot, the ones with malicious intentions couldn't help dispelling those thoughts.

Five young males and females. Three in the third level of the Heaven realm, two in the second level of the Heaven realm. That age. That strength. Even in the Eastern Sea Region, it was not weak in the slightest.

It was even to the extent that when some people saw Chu Feng and the others, they actually evaded hurriedly, a bit of fear emerging into their eyes.

Only some fearless people, who were attracted by Su Rou's and Su Mei's beauty, dared to shoot another glance.

But when they discovered that there was some aggravation within Chu Feng's and the others' gazes, they also quickly redirected their sight. As they smiled apologetically, they speedily left, deeply afraid being given a lesson by Chu Feng's group.

"It seems like no matter where, people still bully the kind and fear the evil." Seeing the crowd that surrounded with tiger-like stares yet rapidly withdrew after he displayed his strength, Zhang Tianyi smiled derisively.

"The weak are meat and the strong eat. That's the only rule of this world, without exception regardless of the place." Chu Feng also smiled.

“Guests, are you staying, or eating?” Just at that moment, a male dressed as a waiter ran over with a face of smiles.

But despite of that, even though it was a waiter’s attire, his clothing was many times more gorgeous than a waiter’s clothing in the continent of the Nine Provinces. He simply did not even seem like a commoner.

But the thing that shocked Chu Feng was that the waiter was actually a cultivator belonging to the Origin realm.

“So this is the Eastern Sea Region huh? Even a waiter has the cultivation in the Origin realm.” But at present, the one most astounded was none other than Su Mei.

It was because her initial cultivation was in the Origin realm. If the Pearl of Flames didn’t enter her body, perhaps she would still be in the Origin realm right now.

Yet, in the Eastern Sea Region, a lowly waiter who poured tea for others was quite unexpectedly also in the Origin realm. That really stunned her, and she even felt a bit of unfairness.

# Chapter 552 - Tianyi's Secret

MGA: Chapter 552 - Tianyi's Secret

“Heh, Lady Su Mei, you need to get used to this! This is only the Eastern Sea Region. I’ve heard in the Holy Land of Martialism, some Monstrous Beasts with noble bloodlines are born in the Profound realm!” Jiang Wushang hiddenly sent a mental message as he saw Su Mei’s stunned expression.

After hearing his words, Su Mei’s already shocked face became even more shocked because it was the first time she truly felt what “there’s a sky beyond a sky, and a person beyond a person” meant. It was not strange that the continent of the Nine Provinces was called a tiny place in the eyes of many experts.

However, even though it was the Eastern Sea Region and cultivators with decent cultivation were scattered everywhere, in actuality, there weren’t many people who stepped into the Heaven realm.

At least, within the several thousands of people in the luxurious tavern, there were no more than a hundred who were in the Heaven realm, and even of those who did, most of them were middle-aged uncles or aged people. There were very, very few people who were as young as Chu Feng and the others.

That was also why the appearance of Chu Feng and the others struck fear into so many people. They were not only afraid of their cultivation, they felt more strongly about there being an enormous power behind their backs.

After a short moment of sighing, they booked a fairly good room in the tavern. They were comfortably prepared to have a taste of the Eastern Sea Region’s delicious foods.

“Junior Chu Feng, I have something I want to discuss with you in private.” But just as they entered the room, Chu Feng received a mental message. Following along the sound and looking over, he saw Zhang Tianyi currently looking at himself with smiles.

“Go ahead and order some dishes. I’m going to take a leak.” In response, Chu Feng quickly stood up, and headed out.

“Junior Chu Feng, wait for me, I’m going as well!” Understanding, Zhang Tianyi also followed out.

\*wua\*

But just as they walked out of their booked room, there was rumbling like bursts of deafening thunder.

Gazing at that direction, they saw several extravagant chariots being pulled by Heaven realm Monstrous Beasts from the east. They travelling along in the air, and at the end, landed in the tavern.

After those chariots landed, several armoured men walked out of the chariot. There was thirty-eight of them, and they were all in the Heaven realm.

What surprised Chu Feng and the others the most was that the one who led was already in the fifth level of the Heaven realm, but the most significant thing was his age. It was similar to Zhang Tianyi’s; he was a young man.

The young man was clearly the leader in that group of people, and from his conversations to his subordinates, Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi also learnt their identity.

Like Jiang Wushang, they came from the east as well, from a place called the Shentu Dynasty. They were special people who had Inherited Bloodlines.

As for the young man with strength in the fifth level of the Heaven realm, his name was Shentu Lang. He was a prince of the Shentu Dynasty, and

was also preparing to enter the Four Seas Academy for cultivation.

They were the same as Chu Feng and the others. After such a long voyage, they saw this tavern, and decided to take a small break.

“Waa, a group of truly impressive characters came from this year’s Shentu Dynasty of the Eastern Continent!”

“Yeah. A few days ago, two Shentu Dynasty princes have already come from the Eastern Continent. They had the cultivation of the fourth level of the Heaven realm. That age, that cultivation; if they entered the Four Seas Academy, they will be able to receive focused development.”

“I didn’t expect the Shentu Dynasty to send some in the fifth level of the Heaven realm today. The Shentu Dynasty should be the strongest power in the Eastern Continent right?”

The appearance of Shentu Lang and the others drawn many people’s attention. Some of the surrounding observers even started to exclaim and discuss with low voices.

The Eastern Continent they mentioned was actually the place Chu Feng and the others came from. At that place, several continents were connected with one another, separated only by “rivers”. So, the entirety of the continents was called the Eastern Continent by the people of the Eastern Sea Region.

“The hell are you looking at? Scram! If you disturb my prince’s rest, you will all die.” However, not only did the people from the Shentu Dynasty ignore the crowd’s exclamations and praises, they even pointed at them and loudly cursed. A very vile attitude.

“They are truly looking to die.” As he saw that scene, Chu Feng’s complexion couldn’t help changing, his fists unavoidably clenching lightly.

Even though the people from the Shentu Dynasty were pointing at the crowd and cursing, in reality, they also included Zhang Tianyi and him,

insulting them as well.

\*bam\* But before Chu Feng went forward, he felt a hand pulling him back. Turning his head to look, Zhang Tianyi was shaking his head slightly to himself, saying quietly, “Junior Chu Feng, it is our first time here. Given the choice to do more or less, why not do less? Endure one moment, the winds will be calm and the waves serene; take one step back, the ocean will be peaceful and the sky clear.”

Hearing that, Chu Feng remained silent. He wasn't afraid, but just didn't want to give no face to Zhang Tianyi.

Afterwards, they no longer paid attention to the people from the Shentu Dynasty, and left the tavern towards an unpopulated area.

“Senior Zhang, just speak your mind. There is no need to hold yourself back on anything.” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

“Mm, then I won't bother with courtesy words. By calling you out here, I do indeed have one thing I want you to help me with.” Zhang Tianyi said.

“What is it? Just say whatever's on your mind.” Chu Feng smiled brightly.

“It's actually nothing big, but Junior Chu Feng, since you're not planning to cultivate in the Four Seas Academy, according to your nature, you should be planning to journey around the Eastern Sea Region right?” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Mm. That's not false. I have some things I need to do, and those things destine me to travel through the Eastern Sea Region.” Chu Feng nodded his head without confirming nor denying.

“Then that's great! Junior Chu Feng, take this with you. When you traverse places, please look around and if you see this symbol, please tell me.” As he spoke, Zhang Tianyi took out a jade ornament from his pocket and handed it over to Chu Feng.

“This is?!” Accepting the jade ornament, Chu Feng’s pupils couldn’t help shrinking and on his calm face some astonishment emerged.

That jade ornament was black, the material it was made of was special, and even with Chu Feng’s current strength it was impossible to break the jade ornament. Clearly, it was not an ordinary jade ornament.

Moreover, engraved on the jade ornament was a special picture. A delicate sword.

If the scale of the sword was enlarged, it would be a very long and broad sword. However, by the sides of the sword, a pair of wings was engraved. The wings stretched outwards, as if it was going to fly out with the large sword. So, looking at it from that perspective, it seemed more like a special symbol, or something that contained a special meaning.

“Senior Zhang, where did you get this jade ornament?” Chu Feng asked curiously. Intuition told him that the origin of the jade ornament was absolutely not simple.

“To be honest, I’ve had amnesia.” Zhang Tianyi said a bit embarrassedly.

“What, amnesia?” Hearing those words, instantly, Chu Feng was even more astounded.

# Chapter 553 - The Arrogant Shentu Lang

MGA: Chapter 553 - The Arrogant Shentu Lang

“That’s right. When I lost my memories, I was only six. I don’t remember what happened before I was six years old. I only know that back then, I was situated in an alien land, and only later on did I learn that the land was called the Azure Province.”

“Me back then had absolutely nothing. Other than the set of clothes on my body, there were only two things. The first was this jade ornament, the other is this.” As Zhang Tianyi spoke, he took out a book. On the front were three big words: Forbidden Mysterious Technique.

“Senior Zhang, you...” At that instant, Chu Feng was also incomparably startled, because he seemed to have understood a few things.

It appeared like the Forbidden Mysterious Technique Zhang Tianyi cultivated was not found by chance, it was already on him. More importantly, the jade ornament and Mysterious Technique proved already one thing. Zhang Tianyi’s ancestry was likely very special as well.

“I don’t know why I lost my memories, but I feel that I don’t belong to the Azure Province, nor to the continent of the Nine Provinces. This jade ornament should be able to unravel the mystery of my ancestry, and perhaps it can help me retrieve the memories I had before six years of age.”

“Junior Chu Feng, you don’t need to specially search anything for me because these things rely merely on luck. You only need to pay slightly more attention and it’ll be fine just like that. Honestly speaking, even I cannot confirm whether they are in the Eastern Sea Region or not.” A light



grin was worn on Zhang Tianyi's face, but Chu Feng could feel the sorrow veiled over by his smile.

A child of only six years old, fatherless and motherless, completely alone. Chu Feng could imagine the kinds of hardship one needed to face in that situation.

When he was young, even though his life in the Chu family wasn't optimal, there was at least someone taking care of him. But Zhang Tianyi on the hand didn't. Clearly, his younger times were more painful than his.

The most important thing however, was Chu Feng also having great desire to understand his own background. Hence, Chu Feng was able to closely sympathize with Zhang Tianyi and feel his current emotions.

“Senior Zhang, don't worry. I will definitely pay attention.”

“But keep the jade ornament on you. I have already memorized its appearance.” Chu Feng somberly guaranteed. While he spoke, he returned the jade ornament to Zhang Tianyi because he knew how important it was to him.

“Then sorry to trouble you, Junior Chu Feng.” After hearing Chu Feng's response, Zhang Tianyi also smiled happily.

Afterwards, Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi returned to the tavern, but before approaching it, their faces experienced change.

It was because they discovered bewilderedly that there was smoke rising inside the tavern. Clearly, someone initiated an attack inside, but at present, Jiang Wushang, Su Rou, and Su Mei were still inside the tavern. Naturally, Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi were very anxious.

At that moment, within the tavern, the room booked by Chu Feng and the others had been flattened. Many structures surrounding it became wreckages as well. That place already became ruins.

Su Rou and Su Mei stood in the heart of the ruins with faces full of fury. They supported a person together, that person being exactly Jiang Wushang.

“I’m fine. It is but a scratch.” On Jiang Wushang current forehead he wore a golden, dazzling “royal” character. It could be seen that he used the power of his Bloodline. But in spite of that, on his body, there were a few wounds, and a sliver of blood trickled out of the corner of his mouth.

There stood a group of people from the Shentu Dynasty in front of Jiang Wushang. Unquestionably, the ones who injured Jiang Wushang were them.

“Hmph. You were so arrogant I thought you must have impressive strength, but in reality, you are only trash. You’re surnamed Jiang, right?” The prince called Shentu Lang questioned with contempt.

“That’s right. What about it?” Jiang Wushang stubbornly wiped the traces of blood from the corners of his mouth and loudly asked.

“What? Hmph.” Shentu Lang sneered, then said to the guards next to him, “Remember. He is surnamed Jiang, so his dynasty should be called the Jiang Dynasty. By giving birth to garbage like this, it seems like there is no need for his dynasty to continue its existence.”

“When you return to the dynasty, remember to report this to Father. Send people to eradicate that Jiang Dynasty. Leaving a dynasty like that in this world will do naught but lower the status of royalty. They are not worthy to possess Inherited Bloodlines.”

“You!!” Hearing those words, Jiang Wushang gnashed his teeth in rage and as he spoke he was going to attack Shentu Lang again.

But before letting him make his move, he was stopped by Su Rou on the side. Her brows knitted lightly, hiddenly warning him not to be rash, to wait for the return of Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi. They would then naturally be able to take care of Shentu Lang.

Jiang Wushang did not belong to the category of fools, so he clearly knew he could not defeat Shentu Lang after his previous exchange against him. If he continued being foolhardy, though it would not count for much whether he got injured or not, if he were to drag Su Rou and Su Mei down with him, he would let Chu Feng down too much.

Thus, he who was usually reckless also forcibly pushed down the flames in his heart, and didn't say anything more.

“Milord, milord, stop, stop! It's my fault, it's my fault!” Just at that moment, an old man beautifully dressed ran over with an apologetic smile on his face.

That old man's cultivation was not weak, being in the third level of the Heaven realm. Following behind him was a group of cultivators, their cultivation also not weak. However, looking at their attire, they were likely staff of the tavern so clearly, the old man was the boss of the luxurious tavern.

“Who are you?” Shentu Lang looked at the boss disdainfully.

“Milord, I'm the owner of this tavern.” The boss said with a smile.

“Hell, you're the owner of this tavern? You dare to even appear in front of my prince?!” After knowing who the boss was, one of the Shentu Dynasty guards in the fourth level of the Heaven realm gripped the old man's clothes and angrily howled.

“Ah, manners, manners! Pay attention to manners. We are ones with status!” Shentu Lang smiled strangely and said.

“Hmph.” Only after seeing Shentu Lang personally speak did the guard release that boss.

“Thank you milord, thank you milord.” Being released, the boss hurriedly kowtowed as gratitude to Shentu Lang because their strength did indeed cause him endless horror.

However, what he didn't know was that things were not as simple as they seemed. He saw Shentu Lang wear a smile on his face, yet speak chillingly, "I grace you with my presence, but you didn't even prepare a decent room for me? Do you know what sentence you deserve for committing such an offense?"

"Th-this... I do not." Hearing those words, the boss's expression unsettled, and he subconsciously retreated a few steps.

"The death sentence." Shentu Fang's face abruptly turned cold. His hand struck out, fiercely slamming the boss's face.

Powerful Heaven power went through his body, and with a bang, the tavern's boss became a mist of blood, dissipating in the air.

"Ah! Murder! Murder! The ones from the Shentu Dynasty are murdering in the Eastern Sea Region!"

Seeing that, the people who went along with the boss broke out in a cold sweat from terror. As they screamed loudly, they scattered.

"Where are you going? All of you, stay behind and accompany your boss to the grave." However, Shentu Lang coldly snorted, then waved his hand, emitting boundless Heaven power, forcefully crushing the dozens of experts in the Profound realm into pools of blood.

# Chapter 554 - Taking On Elite Armaments Barehanded

MGA: Chapter 554 - Taking On Elite Armaments Barehanded

“Go, kill everyone here. Leave none alive.” Shentu Lang spoke to the guards behind him after killing the powerful group.

“Yes sir!” Hearing Shentu Lang’s words, a few guards unhesitatingly rose into the air. Those who were seen by their naked eyes received their cruel slaughter.

In an instant, the luxurious tavern became a war zone. Flames rose into the sky, rumbling unceasingly. Coincident with those noises were dismal implorations and screams.

“You are so freely killing innocents! Are you even human?” Seeing the events unfolding in front of her, Su Mei could not continue enduring. She pointed at Shentu Lang and furiously rebuked.

“Human? Of course I’m not human. To be more precise, I’m God.”

“The people here occupy too much space. That’s why I can’t even book a slightly more luxurious room after coming to this place. They’ve delayed my journey, disrupted my plans, and no matter if it was intention or not, death is the best punishment for them.” Shentu Lang said complacently.

“You! You are simply an animal!” Su Mei loudly cursed.

“Animal? Okay, okay, okay. You dare to say I’m an animal? I’ll let you know what a true animal is!”

“Men! Strip these two women. I’ll give your eyes a treat and act out a scene in a ‘Chun Gong Tu’[1].

Equivalent to the Japanese “Shunga” (slightly NSFW)

].” As Shentu Lang sinisterly cackled, he lustfully swept over Su Rou’s and Su Mei’s proud beautiful bodies.

“Yes sir.” Hearing his words, the two guards currently standing behind Shentu Lang flew up together, dashing towards Su Rou and Su Mei in the air. The cultivation of those two guards was not weak, as both were in the fourth level of the Heaven realm.

“You are truly looking to die!” Looking at them, Jiang Wushang’s eyes could spit fire from anger. Revolving the Heaven power within his body as well as his Bloodline power, he wanted to give those two guards a good lesson.

Although he was no match for Shentu Lang, his battle power was more than enough to take care of the two guards.

\*hmm\*

However, before Jiang Wushang got a chance to attack, suddenly, seemingly limitless Heaven power fell down from above. With a boom, a huge pit appeared ten meters away from Jiang Wushang. Shifting his gaze back at the two guards, they were already crushed to death forcefully, becoming two meat patties.

Simultaneously, a voice filled with bloodlust descended from the heavens. Soon afterwards, two figures landed in front of Jiang Wushang, Su Rou, and Su Mei. Those two people were none other than Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi. The one who attacked just now was, of course, also Chu Feng.

“God damn, you dare to attack my people? You are truly looking to die! Men, send them all to death!” Seeing two of his own guards killed, Shentu Lang became enraged as well, and howled at the sky.

Hearing those words, the guards who were massacring became furious as well. All of them flew back, and without another word, started to attack Chu Feng.

“You wish to kill me? None of you are qualified.”

However, Chu Feng did not fear in the slightest as he faced the powerful ones flying towards him from all sides, of which the weakest were only in the second level of the Heaven realm, while several were even in the fourth level of the Heaven realm.

\*hmm\*

His hand waved, then immense Heaven power stormed into the sky, and like fierce, wild beasts, consumed them in one go.

“Ahh~~~~~”

“Prince, save me~~~~~”

At that instant, one could hear continuous cries of misery and unbroken screams. The guards of the Shentu Dynasty were experiencing great agony.

They were because Chu Feng didn't immediately kill them. He was tormenting them, using Heaven power to, bit-by-bit and inch-by-inch, rip their skin, bones, and even nerves. The pain made them wish they were dead as they were in pain.

“You! You are truly looking to die!”

Seeing his own guards being abused and mocked right in front of himself, Shentu Lang's killing intent overflowed out of him. A furious howl rang out, then a dazzling “royal” appeared on his forehead with a flash.

At that instant, his aura of the fifth level of the Heaven realm increased by several times. His battle power did indeed not allow for any underestimating, and he was many times stronger than those guards.

“Hmph.” However, to Chu Feng currently, no need to even mention the fifth level of the Heaven realm, even the sixth level, or even the seventh, was not enough to strike fear into him.

Lightning surged within Chu Feng's eyes and his aura rose rapidly. In a blink, he rose from the third level of the Heaven realm to the sixth level of the Heaven realm.

After his cultivation raised, with a thought, several bangs resounded like explosions. The Shentu Dynasty guards in midair all became pools of blood, and like rain, sprayed down and fell upon Shentu Lang's body.

"This..." At that instant, not only Shentu Lang, even Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, Su Rou, and Su Mei were stunned.

They already knew Chu Feng was very strong, but they never would have thought he reached such a level of power. Chu Feng's strengthened cultivation entered the sixth level of the Heaven realm already.

Especially when they thought about Chu Feng's horrifying battle power and also thought about Chu Feng's cultivation at present, they were totally able to imagine how strong Chu Feng's real power reached. Even those in the eighth level of the Heaven realm might not defeat Chu Feng.

"You, you, you, you... I will cut your corpse into ten thousand pieces!"

When he faced Chu Feng currently, Shentu Lang, who overflowed with self-confidence and was already consumed by anger, simply did not feel the perilous aura. Disregarding everything he started his attacks on Chu Feng.

"Ahh!"

A furious roar could be heard before radiance flashed in his two hands. There was then two Elite Armaments, a blade and a sword, that appeared in the air.

"Go." Quickly after, he pointed at Chu Feng. The two Elite Armaments streaked through the air, and with the might of Elite Armaments, pressed towards Chu Feng.



At that instant, Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, and even Zhang Tianyi felt the strong pressure, and had to admit that Shentu Lang was indeed very strong.

Not only was his cultivation quite good, his battle power was extremely powerful as well, seen from his ability to channel power into two Mastered Elite Armaments.

If they were fighting one-on-one, likely even Zhang Tianyi could not defeat him.

But regretfully, the one confronting Shentu Lang was not Zhang Tianyi, but Chu Feng.

“Good timing.”

\*whoosh\* Facing the two Elite Armaments descending from the sky, Chu Feng did not retreat, and instead rose into the air.

Coming into the air, Chu Feng spread both of his arms, formed a claw shape with his hands, and actually clawed towards the Mastered Elite Armaments which contained very strong power.

“Chu Feng!” Seeing that, Su Rou and Su Mei both deeply broke out in a cold sweat for Chu Feng. After all, they were able to feel the might bottled within the two Elite Armaments.

At that instant, only Zhang Tianyi was comparatively serene. He who had truly fought against Chu Feng knew deeply how powerful he actually was.

“You dare to receive Elite Armaments barehanded? You are truly looking to die!” Seeing Chu Feng’s actions, Shentu Lang coldly snorted, and formed a hint of a derisive smile. At the same time, he put all his strength into the two Mastered Elite Armaments, wanting to kill Chu Feng in a single direct blow.

\*bzzzz\*

Just at that moment, Chu Feng's palms already neared the blade and sword, the two Elite Armaments. Both weapons and palms seemed to wish to go through one another as blinding sparks arose and layers of ripples never-endingly exploded in the air.

But Chu Feng was unstoppable. Putting strength into his palms, he actually grabbed the two Elite Armaments into his hands, then one could see his arms tremble as two bursts of boundless power were channeled into the Elite Armaments.

At that instant, the two weapons were intensely vibrating, but very quickly, the horrifying might disappeared, and finally, the Elite Armaments were taken down by Chu Feng from the air. Chu Feng truly took on the two horrifying Mastered Elite Armaments barehanded.

# Chapter 555 - What Are You Planning

MGA: Chapter 555 - What Are You Planning

“How is this possible? You, you, you actually!” Seeing his two Mastered Elite Armaments truly grasped by Chu Feng, Shentu Lang’s eyes were widened even larger than a cow’s, his gaze full of astonishment.

“I must say, although in terms in quality, these two Elite Armaments are just a bit inferior to my Asura Ghost Axe, their quality is still quite good out of the Mastered Elite Armaments I’ve seen.”

“Little Rou, Little Mei, how about I gift these two Elite Armaments to you two for protection?” Chu Feng held the two Elite Armaments and cheerfully looked at Su Rou and Su Mei.

“Sure!” Seeing that, Su Rou and Su Mei nodded in agreement with faces full of smiles.

Although they were two powerful Elite Armaments, one blade and one sword, they had very elegant outward appearances, very suitable for females to use. If Su Rou and Su Mei used them, it would be perfect.

“Bastard thing, you dare to give away my Elite Armaments? You are looking down on me too much are you?!” Seeing Chu Feng actually pass his two treasures to others, Shentu Lang vividly grinded his teeth.

But he wasn’t too nervous because they were Mastered Elite Armaments! Treasures that were connected to his heart and mind, allowing him to freely control them!

So, radiance flashed in his palms, formless power pouring into the two Elite Armaments in Chu Feng’s hands. He wanted to summon his weapons back to his own hands.

“Hmph.” However, Chu Feng coldly snorted at Shentu Lang’s actions. His hands quivered faintly as he imbued what seemed to be infinite Heaven power into the Elite Armaments.

Then hearing a bang that came from the Elite Armaments, Shentu Lang’s face immediately turned incomparably deathly-white. At the same time, the light in his palms disappeared, then a large mouthful of blood sprayed out with a poof.

“What is happening?” Zhang Tianyi and the others were astounded as they saw the events unfolding in front of him because evidently, Chu Feng did not make a move on Shentu Lang, so why did he receive heavy injuries?

“You, you, you, you cut off my connection to the Elite Armaments?!” In that moment, Shentu Lang’s face was full of shock. His previous haughtiness existed no longer, endlessly fear taking its place.

As the victim, he understood very clearly what happened. The reason why he suffered heavy injuries was for none other reason but because Chu Feng cut off the link between him and the Elite Armaments. To be more precise, the two weapons currently no longer belonged to him.

It wasn’t like he hadn’t heard of things such as cutting off another person’s connection with their Elite Armament, but it applied only for situations when the render had strength far above the owner of the Elite Armament. Although Chu Feng aura was currently in the sixth level of the Heaven realm, he clearly shouldn’t be equipped with such an ability.

Yet Chu Feng did it. In addition to Chu Feng’s various methods previously, he made him aware of a very frightening problem: he was facing an extremely horrifying opponent.

\*whoosh\*

Feeling things going awry, Shentu Lang quickly turned around, wind rising under his feet. He was using a bodily martial skill as he wanted to flee.

“Naive.”

However, Chu Feng disdainfully smile at Shentu Lang's actions. Quickly after, his hand turned into a claw shape, and he grabbed the air. Immeasurable Heaven power gushed out, formed a huge Heaven power hand, and clasped Shentu Lang down.

\*boom\* After snatching him down from high in the air, Chu Feng suddenly flicked his entire arm downwards, fiercely throwing Shentu Lang onto the ground.

“Ahh!”

The powerful force immediately formed a huge pit on the surface of the ground. Shentu Lang's body even kept on making cracking noises; clearly, the bones throughout his body was shattered by Chu Feng.

After dropping Shentu Lang down, Chu Feng gradually walked up to him and stepped on his head.

“Bastard. You dare to do this to me? Do you know who I am?! If my father knows about this, he will definitely kill you! He will kill all of you!” Shentu Lang furiously howled. As a lofty prince, a famous genius within his clan, he had never received such ridicule.

“Are you certain your father will know about today?” The corners of Chu Feng's mouth rose to form a strange smile.

\*gulp\* Hearing those words, Shentu Lang couldn't help swallowing some spittle. His formerly still arrogant complexion was replaced straightaway by terror. He already understood Chu Feng's thoughts because there was something called “silencing by extermination”.

“Just now, you said we delayed your journey, so we should die.”

“Then do you know the consequences of daring to attack my friends?” Chu Feng indifferently asked while looking at Shentu Lang beneath his feet.

“My brother, it's a misunderstanding! A misunderstanding! It is really a misunderstanding. I initially had no intentions of touching your friends...”

Ah! Hey, brother, what are you doing? Just let me go and talk this out with words.”

At that instant, Shentu Lang panicked. He was truly afraid that Chu Feng would kill him, but Chu Feng did not give him any opportunities to explain himself. He lifted him up with a single hand, then spread out his Spirit power before flying to the northwest.

Zhang Tianyi and the others felt puzzled at Chu Feng’s actions, so they hurriedly rose into the sky and chased after the direction Chu Feng flew towards.

After ascending into the air, only then did they discover that the luxurious tavern became completely void of people. Other than the corpses which littered the ground, and themselves, there was basically no one left alive.

As for the reason, it was actually very simple. It was not the people from the Shentu Dynasty who killed everyone there.

It was just that after encountering the Shentu Dynasty’s carnage, of those who survived, which ones dared to stay behind? They had already slipped away like a sliver of smoke.

\*boom\* But just at that moment, Chu Feng came above a structure, threw his palm downwards, and demolished it with an explosion. After the structure vanished, a vast area contained yellow-coloured substances suddenly emerged onto the surface of the ground. Coinciding with that was an unbearable stench that came permeating through the air. It was a huge excrement pit.

\*hmm\* After blasting the pit into the open, Chu Feng waved his hand and enveloped layers of Spirit Formation onto Shentu Lang’s body.

In addition to that, Chu Feng even laid another formation on top of the Spirit Formation. Only after doing that did he chuckle towards Shentu Lang, and said, “Don’t worry, I won’t kill you.”

“Wha-wha-what are you doing?!” Seeing Chu Feng wicked smile, Shentu Lang immediately gulped as he broke out in a cold sweat throughout his entire body. Even his clothes were drenched by sweat. He truly broke down from terror.

“You will soon know what I am doing.” Chu Feng smiled strangely, then waved his hand and threw Shentu Lang downwards.

Hearing a poof, he shot immediately into the pit of excrement.

“Ahhh~~~~~ Damn your ancestors! You dare to throw me into this pit?! I will kill you, I will kill you, I will definitely kill you!!” At that moment, Shentu Lang was incomparably furious and roared without end.

But Chu Feng paid no heed to his curses. Rather, a faint smile was always worn on his face. He started to lay a Spirit Formation, and actually covered the excremental pit, then moved over large pieces of debris to thoroughly bury the pit.

# Chapter 556 - A Person Beyond A Person

MGA: Chapter 556 - A Person Beyond A Person

After completing the deeds, Chu Feng flipped his hand, and several Cosmos Sacks appeared. All of those were from the people of the Shentu Dynasty.

Although Chu Feng killed many people, he struck appropriately. Not only did he absorb their Source Energy for Eggy before their deaths, he even looted their Cosmos Sacks as well as the treasures they brought along and had on themselves.

Chu Feng finished all of that in an instant. If it were before, Chu Feng wouldn't be able to do such things, but he, at present, can. That was Chu Feng's current power.

“I didn't expect the Shentu Dynasty to be this wealthy.”

After examining the objects in the Cosmos Sacks, Chu Feng nodded his head satisfiedly. It could be said that the Shentu Dynasty was truly quite wealthy. Especially Shentu Lang. He himself brought a frightening amount of fortune. For Heaven beads alone he obtained ten thousand.

One must know if Chu Feng were to convert all of the Ji Dynasty's wealth he plundered into Heaven beads, he could get, at most, a bit over one hundred thousand.

But Shentu Lang, he alone actually brought ten thousand Heaven beads. Either he was an insanely wasteful person, or his Shentu Dynasty was truly abundant in wealth.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, you really do have good ideas. You are drowning him alive with excrement!” At that moment, Jiang Wushang flew over and



said with a smirking face as he looked towards the pit of excrement below, already covered by Chu Feng.

“Junior Chu Feng, that brat is too full of himself. He dared to attack Brother Wushang and had malicious thoughts towards Lady Su Rou and Lady Su Mei! We should punish him well. Killing him immediately is too benevolent.” At the same time, Zhang Tianyi vented his anger.

As he faced their gazes, Chu Feng, a light smile on his face, said, “No. I am not drowning him to death. That Spirit Formation will protect him, preventing him from directly contacting the excrement.”

“What? Junior Chu Feng, what are you planning? Why not just use excrement to drown him to death?”

“Yeah! Big Brother Chu Feng, what are your plans? Could it be you are preparing to starve him to death?” Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang expressed confusion to Chu Feng’s words, and started to guess his intentions.

“No, I’m not starving him to death either.” Chu Feng shook his head with a smile.

“Ahhh! Big Brother Chu Feng, exactly how are you planning to take care of him? Don’t leave us in suspense and quickly tell us!” Jiang Wushang really impatiently wanted to know the answer.

“That Spirit Formation will protect him, separating him from the excrement. But he will not starve to death because on the Spirit Formation that’s protecting him, I laid another formation. That formation absorbs the energy from the outside and forcefully channels it into his body. Incidentally, that energy is sufficient to sustain his life.”

“As for that outside energy, I’m sure all of you know what it is right?” Chu Feng grinned evilly.

Hearing those words, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang looked at each other with their four eyes, their heads completely foggy. But soon, they

understood something and asked together, “Is it excrement?”

“That’s right, excrement.”

“He cannot escape because my Spirit Formation bound his power.”

“He will not starve to death because that formation will feed him the energy converted from excrement. No matter if he’s willing or not, the formation will turn the excrement into energy and imbue it into his body.”

“Unless one day he completely absorbs all of the excrement, he will not die.” Chu Feng smiled and said smugly.

“Haha, Big Brother Chu Feng, good thing you thought of forcefully submerging this Shentu Lang into excrement.” Jiang Wushang swayed back and forth from laughter.

“Junior Chu Feng, I must say that this move is even eviler than what I had initially thought. I’m guessing that this Shentu Lang must really want to die right now!” And on Zhang Tianyi’s face, even some admiration appeared.

Su Rou and Su Mei seemed a bit speechless when seeing their reactions. Although they knew Chu Feng was venting their anger for them, in their perspectives, forcefully feeding a person excrement, no matter how one thought of it, was revolting.

That made them, who originally wanted to cram themselves with food, lose their appetite completely. In addition, there was no one else able to prepare them food in the luxurious tavern, so Chu Feng and his group continued their journey.

After a while of travelling, they finally entered the Four Seas Academy’s territory. It was a continent formed by countless archipelagoes. Although it was fragmented, its total surface area was several times larger than the continent of the Nine Provinces.

And such a huge land was all of the Four Seas Academy’s territory.

Most importantly, on the large stretch of land, all of the structures were under the name of the Four Seas Academy. From that, it could be seen how enormous the Four Seas Academy was. A truly large force of power.

But despite the Four Seas Academy's massive size, there were not many disciples in there. One must know that the peak powers of the Nine Provinces had around ten million people.

But it was said that the Four Seas Academy, a power so distinguished, had no more than several hundred thousand people when all elders and disciples were summed up. And most of those were even elders.

Though there were few people in the Four Seas Academy, the disciples there could be called the dragons within men. Just take the simplest thing: if one desired to enter the Four Seas Academy, it mattered not if you were a male or a female. There were even no restrictions on age. But there was one mandatory requirement: you had to be in the Heaven realm.

The Heaven realm. They were all in the Heaven realm. Several hundred thousand Heaven realm experts. They were real elites.

“My god, they are actually all in the Heaven realm! Cultivators titled peak experts in the continent of the Nine Provinces are everywhere here!” At that moment, as she looked upon the continual emergence of people, Su Mei's face was full of amazement.

It was because no matter if she gazed at an old one, or middle-aged one, or a young one, there was not any who was in the Profound realm. All of them belonged in the Heaven realm, and there was a large number of them. It was difficult for her

not

to be amazed.

“No need to be awed. This is, after all, the Eastern Sea Region! The Heaven realm isn't much in this place, and only Martial Lords are the truly strong ones. Only Martial Kings are the unparalleled experts. There

are too many people who can step into the Heaven realm.” Jiang Wushang explained.

“Brother Wushang is correct. A certain area of land brings about a certain type of people. The spiritual energy, Origin power, Profound power, and even Heaven power here are many times denser in comparison to the continent of the Nine Provinces. It can’t be helped that the cultivators in this place have cultivation that is not weak.”

“Moreover, disregarding the natives of the Eastern Sea Region, those who are able to come to the Eastern Sea Regions from faraway lands do not have weak cultivation. The weak would not dare to come to this place.”

“Even more so as the Four Seas Academy have very strict requirements for disciple recruitment. Although they do not limit based on age, or origin, or gender, for those who wish to join them, the minimum is the Heaven realm. Even those in the Heaven realm need to pass through examinations and tests. So, that’s why everyone who shows up here are cultivators in the Heaven realm, yet even that may still not be enough.” Chu Feng explained with a smile.

“It seems like the proverbs are quite correct. Right now, I truly understand what ‘there is a person beyond a person, and a sky beyond a sky’ means.”

After hearing Chu Feng’s and Jiang Wushang’s words, Su Mei seemed to be serene. A hint of happiness even emerged onto her face. By relying on the Pearl of Flames, her cultivation reached the Heaven realm. Because of that, she initially even thought that she was exceptional. After all, in the Azure Province, the Heaven realm was like a legend.

So, in that instant, she knew that the Heaven realm wasn’t really anything. That being said however, the reason she rejoiced was exactly because she obtained the power from the Pearl of Flames. If not, she would have been an existence equivalent to trash in the eyes of the Eastern Sea Region’s people, and would lack any great achievements in her entire life.

# Chapter 557 - Aberrant Treatment

MGA: Chapter 557 - Aberrant Treatment

The disciples of the Four Seas Academy could benefit from extremely excellent treatments because in the land of the academy, there were specialized training grounds. Large amounts of cultivation resources were grown as well.

There was even land that belonged to every single disciple, and they could build structures they liked in their own land, and do anything they enjoyed to do.

And since the area of the Four Seas Academy was this large, in order for convenient travelling, World Spiritists built countless Teleportation Arrays on the vast grounds. The Teleportation Arrays were built by Purple-cloak World Spiritists.

With the Teleportation Arrays that spanned the mighty-sized terrain, really, no matter where one wished to go, it became a lot simpler because the speed of the Teleportation Arrays was not something comparable to other basic means of transportation.

\*hmm\*

At that instant, in the middle area of the Four Seas Academy, there was a huge city. The city could contain several hundred thousand people, and was primarily used to welcome those who prepared to enter the Four Seas Academy.

Inside the enormous city, there were countless Teleportation Arrays brimming with purple light. As the radiance flashed, several people walked out from behind, and a few of them were Chu Feng and the others.

“This Four Seas Academy is indeed not simple. They’ve actually set up so many Teleportation Arrays! The speed of movement when using these

Teleportation Arrays is quite extraordinary. It can even be said to be scary.”

After such a long distance of displacement completed in only a short moment, even Chu Feng felt disbelief. Although, as a World Spiritist, he had once used the power of Teleportation Arrays, he had never tried such a far teleportation. As such, he deeply understood as well how difficult it was to complete Teleportation Arrays for such great distances.

“There is nothing to be amazed at, as this isn’t a genuinely single long-distance Teleportation Array. These are many overlaying, smaller Teleportation Arrays that create the illusion of them being a single long-distance teleportation.”

“Although Teleportation Arrays such as these can also show the effect of speedy transportation, it is an enormous construction project. To build so many Teleportation Arrays in such a large span of land, they must have used an enormous number of Purple-cloak World Spiritists, as well as no less than several hundred years.”

“It can be said that the Teleportation Arrays you see today are the lifeblood of the Four Seas Academy’s seniors.”

“However, if it were laid by a Royal-cloak World Spiritists, that person alone could finish such a project with merely a few years of time.”

“And if it were laid by an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, it would be complete with only a few

days

of time, and the Teleportation Array they create would be far superior to the one you see now.” Eggy, who was always in the Spiritual World, explained.

“Royal-cloak World Spiritist? Immortal-cloak World Spiritist? Those are the World Spiritists above the Gold-cloak rank?” Chu Feng asked with joy,

because he knew that absolutely, the Gold-cloak rank was not the end point of World Spiritists.

But Eggy had always been unwilling to tell him what realms were above the Gold-cloak one, saying it would be useless telling him too much with his inadequate cultivation. But now, it seemed like Eggy planned to tell Chu Feng.

“Above Gold-cloak World Spiritists are Royal-cloak World Spiritists, and above the Royal-cloak are Immortal-cloak World Spiritists.” Eggy said.

“Then what about above Immortal-cloak World Spiritists? Are there stronger realms above the Immortal-cloak?” Chu Feng closely asked.

“Above Immortal-cloak? There are, of course there are. But I’m afraid even in the so-called Holy Land of Martialism there are none. So, it’s better if you don’t ask more because those things are too distant from you.”

“Take a Royal-cloak World Spiritist for example. Unless they have exceptional talent, otherwise, without the cultivation of Martial Kings, they should not even think of becoming a Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Even if they have the cultivation of Martial Kings, without certain comprehension strength, they cannot become a Royal-cloak World Spiritist because the Royal-rank Spirit Formation power is not something that’s on the same level as Purple-coloured Spirit Formation power. The distance between the two of them is like the heaven and the earth.”

“Even Martial Emperors may not be able to become Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. So now, you should know how difficult it is to become someone who surpasses Immortal-cloak World Spiritists right?” Eggy giggled and said.

Hearing everything to that point, Chu Feng also couldn’t help sucking in a breath of cool air, as he finally knew about the profoundness of the World Spiritist road. When Martial Emperors were already that strong, how terrifying would those above Martial Emperors be? Chu Feng truly did not dare to imagine.

“Excuse me, are you planning to enter the Four Seas Academy?” Shortly after walking out of the Teleportation Array, a man flew over with a face full of smiles.

That man was over the middle-ages, probably already over forty years old. On his face that seemed to have experienced the undulations of life, there seemed to be an outer appearance of maturity engraved within. His cultivation was not weak as well, being in the fifth level of the heaven realm, and speaking in terms of cultivation, he could be said to be stronger than Chu Feng and the others.

More importantly, the blue-coloured clothes he wore, the two huge black words “Four Seas”, and the badge worn on his waist revealed his identity. He was a person from the Four Seas Academy.

“Senior, we are indeed preparing to enter the Four Seas Academy. I’ve heard this place can allow us to rest, so we came here.” Jiang Wushang kindly replied. He did not dare to be rude to disciples of the Four Seas Academy.

Especially as, on the road there, they saw the haughtiness and unreasonableness of the people from the Four Seas Academy, even if it was Jiang Wushang he didn’t dare to be disrespectful towards those from the Four Seas Academy.

“There is a place, of course there is! Juniors, follow me. I’ll arrange resting grounds of the highest quality.” But the thing that surprised Chu Feng and the others was the complete lack of arrogant attitude from the person in front of them. Rather, he seemed very kind. That really made Chu Feng and the others nonplussed.

Initially, they thought the man in front of them was very different from the masses, as he had a very considerate nature. Only after several people accidentally blocked their path, sparking a string of curses from the man, did Chu Feng and the others discover that they were very wrong.

The man was only amiable and warm to them. When he treated others, not only was he plentiful imperious, he was even incomparably ferocious. He



scared many people to the point where they first bobbed their heads and bent their waists in apology, then scattered and fled.

Facing that scene, Chu Feng and the others looked at one another and were numb. Only later on did they learn why the man treated them so friendly. It seemed like Chu Feng and the others were exceptions.

Even though there were several tens of thousands of people who prepared to enter the Four Seas Academy today, in reality, they were not young. The number of people who were truly young and stepped into the Heaven realm were few within few.

So, the ones who were young and strong like Chu Feng's group could pretty much easily pass the exam, and could even possibly have quite a nice future in the Four Seas Academy.

Thus, even disciples of the Four Seas Academy would not be willing to offend Chu Feng and the others. They would even use the excuse of welcoming them to befriend them.

He, the one who greeted them, hoped that if Chu Feng and the others had achievements in the future, perhaps they could pull him up as well. After all, he was already so old. Even though he was quite impressive in the eyes of outsiders, in reality, within the Four Seas Academy, he was bullied quite a bit.

Just like that, the middle-aged disciple prepared a rather fine residence for Chu Feng and the others. Moreover, he prepared a servant for them. However, that servant did not belong to the Four Seas Academy and was his own, as only the elders and disciples could afford to support a servant in the Four Seas Academy.

# Chapter 558 - Ten Divine Instructors

MGA: Chapter 558 - Ten Divine Instructors

“Senior Yuhe, you are truly too polite. We don’t really need a servant.” Jiang Wushang said embarrassedly. On the road, after some chatting, they learnt that the middle-aged man was called Yuhe.

“Ahh, you have tired greatly from this journey. It simply won’t do for you to refuse this service. Besides, ‘the ones who come are guests’. Since you’ve come to my Four Seas Academy, how can something like pouring your own cup of tea be allowed?”

“There are still several days to the start of the examination, and besides, the examination is a very lengthy process. In this period of time before the examination, I would feel more relieved if there were a person taking care of you. If you require assistance in any areas, you can directly tell the servant, and get them to notify me. I will definitely arrive as soon as I can.”

“Okay, it’s getting late now. You guys rest early. I will inform you later about the specific times of the examination.” Yuhe smiled with a face of indifference, then drifted away.

Chu Feng and the others looked at each other, then smiled in relief towards Yuhe’s actions, and gladly accepted all his arrangements. They knew that the reason why they could gain Yuhe’s respect was because they were armed with that strength.

At that moment, Jiang Wushang’s, Zhang Tianyi’s, Su Rou’s, and Su Mei’s confidence rose by many times, and felt more and more that being in the Four Seas Academy was like fish being in water.

Several days later, they finally reached the moment of the examination. Although Chu Feng was not planning to join the Four Seas Academy, he still went along with them. It was for no other reason but his own worry.

And when Chu Feng and the others reached the place of the examination, they once again truly witnessed what “grand” was.

The so-called examination grounds was simply an enormous sealed castle. Its area was comparable to even a small-scale mountain range.

As for the people who came to participate in the examination, although the ages were uneven, they were truly all in the Heaven realm, and when several tens of thousands of Heaven realm experts appeared at the same time, that scene could really only be described as “magnificent”.

“Chu Feng, are you really not going to enter the Four Seas Academy with us? Can I really not go together with you?” Outside of the examination grounds, Su Mei was gazing intently at Chu Feng with her clear and beautiful eyes.

She actually didn’t want to enter the Four Seas Academy, and also wanted very much to continue following Chu Feng. However, he advised them to stay in the Four Seas Academy, for a very simple reason. He did not want them to face danger.

“Little Mei, listen to Chu Feng. There are some things that are better left up to him to do. You will only distract him by staying close to him.”

But before letting Chu Feng speak, Su Rou intimately stood out, but at the same time she spoke those words she also looked at Chu Feng. Within her pretty eyes, there was similarly some reluctance.

“Go ahead, I will come back often to see you.” Chu Feng waved his hand at the two of them with a smile.

Seeing that, Su Rou and Su Mei no longer clung onto him, and turned around, heading towards the examination’s entrance. Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang followed in as well.

“Eh? Junior Chu Feng, why are you still here? This examination will start immediately! If you don’t enter now, you won’t make it.” Suddenly, a voice rang out behind him, and turning his head around to see, it was Yuhe.

“Senior Yuhe, I am only accompanying them. I’m not planning to enter the Four Seas Academy.” Chu Feng replied with a smile.

“That’s not true is it? You’re not planning to enter the Four Seas Academy?” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, Yuhe had shock across his face, but seeing Chu Feng’s firm appearance, he had no choice but to believe them. Quickly afterwards, he said with a strong shake of his head, “A pity, a pity, what a true pity.”

\*whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh\*

But just at that moment, several blurs of light appeared abruptly from the distant sky. Very soon, those lights dashed up to the sky above the examination grounds, and halted in mid-air.

At that instant, Chu Feng’s eyes couldn’t help brightening because in the air he discovered there stood nine people. Of the nine people, two were females, seven were males, and all were white-haired and aged.

However, their cultivations were overwhelming. Their powerful auras far surpassed the Azure Dragon Founder’s, so Chu Feng determined they were nine Martial Lords, and their realms were definitely not low either.

“Look! It’s the Ten Divine Instructors!”

After those nine people appeared, from the disciples of the Four Seas Academy, bursts of cheers rang out, and even many elders revealed admiring expressions.

As for the nine in the sky, they seemed to enjoy the crowd’s reaction quite a bit, as though they were waiting for such exclamations when they stopped in the air.

It seemed to prove true when very quickly they shot across the sky and dashed into the examination area. Only a good while after they entered did the churning crowd quiet down.

“Senior Yuhe, what’s the history behind these nine people?” Chu Feng curiously asked Yuhe.

“Junior Chu Feng, could it be that you haven't even heard of the Ten Divine Instructors?” Yuhe very astonishedly gazed at Chu Feng, as if looking at a peculiar animal.

“Honestly speaking, I truly haven’t heard of them.” Chu Feng shook his head, slightly embarrassed. Although he knew the Four Seas Academy was very strong, it was absolutely not stronger than the Immortal Execution Archipelago. So, ever since Zi Ling was taken away, Chu Feng abandoned the thought of entering the Four Seas Academy because it simply could not oppose the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Thus, naturally, he hadn’t scouted out many things about the Four Seas Academy. After arriving at that place, he kept on cultivating behind closed-doors, studying the Pulse Searching Method. Up until now, his comprehension of the Four Seas Academy stagnated within his previous knowledge that expanded only from Jiang Wushang and the others’ conversations.

“Whatever. I’ll tell you about this.”

“Within the Four Seas Academy, elders are responsible for handling the internal and external matters. The ones responsible for passing abilities down to disciples are instructors.”

“Instructors are separated into three levels. One of them are Mortal Instructors, and the other are Earthen Instructors. They are assigned to disciples based on the disciples’ examination results.”

“But other than the two types of instructors, there are also Divine Instructors. The strength of Divine Instructors are extremely powerful, and

can be said to be a portion of the Four Seas Academy's strongest battle force. Their position in the academy is extremely high."

"However, there is no disciple who can choose them. In other words, only they choose the disciples, and no disciples choose them."

"Most importantly, there are only ten Divine Instructors in the entire Four Seas Academy, and each one of them take only one disciple."

"Only after their disciple leaves the Four Seas Academy do they choose a new one, and this year coincidentally is the time when all of their disciples leave, so it is also the time to choose new disciples." Yuhe very detailedly narrated.

"No wonder the people from the Four Seas Academy cheered in such a way. So they were great characters within the academy."

"But Senior Yuhe, you said there are ten instructors, but there were only nine just now!" Chu Feng counted and discovered that the numbers didn't match, so he couldn't help expressing his doubts.

"There's another that hasn't come. Oh that person... He has a very strange nature, and there are very few disciples who catch his attention. It can even be said ever since becoming a Divine Instructor, he had never accepted a disciple. So, don't have expectations that he will come this year." Yuhe said.

"He's that unconventional? Does the Four Seas Academy not care about his actions?" Chu Feng felt bewildered. Becoming an instructor, yet not instructing any disciples. It was like occupying the toilet but not taking a crap! Yet the Four Seas Academy allowed such behavior?

"Hoh." To Chu Feng's question, Yuhe chuckled, then went near his ear and said in a low voice, "When a person reaches a certain level in strength, he can create exceptions."

# Chapter 559 - Congratulatory Gifts

MGA: Chapter 559 - Congratulatory Gifts

The examination of the Four Seas Academy was very complicated. Especially as several tens of thousands of people entered at the same time, going through them in turn required several full days before it could be completed.

And in this period of time, Chu Feng continued studying his Pulse Searching Method in his resting area, while awaiting their examination results.

“Chu Feng! Chu Feng!” Several days later, the resting area which had remained in silence for many days was disrupted by a voice brimming with joy. At that instant, Chu Feng knew that the lengthy examination finally ended.

When Chu Feng opened his eyes, he saw his room’s door pushed open and a beautiful body dashing in, immediately arriving in front of himself, leaping into his embrace.

Looking at the little beauty before him, Chu Feng chuckled, because that person was none other than Su Mei, “Seeing that you’re so happy, you’ve passed?”

“She has not only passed! Big Brother Tianyi and I really admire Lady Su Rou and Su Mei to death!” But before letting Su Mei respond, Jiang Wushang voice rang out at the door.

Turning towards the voice, he saw Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, and Su Rou walking in. There were faint smiles worn on their faces. Especially for Su Rou, the alluring and mature great beauty. Her smile could truly dazzle a person to death.

“Brother Wushang, why so?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“It turned out that in this examination, the Ten Divine Instructors came over to observe. Big Brother Chu Feng, you must not know about the Ten Divine Instructors right? These Ten Divine Instructors are truly outstanding! I’ll explain it to you like this. In the Four Seas Academy, there are no ‘masters’, only ‘instructors’. Instructors are the ones who teach us abilities.”

“There are also different levels of instructors, and the Ten Divine Instructors are the ten strongest Divine Instructors in the entire Four Seas Academy. Their position is supreme, and they are extremely exceptional. It is everyone’s wish to become their disciple.”

“As long as one becomes their disciple, not only will they obtain development of the highest quality, they will acquire an extremely high position as well. Even many elders and instructors will respect them.”

“Lady Su Rou and Lady Su Mei have caught the eyes of two Divine Instructors. Moreover, it was determined on scene that they need not participate in any more exams or competitions. Also meaning that in the next four years, they are disciples who will be specially developed by the Divine Instructors.”

“Big Brother Chu Feng, you don’t need to worry about anything. These two Divine Instructors are female, so they were definitely not enticed by Lady Su Rou’s and Lady Su Mei’s beauty but saw their potential!”

Jiang Wushang narrated with an extremely admiring tone, but from his face overflowing with smiles, one could see that he also felt happy, from the bottom of his heart, for Su Rou and Su Mei.

“Brother Wushang, stop acting like a victim here! Aren’t both you and Senior Zhang also very impressive? You’ve also gained the approval of Divine Instructors!”

“As long as you can gain victory in the showdown tomorrow, you can become disciples of those Divine Instructors.” Su Rou said on the side.



“Showdown? What’s this?” Hearing the word “showdown”, interest immediately came for Chu Feng as he hurriedly asked.

“Chu Feng, it’s like this: Senior Zhang and Brother Wushang caught the eyes of two Divine Instructors.”

“However, that applied also for many other powerful disciples. Yet, every Divine Instructor can instruct only a single disciple, so if Brother Wushang and Senior Zhang want to follow them, they must defeat the other disciples and reign victorious at the end.” Su Rou walked up to the Chu Feng and warmly explained.

“Those two Divine Instructors are too half-hearted to select multiple disciples at the same time.” Chu Feng teasingly said.

“Ahh, so that’s why I said Lady Su Rou and Lady Su Mei are impressive! They have no need to participate in any showdowns and were directly secured as disciples by their instructors. It can even be said it’s the first time this happened in history!” Jiang Wushang said, curling his lips.

“This is actually not really much because other than the two instructors who chose Lady Su Rou and Lady Su Mei, all of the other instructors chose multiple disciples as well, and many wanted to have a process of elimination.” Zhang Tianyi said smilingly.

“Mm. But Big Brother Chu Feng, you don’t need to worry about anything.”

“Big Brother Tianyi and I have already meticulously examined our competition. Honestly speaking, yes, there is pressure, but there’s not much.”

“Ah yes, that’s right. The interesting thing is, within the people who are competing against me and Big Brother Tianyi, there is also a pair of brothers surnamed is Shentu and they’ve come from the Shentu Dynasty as well. I’m sure they must be related to that Shentu Lang in some way.” Jiang Wushang said with an evil smile, seeming to want to take revenge for Shentu Lang’s bullying back then.

“Hoh. If they are related, then great; if not, no matter. All in all, this is a rare chance. Regardless of who your opponent is, do not have mercy. The more you let the instructors see your abilities, the more advantageous it will be to your future developments. So, do not hold anything back.” Chu Feng gravely reminded.

“Don’t worry, Big Brother Tianyi and I are people who do not like to leave face for our opponents, right? Big Brother Tianyi!” Jiang Wushang smugly looked at Zhang Tianyi.

Facing Jiang Wushang’s question, Zhang Tianyi smiled, then said, “Of course.”

“Hahahahaha!!”

At that instant, Chu Feng and the others happily roared with laughter. They were all very joyful. After all, if Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, as well as Su Rou and Su Mei, could truly become disciples of Divine Instructors, then it would be accurate to describe their position in the Four Seas Academy as “stepping to the Heavens in a single step”.

In terms of strength, they will rise abruptly; in terms of status, they will also receive many people’s respect.

“Ahaha, congratulations, congratulations!!” But just at that moment, from outside the door suddenly came incomparably excited laughs.

After those laughs sounded, Chu Feng and the others all looked at each other, their smiles on their faces couldn’t help becoming even wider. Because, without even seeing the person, they knew who it was. It was definitely Yuhe.

“Juniors, really, congratulations! You’ve actually all become disciples of Divine Instructors! In the future, please treat me well!” Indeed, Yuhe soon walked in from outside, and there were even some gifts in his hands.

But behind him, there was even another Four Seas Academy disciple who followed. He had also a face full of smiles, and was similarly holding

priceless gifts.

“Senior Yuhe, what are you doing?” Seeing that, Jiang Wushang asked a bit puzzledly.

“Ah, Junior Jiang. Please accept this. It is but a small part of my heart, think nothing of it.” Yuhe forcibly pushed the presents in his hands to Jiang Wushang.

“Yeah! Juniors, these are just small parts of our hearts. You must accept them! In the future, we will still need to rely on your care...” Quickly after, the disciple behind Yuhe also, full of smiles, brought gratulatory gifts and went forward.

# Chapter 560 - Auction

MGA: Chapter 560 - Auction

“This...” At that instant, Jiang Wushang was in a bit of a difficult situation. He didn’t know whether to accept the gifts or not, so he cast his gaze towards Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi.

“Brother Wushang, just accept them. After all, Senior Yuhe has looked after us quite well, so it is only reasonable to take care of each other in the future.”

Chu Feng smiled. He had always recognized favours and paid them back. Although Yuhe had dishonest intentions when contacting them originally, he had helped them, after all. Thus, it was only right to look after him as well.

As for the other person, since Yuhe brought him over willingly, they undoubtedly had a very good relationship. So, there was no problem in him using his closeness with Yuhe and also obtaining a tiny bit of the benefits by being with Chu Feng and the others.

After hearing Chu Feng’s words, Jiang Wushang did not hesitate anymore and accepted the presents successively.

“Ahh, thank you Junior Chu Feng, thank you Junior Wushang, thank you, thank you!” The thing that made Chu Feng and the others speechless was that after Jiang Wushang accepted the presents, Yuhe and his friend actually bowed and thanked without end. Their level of shameless bootlicking skills was indeed exceptional.

“Su Rou, Su Mei!”

“Jiang Wushang, Junior Zhang Tianyi! Do you live here?”

But immediately after accepting their presents, a voice that was rather loud, yet very soft, rang out from outside.

It seemed like more people learnt of them becoming disciples of Divine Instructors and came to gift presents, hoping to befriend them.

But Jiang Wushang and the others did not accept the presents from those people. The reason was very simple too: after eating one's food, your mouth goes "numb", therefore you do not curse them; after taking their things, your hands becomes "short", therefore you do not fight them.

It wasn't that they were approaching unkindly, but there was really no need to become acquainted with people who wished to do naught but to take advantage of them.

If you flourished, perhaps they would be completely obsequious, and be a cow or horse as you so desired, but if one day everything fell apart, not only would they entertain themselves from your own misfortunes, they would even strike when you were down. It'd be wise to distant oneself from those kinds of people.

Like that, after several continuous waves of people came, even Jiang Wushang and the others could not bear it any longer because those people would not stop the pestering. It was not easy to handle them.

But just as Chu Feng and the others were irked, Yuhe and the others were quite complacent.

It was not schadenfreude of course. The reason they felt happy was because Chu Feng and the others accepted

their

gifts.

After all, their position in the Four Seas Academy was not high, and those who came bearing presents were in better positions than they were.

But people like them were all denied entry by Chu Feng and the others, while they received treatment for distinguished guests.

Even if they didn't want to be smug they couldn't. It was the first time in the Four Seas Academy that they felt superiority.

“Juniors, right now, your names resonate too strongly. There will be many more people coming to befriend you.”

“It will never end if this continues, and I'm afraid you will even find it difficult to sleep peacefully tonight. How about I bring you to another residence?” But while being pleased, Yuhe did not forget to dissolve their concerns, so he suggested on his own initiative.

“Oh? Senior Yuhe, you can find a rather tranquil place for us to rest? We wouldn't be disturbed by anyone anymore?” Jiang Wushang expressed uncertainty. If those people could find out that they lived here, how could it be they couldn't do so after they switched places?

“That's very simple. There are records of you living in this place, so of course it's easy to find you guys, but if you come to the residence in my land, naturally, they will not be able to locate any of you.” Yuhe said.

“Will this not be too inconvenient?” Chu Feng asked. More importantly, he was worried Yuhe would offend many people by doing that, and was afraid he would attract unnecessary troubles.

“Don't worry. Although my land isn't too big, it is not small either. There are mountains, creeks, lakes... Not to mention empty houses, the environment over there is much better too. Put away your worries and follow me.” Yuhe patted his chest, guaranteeing.

Seeing that, Chu Feng and the others hesitated no longer. After a simple pack up, they followed Yuhe and left.

But before walking to the Teleportation Array, they discovered there were people endlessly flying past in the sky, heading towards the center area of the vast city.

In addition, on their faces, there were bits of excitement and longing, as if there were a good occasion.

“Senior Yuhe, what are those people going over there for?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Ah, every year, at this time, in the center of the city, there will be some auctions. As long as you have treasures, you can sell them off for quite good prices.”

“Of course. Because these auctions are set up by my Four Seas Academy, there will be some processing fee taken.”

“Junior Chu Feng, is there anything you want auctioned off? If there is, you can do so with your two juniors’ status. Given their current positions, there will be no need to take any processing fee.” Yuhe explained.

“As the people here come from many places, every year, there will be some strange treasures taken out for auction. There are even people who come here, not to join the Four Seas Academy, but for auctioning treasures off their hands.”

“If you are interested, there is no harm in going over and having a look because this auction that happens only once a year can be counted as a rare festival. Even many disciples and elders of the Four Seas Academy will come for the liveliness.” At the same time, the disciple, who came along with Yuhe, spoke. It seemed like he had quite some interest in the auction as well.

“Really?”

“Chu Feng, since this auction is so interesting, let’s go take a look. It’s still early after all, so why not go join the liveliness?” Hearing those words, Su Mei got interested, and started to shake Chu Feng’s arm as she tugged it.

“That’s fine. Incidentally I have some things I want to sell off, so I’ll have to trouble you, Senior Yuhe.” Chu Feng said with faint smile. Back then, other than cultivation resources, he obtained quite a few valuable treasures

from the Ji Dynasty. It was wealth that the Ji Dynasty accumulated over several thousands of years.

At first, he wanted to use those treasures for trading the cultivation resources that the Azure Dragon Founder and the Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor looted from the other two dynasties, but they just gave Chu Feng cultivation resources and did not take his treasures. Those treasures were currently all on Chu Feng.

Moreover, since there was no use in keeping them, it would be better for Chu Feng to sell those things, converting them into cultivation resources. Then, leave a portion for personal emergency uses, and also leave a portion for Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang, for unexpected situations.

After deciding, Chu Feng and the others went to the auction grounds. It was a huge square, and within the square, people formed mountains and oceans. Within the square there existed over a hundred auctions stages, selling off various treasures.

It could be said that a large group of people surrounded every single auction stage, endlessly bidding and overriding bids. It was a very explosive scene.

Only in the heart of the square, the largest, most luxurious auction stage, was completely empty. Although there was nothing being auctioned on the stage, the outside was already filled with people, and their faces looked very forward to what was coming.



# Chapter 561 - Selling

MGA: Chapter 561 - Selling

“That’s the most exciting auction out of all these auctions, and it only starts after the sky darkens. The ones able to appear in this auction are not priceless treasures, but peculiar oddities. Every year some rare good objects appear, so it is also the auction people look forward to the most.” Yuhe explained for Chu Feng and the others.

“Senior Yuhe, if you can, sell off all the things I have here. Optimally, change them all to Heaven beads.” Chu Feng handed a Cosmos Sack to Yuhe, inside containing all the treasures he plundered from the Ji Dynasty.

Since the Four Seas Academy was equipped with specialized appraisal elders for the auctions, in addition to Su Rou and Su Mei already disciples of Divine Instructors, Chu Feng was not afraid that Yuhe would swindle him, because he likely did not have the guts to do so.

“Junior Chu Feng, you...this...” After Yuhe accepted Chu Feng’s Cosmos Sack and examined within, his originally composed face immediately surged with astonishment.

It was because the treasures inside filled the eyes with dazzle. There were even several Elite Armaments, and even three Mastered Elite Armaments! Even if he didn’t want to be shocked he couldn’t.

“Senior Yuhe, is there a problem?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“There’s no problem, there’s no problem. I will certainly give you good prices for these. Wait for me, I’ll auction these off for you right now.” Yuhe hurriedly replied, immediately flying towards an auction stage.

Initially, their talent made him feel that they were not simple people, yet Chu Feng just casually took out so many treasures for him to auction. So, from that point on, he decided to better the relationship between him and

them. He would even be willing to sacrifice his own interests for an improvement in closeness.

“Oh? Yuhe you poor brat, what are you here for? Could it be you also have treasures for auctioning?”

One of the elders responsible for appraising in the auctions revealed a disdainful and derisive attitude.

It was because he recognized Yuhe, and also knew he was an ordinary and useless disciple. If one were to look into that elder’s heart, they would discover contempt.

“It is not me who has things to auction. I am auctioning in place for those juniors over there.” In usual circumstances, Yuhe would definitely pettily greet that elder, but at present, he did not. Rather, he very calmly pointed at Chu Feng and the others in the sky.

“Oh?” The appraisal elder felt rather surprised at Yuhe’s abnormal behavior, and followed along Yuhe’s fingers, looking over.

“This...”

But after seeing Chu Feng, his eye couldn’t help lighting up because Chu Feng, with his age, in addition to his cultivation of the third level of the Heaven realm, could absolutely be considered to be a genius even in the Four Seas Academy.

“This! Isn’t this!!” But when he saw Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, as well as Su Rou and Su Mei, his expression became stunned.

As he was an elder, he had the authority to gaze upon the information of the disciples who participated in the exam. In order to avoid offending outstanding disciples, he had especially looked at the information of the disciples who had excellent results in the examination.

So naturally, he recognized Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, as well as Su Rou and Su Mei. The sisters had already been confirmed to be disciples of

Divine Instructors, and though Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang hadn't been confirmed yet, their strengths gave them strong chances to become disciples of Divine Instructors.

Of the ten Divine Instructors, only nine were willing to instruct disciples, and of those nine disciple slots, currently four appeared right in front of his eyes. Moreover, other than those four, Chu Feng's cultivation was not simple at all either.

Furthermore, seeing their intimate appearances, without even a thought the elder knew they were in a close group. It was a group of geniuses!

"Yuhe, you've actually got acquainted with them?!" At that instant, in the gaze that the appraisal elder looked at Yuhe with was filled with wonder. Not only did it no longer have its former disdain, there was instead an extra hint of respect, coincident with that also shock and confusion.

He could not understand. Geniuses like them should be extremely proud. How could a person like Yuhe get himself related to such geniuses?

"Hmph. But of course. I even have a great relationship with these juniors. Before, innumerable people had come bearing gifts, yet they were all denied outside. They were willing to befriend me only, and were simply treating me as a blood-related elder brother! Otherwise, they wouldn't have given me such valuable things for auctioning."

Seeing the completely inverted attitude that the elder gave him when compared to before, Yuhe seemed even smugger. As he spoke, he directly threw the Cosmos Sack Chu Feng gave to him at the appraisal elder.

And after the elder looked through the treasures in the Cosmos Sack, his face couldn't help changing, and he couldn't help gasping deeply. Although he had seen many treasures, there were very few people who took out so many in one turn. Normal people could not own so many treasures.

"Elder, you should know my juniors' identity, so it would be wiser to give them good prices. Also, there is no need for the processing fee right? Ah

yes, change everything to Heaven beads as well. Only Heaven beads.” Yuhe instructed.

“Right now, they are counted as people from my Four Seas Academy, so naturally, there is no need for processing fee. Also, his things are in high demand, so don’t worry. It will definitely not be hard to auction them off for good prices, nor is it difficult to exchange them for Heaven beads.”

“But after the auctions, I’ll be counting on you to say a few good words in front of them... Hehe...” The appraisal elder solicitously smiled and said.

Despite being an elder, in front of instructors, his position was not high. Especially to elders like him who were responsible for very trivial matters. To him, disciples of Divine Instructors were great people who held very high positions.

“It’ll be nothing.” Yuhe very calmly smiled, but his heart was filled with excitement.

It was because he knew that from today on, he, Yuhe, was going to flip upside down. He was no longer going to be a person looked down upon. He was going to be a person that many people respected and wished to befriend, and all of that happened was for no other reason but because he was lucky and got himself acquainted to the geniuses.

After that, Chu Feng and the others went around the auctions. Seeing little toys Su Rou and Su Mei liked, Chu Feng extravagantly bought them, making the two girls very happy.

Particularly when Su Mei gave a kiss to Chu Feng in front of the large crowd, that attracted quite some people’s attention and admiration. After all, no matter where Su Rou and Su Mei were, they were beauties who caught other people’s awareness.

And Chu Feng was accompanied by the two completely different-styled beauties: one alluring and mature, the other pure and cute. Naturally, it gave rise to envy from the observers.

Time passed, and in a blink the sky became black. The auctions also reached the final, most exciting, stage.

Because of Su Rou and Su Mei's current special statuses, Yuhe helped them obtain several seats very close to the auction.

“Junior Chu Feng, your treasures simply could not keep up with demand. They have all been sold.” Shortly after they sat down, Yuhe, who went in a circle to auction off the items, walked back with a cheerful face. Moreover, he even held a high-quality Cosmos Sack in his hand.

# Chapter 562 - Provocation

MGA: Chapter 562 - Provocation

“Junior Chu Feng, your things have all been sold.” Yuhe said after coming back from the auctions.

“Sorry for the trouble Senior Yuhe.” Chu Feng accepted the Cosmos Sack, but when he examined inside, his expression couldn’t help changing greatly because he discovered, astounded, that there were a hundred and fifty thousand Heaven beads packed in the Cosmos Sack.

Although his treasures were invaluable, according to Chu Feng’s calculations, it would already be extremely challenging to sell them off for any more than several tens of thousands of Heaven beads, yet presently, he obtained one hundred and fifty thousand beads. That truly exceeded his expectations by a long shot.

“Hehe, Junior Chu Feng, I wonder where you got so many treasures from? Although many are goods for living, they have long years of history, some even of several thousands of years. Treasures like those are very well-received.” As Chu Feng had his doubts, Yuhe spoke.

After hearing his words, Chu Feng roughly understood some things. The Eastern Sea Region was incomparable to the Eastern Continent. In this place, there were even Martial Kings. Let alone Heaven beads, it was likely there were even Martial beads. Something that this region lacked the least should be cultivation resources.

But, after all, the Ji Dynasty had been prospering for so many years. Thus, it was reasonable that the treasures they accumulated sold well here.

“Oh? Isn’t it Junior Su Rou, and Junior Su Mei? So you know these two bumpkins?”

But just at that time, a sharp voice rang out behind him. Turning his head back to look, he saw a group of people walking towards them.

The ones who led were two young men. They had the cultivation of the fourth level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, they wore the exact same clothing as Shentu Lang's, so with a single glance, Chu Feng knew who they were.

They were definitely the two people from the Shentu Dynasty who were fighting for the two disciple spots against Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, the two of them are Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai. They are likely brothers with that Shentu Lang.” Indeed, Jiang Wushang's voice verified Chu Feng's guesses.

Behind Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai followed four disciples from the Four Seas Academy. Clearly, they were the same as Yuhe. Knowing that the two people from the Shentu Dynasty were very possibly going to become disciples of Divine Instructors, they tried to become acquainted with them.

Or else, why would grand disciples of the Four Seas Academy, like little brothers, follow people who hadn't even officially become disciples yet?

After Chu Feng indifferently swept his gaze over those people, he coldly said, “Whose unleashed dogs are being so damn rowdy.”

“God damn, who are you? You dare to speak to Junior Shentu like that?!” However, before letting the two people from the Shentu Dynasty speak, the middle-aged disciples behind them pointed at Chu Feng and howled.

“He is my fiancé. Do you have any complaints?” But just at that moment, Su Rou spoke. Displeasure was everywhere on her exceptionally beautiful face. Her pair of pretty eyes were like invisible blades as they emitted eerie cold glares. It could be seen that she was truly furious.

“What? Junior Su Rou, he's your fiancé?” Hearing those words, the crowd was both shocked and frightened. Shocked because such an excellent

woman like Su Rou actually had a fiancé. That more or less broke the hearts of the male disciples who longed for Su Rou.

And the reason they were frightened was because Su Rou was truly angry. They were able to feel Su Rou's killing intent. Although, with their cultivation, they were simply not afraid of Su Rou, her current status was something that had to be feared.

“Not only is he my elder sister's fiancé, he is also my fiancé. So, you better speak more politely or else I will report this to Instructor Duanmu that someone has disrespected me. You will then definitely not escape the consequences.” Just at that time, Su Mei fiercely spoke as well. The Instructor Duanmu she mentioned was the Divine Instructor who took her as a disciple.

“This, this, this...”

At that moment, those people were completely stupefied. What was happening? Where did that brat come from? Taking the huge beauty Su Rou was one thing, but he also took the little beauty, Su Mei? He took in the pair of beautiful sisters, and those sisters even seemed like they completely surrendered themselves with unwavering hearts, and would marry no one other than him?!

It really made everyone feel a bit of disbelief, like a huge hammer of several billion tons stuck their heads to the point of buzzing.

Especially Su Mei's words of “reporting to Instructor Duanmu”. That made many people mute from fear because it was not a small matter. If Instructor Duanmu put down punishments, not to mention them, even their own instructors would have to receive the penalties. At that time, they would truly have horrid luck.

“Fiancé huh? It's not only he's truly become your husband. Why so protective?”

“That's right that's right. Juniors, there are exceptional people everywhere in the Four Seas Academy. He only has the cultivation of the third level of



the Heaven realm. Is he worth it for you to entrust yourselves to him for your entire lives? From what I see, it's much better to go with us!"

While many people feared, the two brothers Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai intentionally provoked. After all, the two of them were people also chosen by Divine Instructors. Moreover, they had great confidence they could become the disciples of Divine Instructors, so naturally, they were not frightened by Su Rou and Su Mei.

"Do you wish to die?" At that moment, Chu Feng was furious. Bloodlust was evident in his words. When there were really people who dared to make fun of his fiancées in front of him and moreover in public, Chu Feng truly had killing intentions.

"Chu Feng." Seeing that, Zhang Tianyi quickly went close to him and powerfully patted his shoulders, signaling him to not act rash.

He understood Chu Feng too well. Chu Feng was a smart person, and he definitely knew in those circumstances he could not easily perform attacks.

But Zhang Tianyi also knew that Chu Feng was a bloodthirsty person. If that bloodthirstiness was thoroughly ignited, Chu Feng would do some insane things, disregarding the consequences.

So, he was truly afraid. Afraid of Chu Feng starting a massacre at that place because with Chu Feng's cultivation, he could, without any problems, kill Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai.

However, Chu Feng did not enter the Four Seas Academy. That was the issue. He belonged to those outside of the academy, whereas Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai had already entered the Four Seas Academy, and could be counted as being somewhat part of the Four Seas Academy.

If Chu Feng were to kill those two, he would simply be slapping the Four Seas Academy's face. No matter what, the academy would not forgive Chu Feng, so he could not allow Chu Feng to assault them at that place.

“Shentu Jiang, Shentu Hai, you’ve got some problems? If you do, come at me. I, Jiang Wushang, will keep you busy at any time.” Jiang Wushang was also enraged. With a bang, he stood up, and loudly yelled at Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai.

His voice was clear, and almost everyone in the square heard it. Countless gazes looked towards them.

Those gazes belonged not only to those of outsiders. Many were also disciples of the Four Seas Academy. There were even some elders and instructors.

# Chapter 563 - Bidding

MGA: Chapter 563 - Bidding

“You think I’m afraid of you? I just don’t want to attack you in this place.” Facing the gazes of the crowd, containing even of elders and instructors, Shentu Jiang did not dare to be too aggressive. He pointed at Jiang Wushang and said, “Brat, just wait. Wait until tomorrow and see how I’ll take care of you.”

After finishing those mean words, they waved their big sleeves, walked towards nearby seats, and sat down.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, don’t worry. Just watch how Big Brother Tianyi and I will take care of these two bastard dogs tomorrow.” After Shentu Jiang and Shentu Ha left, Jiang Wushang spoke solemnly.

“Hoh.” However, Chu Feng only lightly smiled at Jiang Wushang’s words, and then gestured for them to sit down, and no longer paid attention to Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai.

Although Chu Feng feigned indifference on the surface, within the gaze he swept over their backs with, immense bloodlust emerged.

Chu Feng was definitely not going to just simply teach them a lesson when they dared to toy around with his own women right in front of his face. He would kill them. As long as the chance was given, he was definitely going to kill them.

Though their side’s disturbance attracted everyone’s attention, after the auctioning elder for the finale auction stepped onto the stage, everyone’s gazes were taken away by him because all of them knew that today’s greatest scene was finally going to begin.

“Sorry for the wait everyone.”

“In today’s auction, we’ve received quite a few treasures. I’m sure many of you will feel interested in the first item that will start it off.”

As the elder spoke, two young and beautiful females behind him pushed an exquisite little cart onto the auction stage.

Those two did not have very high levels of cultivation, and were clearly not people from the Four Seas Academy. It was likely they were that elder’s, or a certain disciple’s, servants.

The little cart they pushed up was very intricate too. Treasure was placed upon it, ready to be auctioned, but veiled over the little cart was a shiny cloth.

That cloth was not normal cloth, as it was reinforced with a Spirit Formation. Even World Spiritists could not detect what the treasure underneath the cloth specifically was with Spirit power. That increased the mysteriousness of the auctioned treasure, as well as the audience’s expectation.

\*whoosh\* The elder waved his big sleeve, then the two beautiful females pulled away the shiny cloth. A delicate dagger three inches long, swirling with five different coloured brilliance, appeared within the crowd’s line of sight.

“Rainbow Dagger. It is the Mastered Elite Armament personally made by Senior Qing Xianrou of the Immortal Execution Archipelago five hundred years ago, and also the only Elite Armament he made in his entire life. Starting price, five thousand Heaven beads!” The auction elder loudly called.

“Five thousand? A Mastered Elite Armament like that is actually selling for five thousand Heaven beads?” Chu Feng was a bit shocked. Indeed, the Rainbow Dagger’s quality was quite nice, but it wasn’t even comparable to his Asura Ghost Axe. It was, at most, similar to the two Mastered Elite Armaments he looted from Shentu Lang.

Although, within the category of Mastered Elite Armaments, its quality was decent, the starting price being five thousand Heaven beads seemed a bit too high.

“Nine thousand! Nine thousand, I’ll take it!”

However, when people started to endlessly bid, and when a person even called the price up to nine thousand Heaven beads, Chu Feng understood. The people of the Eastern Sea Region truly did not lack money!

No wonder the things he plundered from the Ji Dynasty, which were simply useless in his eyes, could sell for a hundred and fifty thousand Heaven beads.

From then on, there was a myriad of treasures entering the stage continuously, and there were also many different prices for them. However, not a single one of them could move Chu Feng’s heart.

That continued until another Elite Armament emerged onto the stage, of which stirred up Chu Feng’s interest. It was Elite Armament fan, and it wasn’t even a Mastered Elite Armament. It was just a normal Elite Armament fan.

But the special thing about it was the map imprinted upon it. It was said to be a treasure map, but because the specific lines on it were too blurry, no one was able to determine if it was real or fake.

The reason why Chu Feng felt interested wasn’t because of the fan itself. It was because Shentu Jiang seemed to be interested, which in turn made him interested.

“Five thousand Heaven beads.” Shentu Jiang yelled loudly. The fan wasn’t Mastered, and despite there being a map on it, because it was a bit blurry, he could not determine the specifics. But also because of that exact same reason, there were very few people willing to start a bidding war against him. The starting price was merely three thousand, so he was confident he had it with five thousand.

“Six thousand.” But at that moment, Chu Feng unconcernedly yelled out such a number.

Hearing that, Shentu Jiang lightly furrowed his brows and fiercely glared at Chu Feng, but said nothing other than another bid, “Seven thousand Heaven beads!”

“Eight thousand.” Chu Feng continued bidding.

At that instant, the fury on Shentu Jiang’s face soared immediately because he could tell that Chu Feng was messing with him. Yet, he did not dare to be sure whether Chu Feng was the same as him or not: to take a chance with luck, to hope that the Elite Armament’s map was truly a treasure map, and to see if he could find any opportunities within.

But no matter what, he would not easily give up. So, he glanced at Shentu Hai beside him. After a nod of his head, Shentu Jiang involuntarily gnashed his teeth, as if steeling his heart, before loudly yelling, “Ten thousand Heaven beads!”

“What? Ten thousand Heaven beads? This Elite Armament’s worth ten thousand Heaven beads?”

“Yeah! It is only an ordinary Elite Armament, and it’s not even a Mastered Elite Armament. It is on a completely different level than the high-quality Rainbow Dagger before.”

“The only special thing about this is the imprinted map on it, but since that map is so hazy, you can simply not ascertain if it’s a treasure map or not, or even if it’s a

map

or not. It is simply not worth such a price! Not to mention ten thousand, this Elite Armament is really worth no more than three thousand Heaven beads.”

“Ahh, with a single gleam I know already they’re from the Eastern Sea Region. Only people from that place have excessive hopes that they can rely on something like this to gain some sort of chance encounter, yet they do not know that there are innumerable Elite Armaments like this one in the Eastern Sea Region.”

“There are even many people who intentionally paint an unclear map on an ordinary Elite Armament and use that to raise the starting price. But in reality, they are just swindling.”

“It can’t be helped. In this world, there will always be people like them who like to daydream, and do things that are penny wise but pound foolish. Since they themselves are willing to do such a foolish thing by betting on this fan, so really, who can it be blamed on?”

After hearing Shentu Jiang call out that number, bursts of exclamations rang out instantly from the crowd. Some people even started to criticize Shentu Jiang’s action.

And also at that moment, Shentu Jiang came to a realization. He finally knew why no one fought over a Elite Armament that possibly held some amazing opportunity. So it seemed like those things were used to trick people in the Eastern Sea Region.

However, he was not a simple person. After being aware of the turn of events, he did not show any panic. Rather, he acted out a proud and very “cool” expression, looked towards Chu Feng, and even sent a provocative gesture at him.

He was implying that Chu Feng was a poor bastard, unworthy to match his price. He wanted to use that to enrage Chu Feng so he would continue bid, upon which he would back out with everything.

But how would Chu Feng not see through his little tricks? He did not even give Shentu Jiang a glance, and continued to chat and laugh with Su Rou and Su Mei, no longer bidding.

# Chapter 564 - Son of Magma

MGA: Chapter 564 - Son of Magma

“Damn your ancestor.” At that instant, the corners of Shentu Jiang’s mouth twitched, and he couldn’t help cursing at the bottom of his heart because he knew that he was played by Chu Feng. That guy clearly had no plans to buy the Elite Armament, and intentionally raised the price to force him into a trap.

“Is there any higher price than ten thousand Heaven beads?”

“Ten thousand going for once, ten thousand going for twice, ten thousand going for thrice!”

\*dong\* “This Elite Armament Treasure Fan belongs to that young knight.”

The sound of the bell settled, making Shentu Jiang’s face gloom completely because he knew that he wasted ten thousand Heaven beads on an ordinary Elite Armament. His foolishness with money this time truly went far.

Especially as he saw Chu Feng and the others’ applause and their pleased expressions at his misfortune, he grinded his teeth in fury, yet he could say nothing. He could only forcefully endure it, and silently take such a deficit.

“Okay! Of the items before, some have extraordinary origins, some have exquisite workmanship, but no matter what, they were all treasures created either by cultivators or World Spiritists.”

“Next up, we will auction some oddities not made by humans, but formed by nature.”

The elder clapped, then the two beautiful females pushed the auctioning cart up again. After tearing the cloth away, it was an object the same size



as a watermelon, yet was like cotton, and emitted faint radiance.

It was a Natural Oddity that contained dense Heaven power. After that treasure appeared, almost everyone's eyes lit up, intrigued.

They did so because it was a supreme cultivation treasure. When cultivated, it was treasure many times more useful than Heaven beads. It could be said to be a holy artifact used to make breakthroughs for Heaven realm experts.

“This Natural Oddity is called Firefly Silk. The Heaven power it contains is comparable to ten thousand Heaven beads, but it can be very easily absorbed, not something Heaven beads can compare to. When reaching upon times of breakthroughs, refine it, and you will obtain unimaginable effects. Starting price, one hundred thousand Heaven beads!” The auctioning elder loudly said.

“One hundred thousand Heaven beads, that expensive? Heaven power equivalent to ten thousand Heaven beads is actually selling for one hundred thousand Heaven beads?” Hearing those words, Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, and the others all felt disbelief.

“This is indeed a treasure. To normal people, its worth is much higher than Heaven beads. The price of one hundred thousand Heaven beads is absolutely worth it. But to me, it isn't too useful.” Chu Feng shook his head.

He felt that the Firefly Silk was indeed a treasure, because when normal people cultivate cultivation resources such as Heaven beads, they could absorb only a portion of its total power. That was also why Natural Oddities were so valuable. The power contained within made it easier for ordinary cultivators to absorb them.

But the reason why Chu Feng shook his head was because he was different than normal people. Even if it were Heaven beads, he could completely absorb all of the power within them. So, to Chu Feng, there was simply no difference between the special Natural Oddity, and Heaven beads.

“One hundred and ten!”

“One hundred and twenty!”

“One hundred and thirty!”

“One hundred and fifty!”

“Two hundred!”

After a round of bidding, someone actually raised the starting price of one hundred thousand to two hundred thousand, and at the end, the so-called Firefly Silk was taken by the astonishing bid of two hundred thousand.

It was an aged man, and based off of his appearance, he was at least over a hundred years old. His cultivation was very strong as well, being in the ninth level of the Heaven realm.

He was likely planning to use the Firefly Silk to undergo the final attempt. If he were to succeed, his cultivation could strengthen, and his life would be prolonged. If he were to fail though, then he wouldn't have many years left in him anyway, and there would be no use in leaving those Heaven beads around.

“Damn. Some lump of Firefly Silk really sold for two hundred thousand Heaven beads. This, this is twice the amount of wealth that my Jiang Dynasty accumulated for several thousands of years!” Jiang Wushang widened his mouth in shock, feeling inconceivability.

“Haha, Brother Wushang, don't forget. This is the Eastern Sea Region! More experts, so more wealthy people! Besides, there has always been a lot of cultivation resources in this place, so Heaven beads in this place are worth a lot less in comparison to the continent of the Nine Provinces.” Chu Feng patted Jiang Wushang's shoulder. It was something that he also learnt just now.

After the Firefly Silk, there were quite a few Natural Oddities that appeared in succession and brought up to the auction stage. Moreover,

they were all very rarely seen cultivation treasures, but their prices rose higher and higher as the treasures were auctioned.

There was even one that sold for a high price of one million Heaven beads. That price nearly shocked everyone on scene.

And the person who bought that object was a young man. He was garbed gorgeously, had airs of excellence, and was similar in age as Zhang Tianyi, but his cultivation was even above Zhang Tianyi. An expert in the fifth level of the Heaven realm.

That person was also the person who prepared to enter the Four Seas Academy. Furthermore, he was already chosen by a Divine Instructor. His name was Zhu Daye. He was a real genius, and he had quite the origin as well. He came from a wealthy and prominent clan in the Eastern Sea Region, and both his grandfather and his father were Martial Lords.

“The treasure coming up next is very special. Its rarity can be said to be far above the previous treasures. The power it contains is also completely incomparable to the former treasures. Accordingly, it should be priced at several millions of Heaven beads, but regretfully, the power it contains incidentally cannot be refined.”

“So, it is fated to have no use in terms of cultivation, but it is definitely a superb object for a collection.”

“As for its name, I’m sure everyone here has heard of it. From deep underground, from the legends, a Son of Magma!”

As the auctioning elder introduced it, an object as large as a newborn baby appeared on the auction cart. After that object appeared, everyone couldn’t avoid gasping deeply, excitement emerging into their eyes. In some people’s gazes, there was even fear.

It was truly the exact same as a baby. Simply, it was like an infant in deep sleep. However, it was absolutely not an infant because the skin on its entire body was steaming like lava. More accurately speaking, it was magma.

“What is that? It contains such berserk power!” At that instant, Chu Feng rose suddenly, excitement simply shooting out of his eyes.

He discovered that the so-called Son of Magma contained extremely dense power. It was much stronger than the Spirit Formation Essence he saw quite some time ago. If he were to refine it, Chu Feng could definitely make a breakthrough again.

“This is a Son of Magma. Legends say they are ancient organisms that exists deep underground. They are born from the earth, and can only be shaped after a thousand years of condensation.”

“But when a volcano erupts, it possibly forces them onto the surface from underground, and if they leave the magma before they are shaped, they will die.”

“Looking at this Son of Magma’s appearance, it should have condensed for almost a thousand years and was going to soon have its own intelligence, but sadly, it is already dead, and cannot become a real Son of Magma.” Yuhe explained.

“Son of Magma. Is there really such an organism in this world?” Hearing Yuhe’s seemingly exaggerated explanation, Jiang Wushang and the others expressed doubt.

# Chapter 565 - A Heavenly Great Deal

MGA: Chapter 565 - A Heavenly Great Deal

“It’s real. According to historical records, ten thousand years ago, a matured Son of Magma appeared in the Eastern Sea Region. At that time, it began a massacre. However, no one could defeat it. Even when all of the peak experts in the Eastern Sea Region gathered together, they were unable to defeat it.”

“In the Eastern Sea Region at that time, it was really like hell. Corpses formed mountains, and blood formed oceans. It was truly able to destroy the entire Eastern Sea Region with its own power.” Yuhe spoke solemnly.

“It was actually that powerful? But right now, the Eastern Sea Region still exists, which means it didn’t cause total destruction. Could it be that it left on its own accord?” Jiang Wushang asked curiously.

“Left on its own accord? How is that possible!”

“It has a bloodthirsty nature and simply no emotions. Killing is its hobby, so why would it leave on its own accord and let the souls of the Eastern Sea Region go?” Yuhe shook his head.

“Then what exactly happened?” As Chu Feng and the others were hung in suspense, they impatiently asked.

“It was defeated. An unknown hidden expert suddenly showed up. With his destructive might, he pushed the Son of Magma back, forced it back deep underground, and sealed the entrance that it came from. Only by doing that could the Eastern Sea Region be saved.” Yuhe narrated.

“He’s that powerful?! Who is that person, actually having such level of strength?” Jiang Wushang continued asking. At the same time, Chu Feng

and the others tightly stared at Yuhe, wanting to know who saved the Eastern Sea Region.

“No one knows who he is, and no one knows his name. It’s said that he was a young man with an extraordinary demeanor, and so strong that even the horrifying Son of Magma could not defeat him. If the guesses were correct, then he was likely a Martial Emperor.”

“Moreover, beside him, there followed four symbolic powerful divine beasts.”

“One was an azure dragon, one was a fiery phoenix, one was a white tiger, and one was a black tortoise. Those four divine beasts were incomparably strong, and like pets, accompanied the man.” Yuhe seriously narrated while he wore an idolizing expression.

“What?!” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression changed greatly and surprise emerged onto his face. Simultaneously, Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, Su Rou, and Su Mei did the same.

Hearing to that point, they could already guess roughly who that man was. He was very possibly the master of the terrifying Imperial Tomb within the Azure Province in the continent of the Nine Provinces; the super-expert who baffled the Nine Provinces ten thousand years ago, Qingxuantian.

After all, those four unique divine beast were too distinct. They were clearly the four Secret Skills created by Qingxuantian, and in addition to the time of “ten thousand year ago”, everything matched perfectly with Qingxuantian.

But what they did not expect was Qingxuantian’s achievements also being recorded in the Eastern Sea Region. He was even a hero who saved the Eastern Sea Region.

Although they had already guessed that the expert in Yuhe’s words was Qingxuantian, Chu Feng and the others did not say anything. After all,

three of Qingxuantian's Secret Skills were on Chu Feng. If that became known, it would very possibly attract a murderous disaster.

Ultimately, the inheritance of a peerless expert, the Secret Skills that had the ability to devastate the heaven and earth, was too enticing. If people were to know about that, there would definitely be many people who would try to take them away.

“A terrifying organism from the deep underground, a Son of Magma condensed by the earth. Starting price, one thousand Heaven beads!” The auctioning elder loudly shouted.

“One thousand Heaven beads? That thing has such an impressive origin, yet it is actually selling for so cheap?!” Jiang Wushang and the others all felt puzzled.

“It's too expensive. This price is too high. It is impossible for it to be sold.” However, as Jiang Wushang and the others felt shocked, Yuhe shook his head.

“Too expensive? Senior Yuhe, what do you mean? Are you saying that this Son of Magma is not even worth a thousand Heaven beads?” Jiang Wushang asked confusedly.

“The origin of this Son of Magma is impressive, yes, and it is also extremely rare, but all of that is useless when it can only be used for the eyes. It can only be collected and not refined.”

“In addition to that, ten thousand years ago, the Son of Magma almost destroyed the Eastern Sea Region! Therefore, many people view it as an inauspicious object, and who collects something that is inauspicious? Even if some person buys it, they would use a special method to seal it, so that the inauspicious feeling gets dispelled.”

“The price of one thousand Heaven beads is very expensive. Reasonably speaking, this Son of Magma is worth at most a hundred Heaven beads.” Yuhe explained with great understanding.

Chu Feng and the others still held their doubts after hearing Yuhe's words, but when there was really no one who bid after the starting price of one thousand Heaven beads was called out, and when there were even many people cursing, they had no choice but to believe it.

“Elder. This Son of Magma is an ominous object, and should be destroyed. How can it be collected?”

“I do not know who this thing belongs to, but one thousand Heaven beads is really too much. I am willing to take two hundred Heaven beads out to buy it and seal it off, in order to dispel the inauspiciousness.”

”I wonder only if the seller is willing to or not?!”

Just at that moment, a middle-aged man called out loudly. At the same time he spoke, he even swept his gaze around him, seeming to be searching for the owner of the Son of Magma.

He was a disciple of the Four Seas Academy, and his strength and position was quite high, so that was why he dared to speak those words.

“This...” At that instant, the auctioning elder was in a predicament. In the auctions, it was forbidden to reveal the identity of the treasure holder. Besides, this was an auction that allowed the seller to set their own starting price, rather than the price being set by the appraisal elders.

If it were a normal person, using his status as an auctioning elder, he could, in fact, change the price according to some rules, but all of that was useless as the seller of the object held a special position. Even he, the auctioning elder, did not dare to change the price without the permission of the seller.

Actually, even

he

knew that the Son of Magma was an ominous object, and was not even close to being worth the price of a thousand Heaven beads.



Logically speaking, he wouldn't even put something like that onto the auctioning stage, because that would do nothing but give rise to displeasure.

But he could do nothing as the seller was too obstinate. He simply didn't dare to argue, and could only take it out for auctioning, no questions asked. He even had to set an unreasonably high price to start it off.

“Elder! I'll take this Son of Magma for one thousand Heaven beads!” Just at that moment, Chu Feng spoke.

“What? There's really someone who's willing to spend a thousand Heaven beads to buy something like this?” Chu Feng's words attracted quite a few people's attention.

It was because nearly everyone felt that that sort of thing was not worth one thousand Heaven beads. Even if it was rarer, more special, it was absolutely not worth one thousand Heaven beads.

“My friend, are you sure you want to buy this Son of Magma?” Even the auctioning elder felt rather surprised because he also knew that the Son of Magma was not worth a thousand Heaven beads. So, he never even had plans to sell it.

“Elder, I want it.” Chu Feng very firmly nodded his head.

“Okay! If no one gives an even higher price, this Son of Magma will belong to you, my friend.” At that instant, the auctioning elder's face shifted and hurriedly yelled.

“He's sick! An idiot!”

“He's actually spending such money to buy such a thing! There must be something wrong with his brain!” After Chu Feng confirmed it, some whispering insults came from his surroundings.

But Chu Feng just faintly smiled at their insults. Perhaps in their eyes, the Son of Magma was an ominous object, but in Chu Feng's eyes, it was akin

to a priceless treasure.

A priceless treasure bought for merely one thousand Heaven beads. No one knew how joyful or how happy he was, but this time, he truly picked up a heavenly great deal.

# Chapter 566 - Moon Festival

MGA: Chapter 566 - Moon Festival

One thousand Heaven beads. With that price, it was definitely the cheapest treasure sold in tonight's finale auction stage.

But such a low price was viewed as a waste in many people's perspectives. So, there was naturally not going to be anyone who fought against Chu Feng for the Son of Magma.

Just like that, the priceless treasure, in Chu Feng's eyes, was easily bought into his hands with the price of one thousand Heaven beads. But in the eyes of outsiders, Chu Feng seemed more like an idiot. Some even felt he was mentally ill, yet no one knew Chu Feng's current excited emotions.

“Thank you elder.”

After the conclusion of the auctions, Chu Feng, with one thousand Heaven beads, obtained the Son of Magma, the oddity that came from deep underground. Looking at the fiery-red infant doll flowing with overwhelming power in his hands, Chu Feng's heart really

was

incomparably excited.

After grasping it in his hands, he believed more and more that the Son of Magma would help his cultivation grow, and there was absolutely no problem in making a breakthrough. After all, back then in the Imperial Tomb, a lot of Heaven power was already accumulated in his body.

“Honestly speaking, they are correct. The Son of Magma is an inauspicious object. Are you truly going to collect it?” Seeing such a joyful appearance from Chu Feng, the auctioning elder, as if he discovered kindness, reminded Chu Feng.

“Don’t worry elder. Of course I know about the Son of Magma, so I am certainly not buying it for a collection. If you must ask what I am planning to do with this, it can be understood as me preparing to thoroughly destroy it.” Chu Feng smilingly said.

“You’re a World Spiritist?” Hearing those words, a hint of astonishment flashed into the elder’s eyes, and a hint of surprise couldn’t help being within the gaze he looked at Chu Feng with. The power that the Son of Magma contained was extremely horrifying. Unless it was a Martial King, there was no one who could truly destroy it.

The only method of destroying it was for a World Spiritist to build a Sealing Formation and seal the Son of Magma. They call it “destroy”, but in reality, it was only sealing.

So, that was why the elder felt that Chu Feng was a World Spiritist, otherwise his cultivation did not allow him to have the methods to destroy the Son of Magma.

And being a World Spiritist, no matter where, was an excellent occupation. Given identical cultivation, they would always be a level higher than others, and make others treat them with an extra bit of respect.

“I am indeed a World Spiritist.” Chu Feng smiled, but since Su Ru and the others were waiting for him, and moreover there were still many people currently waiting to exchange their goods, Chu Feng only spoke a few courtesy words to that elder before turning around and leaving.

“I keep on feeling something off about this little boy. Judging by his age, he should be afraid when he sees the Son of Magma, yet he was very excited. Does he really know about this Son of Magma?” Gazing upon Chu Feng’s departing back, the auctioning elder muttered to himself.

“Did someone buy it?” But shortly after Chu Feng left, a hoarse old man’s voice suddenly resounded behind that elder.

Turning his head back to look, the auctioning elder’s initially unperturbed complexion turned immediately tense. He quickly bowed, and respectfully

said, “I pay my respects to Lord Taikou!”

The person who currently appeared in front of him was an aged man. Although his face was full of wrinkles, his head was full of black hair. He wore the clothing of a Four Seas Academy instructor, but he was extremely disheveled. Most importantly, he held a cane. He had only a single leg.

“We pay our respects to Lord Taikou!” At that instant, everyone at that location in the Four Seas Academy, no matter if it were elders, or disciples, or instructors, all of them saluted respectfully, fear emerging onto their faces.

Because that person was definitely one of the strongest characters in the Four Seas Academy. He was the leader of the Ten Divine Instructors, the strongest Divine Instructor who could easily defeat the nine others with a single hand, Taikou.

“I’m asking you. Have you sold it?” Instructor Taikou’s expression was chilly. The scar at the corner of his eye made him seem even more frightening.

Looking at it, the auctioning elder was terrified endlessly. His heart was uneasy, so he dared not to hesitate any longer, and quickly reported, “Milord, it has already been sold.”

“Oh?” Hearing those words, Taikou’s cold expression changed faintly, then he asked, “There’s really someone who bought my Son of Magma with one thousand Heaven beads?”

“Yes milord.”

“Who bought it?”

“It’s him. A young man named Chu Feng.” The auctioning elder hurriedly flipped through the auctioning bills and records, then gave the one to Taikou.

“Mm? He’s not a disciple of the Four Seas Academy, nor has he registered to enter the Four Seas Academy?!” Taikou’s eyes lit up when he saw Chu Feng’s information.

“Yes. That young man is different from the others. He somehow feels a bit special.” The auctioning elder said.

“Haha, interesting. This Chu Feng is rather interesting.” At that instant, what no one expected was that the usually cold Taikou brimmed with smiles on his face, then waved his sleeves and drifted away.

Only after he left did the people at that place breathe a sigh of relief, as if they released some heavy burden. Taikou’s position was really too high. His strength was very frightening as well, and he was an abnormality in the Four Seas Academy. Other than the head and several manager elders, not a single other person did not fear him.

Chu Feng and the others, however, did not know about the scene in the auction. Through the power of Teleportation Arrays, they arrived at Yuhe’s land.

Yuhe’s place definitely counted as small when compared to the other disciples of the Four Seas Academy, but with a glance, there were still a small mountain and a small lake. The scenery was quite nice, especially the rows of structures. They actually all belonged to Yuhe himself, and from that, it could be seen that the treatment the disciples of the Four Seas Academy received was truly very good.

In order to welcome Chu Feng and the others, Yuhe even specially prepared a lavish banquet. Under the night sky, they drank wine and conversed.

“Today’s moon is so round, so big, and so beautiful!” Su Mei normally did not touch any wine, but today, she wanted to drink nothing but wine. She, who had no resistance to alcohol, flushed like a red apple. Her speaking voice was very coquettish, very alluring.

“Little Mei, you can’t handle wine, so don’t drink that much! If you drink too much, you will feel very bad.” Su Rou urged on the side.

“Sister,

you’re

the one saying that? Aren’t you also drinking wine? Are you more tolerant than me? Ever since I was young, this is the first time that I’ve seen you drink wine!” Su Mei’s mouth smelt like alcohol as she giggled and said.

“I…” Su Rou was asked to speechlessness by Su Mei, and didn’t know how to reply.

“The two of you, drink less. I don’t usually see either of you drink wine, so what’s with you two today?” Chu Feng smiled and advised on the side.

“Hmph!” But after Chu Feng spoke, what he got instead were two glares by the two sisters. That made Chu Feng completely befuddled, and a bit embarrassed.

“Hoh, there’s nothing wrong with drinking some wine because today is the annual Moon Festival! It is a day very rare to come by.” Seeing Chu Feng’s slight embarrassment, Yuhe hurriedly spoke to diffuse the tension.

# Chapter 567 - Sleeping Together With You

MGA: Chapter 567 - Sleeping Together With You

“Moon Festival? What festival is that?” Su Mei blinked her hazy big eyes and asked, intrigued.

“Have you discovered that tonight’s moon is particularly big, particularly round, and particularly bright?” Yuhe lightly smiled, replying with a question instead.

“Yeah, yeah! Tonight’s moon is so beautiful. I have never seen such a beautiful moon.” Su Mei pursed her little lips, nodding in agreement.

“Heh, the moon is not normally this beautiful. Every year, it happens only once, and to this phenomenon, there are many types of explanations. However, in the Eastern Sea Region, the most widespread is a legend.” Yuhe said.

“Legend? What legend? Senior Yuhe, quickly tell me!” Su Mei curiously asked.

“The legends say in ancient times, only the sun existed and there was no moon. There were also no stars that filled the sky. So, during the day, the sun lit up the sky brightly, but when nighttime came, it was pitch-black, to the point where one could not see their fingers if they stretched out their arm.”

“In ancient times, there was a pair of lovers. Both were cultivators.”

“They were friends from a young age, and there was nothing they didn’t talk about. They had a very strong relationship.”



“The male even had exceptional talent, and was a very rare cultivation genius. In the cultivation world, he kept on making breakthroughs and soared powerfully.”

“But nothing could be done regarding the female’s ordinary aptitude, so she was slowly left behind, very far, by the male. However, their feelings did not fade away because of their distance in cultivation. Rather, they became stronger and stronger, and made those next to them very admiring.”

“However, with the flow of time, both of them got older and older. Although, with special medicine, the female could always keep her young beautiful appearance, the limit of her life gradually approached.”

“The male was aware of that, and started to madly think of methods to save the female. He cared not of her complexion, but absolutely, he could not lose her.”

“Finally, he thought of a way. It was to make himself stronger, so strong that he could prolong the female’s life.”

“And with his hard work, he finally stepped into an extremely outstanding realm. He lacked only one step before he entered a realm that none had entered before. It was a realm that was going to shock the world. In order to successfully take that single step, he painstakingly cultivated in isolation.”

“When he exited his seclusion, the world quivered. He gained the power to rule the world, and was already invincible. Everything was within his grasp.”

“But what he never, ever would have thought was that his single closed-door cultivation lasted for several hundred years. His lover existed no longer, eerie white bones were all that remained.”

“The man lost all spirit. He grasped the power to rule the entire world, became a god in the eyes of all the living, but he could do nothing to save the person he loved the most.”

“He cried for an entire day. When the night fell and he saw the pitch-black world, only then did he think of some words his lover said to him before.”

“She said, she disliked the night because if there were no flames, she could not see his face.”

“She said,

how great would it be if the night also had the sun

. She could then, at any time, see his complexion.”

“The man loved her too much. He loved her so much that without her, he lost any significance in living. Even though he had an uncountable number of years left in his life and received the world’s adoration, all of that was inferior to the female’s company.”

“Since he already lost any thoughts of surviving, since he already decided to accompany the female’s death, he chose to complete her wish before his death, and at the same time, made all lovers complete. He decided to bring light into the night.”

“So, he burnt his own body as the sacrificial price, he collected many Natural Oddities, and he laid a formation that covered the entire sky. It condensed above the Nine Heavens, and finally, he created an object. That object would appear during the nighttime to light up the world.”

“Moreover, when the man was forming such a thing, he named it with his final breath.

Moon

, the name of his lover.”

“It’s because of Moon that there is light in the night. So, in remembrance of Moon, people named the day that the moon was born on as the Moon Festival, and today is that day.”

“Although it is only a legend, it is widespread and has been passed down for generations. Furthermore, a special meaning was bestowed upon the moon. It is to cherish the ones close to you.” Yuhe detailedly narrated.

“Haha, nonsense! What is the moon? There is only one in this world, and no matter how much stronger a cultivator is, they cannot be so strong to make their body into a moon. It is merely a legend. How can it possibly be true?” At that instant, Jiang Wushang laughed loudly, feeling that it was rubbish.

“That’s right. How can the moon be created by a human? That’s too nonsensical. Come come come, drink, drink, drink!” Zhang Tianyi also spoke in contempt.

“Cherish those close to you, huh?” However, the joke-like legend in the males’ eyes stirred up special thoughts from the females.

Su Rou and Su Mei couldn’t help casting their gazes full of love towards Chu Feng who was drinking with Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi. There was no one who knew what they were thinking.

After the banquet, Chu Feng impatiently returned to his own room and took out the Son of Magma, wanting to refine it. After all, he currently had heavy responsibilities, so the earlier he raised his strength the better.

\*dong dong dong, dong dong dong\*

But just as Chu Feng prepared to take out the Son of Magma, his doors were knocked. Through Spirit power, Chu Feng knew that the one who came was Su Mei.

“Little Mei, we separated just now and you’re already missing me?” Chu Feng opened the doors and discovered that indeed, Su Mei stood outside. So, he couldn’t help teasing her.

“Yeah, I miss you.” However, surprisingly for Chu Feng, Su Mei who would usually be affected by his teases not only wasn’t affected in the slightest, she instead leaped, and pounced into Chu Feng’s embrace.

That wasn't even anything. After Su Mei entered the room, she closed the doors and actually, while hugging Chu Feng, shoved Chu Feng further into the room and pushed him onto the bed.

“Little Mei, you...” When facing Su Mei who acted completely differently than usual, Chu Feng was a bit lost on what to do.

Although Su Mei was often cheerful, lively, and was quite intimate with Chu Feng, she acted appropriately. For example, the thing between a man and a woman, or sleeping in the same bed. Those were forbidden behaviors, yet today, she seemed to be doing taboo actions.

“Tonight, I want to sleep together with you.” Su Mei slowly crawled onto Chu Feng's body, and again, put her little beautiful face up to Chu Feng's face, and with a sweet and warm, warm and delicate voice, spoke to Chu Feng.

\*gulp\* At that instant, Chu Feng fiercely swallowed some spittle because Su Mei in front of his eyes was too enchanting.

Under her eyelashes, a pair of big, walnut-sized eyes emanated haziness. On her pretty face, a layer of redness permeated. It was quite bewitching.

Especially as Chu Feng shifted his gaze downwards and scanned over her chest, he actually saw snow-white. The originally firm but soft spherical objects, when pressed against his chest, already became ovally, but gazing from the center, he could still see a V-shaped ravine. The size of that was not to be underestimated, and one could simply not see the bottom.

# Chapter 568 - Beneath The Round Moon

MGA: Chapter 568 - Beneath The Round Moon

At that instant, Chu Feng couldn't help inhaling a breath of cool air. He said hiddenly in his heart, "Little Mei has grown. She was already impressive before, and now, she is even bigger. She's simply comparable to her elder sister!"

Chu Feng was a man, and in a situation like that, he naturally had his reactions. Under his stomach, a "pillar to the heavens" arose, and it was quite imposing.

At first, Chu Feng even felt a bit of shame. After all, Su Mei was pressed on his body, so she could certainly clearly feel his change.

But what he did not expect was that Su Mei truly seemed to be another person. She clearly sensed it, but she did not avoid it. Not only did she allow Chu Feng to stare at herself, there was even a hint of a blush on her face. She opened her pink lips and moved in to kiss Chu Feng.

"Little Mei, what are you doing?" Yet, Chu Feng subconsciously evaded Su Mei's fragrant kiss because he promised Su Rou, that he would not do the thing between a man and a woman with Su Mei before marriage.

But right in front of his eyes, Su Mei's behavior was clearly off. If that continued, he would lose control over himself. At that time, he would commit an offense. He did not want to do the thing he promised not to do.

"Nothing. I just like you. I really, really like you. I want to give you my everything, and to only you." As Su Mei spoke, she suddenly stood, and in front of Chu Feng, took off her pink long skirt.

At that instant, Chu Feng instinctively gasped, his eyes roundly widened, and almost shot out two pillars of blood from his nose.

Because, at that very instant, what appeared in front of him was doubtlessly a perfect body. White and delicate skin, protruding fronts and behinds, and in addition to Su Mei's unique sweet face, and her blurry eye expression because of alcohol, it was simply irresistible by any man.

“Chu Feng, I not only like you, I love you. I am willing to do anything for you, and I am willing to give you everything. I will do anything you request me to do. I just can't lose you. I am yours, and only yours. I can give you anything.”

Suddenly, Su Mei leaped into his embrace again, causing Chu Feng to subconsciously hold her. But when he touched Su Mei again, the feeling he got from his hands was completely different.

Without the separation of clothing, Chu Feng's palm truly touched Su Mei's skin. The feeling of smoothness, warmth, and also some elasticity, was simply like a reignition of fire. It made the flames in Chu Feng's heart thoroughly burn, and it filled his entire body.

“Mm!”

Chu Feng spin around, and pressed his body onto Su Mei. He widened his mouth, and started to madly suck Su Mei's body, as if he wanted to put all of Su Mei into his mouth.

At the same time, his hands unrestrainedly went around everywhere. On Su Mei's perfect body, he rubbed and scratched, acting very wildly.

“Ahh~~~” When Chu Feng was so rough, Su Mei did not know if it hurt or not, so she involuntarily moaned.

But Su Mei's soft voice was like adding oil on fire, making Chu Feng even wilder. He very barbarously ripped off his clothes, and prepared to make some love with the beauty beneath him.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing?!”

But just at that moment, a fierce voice rang out suddenly behind Chu Feng. It made both Su Mei and Chu Feng shocked. Looking towards the origin of the voice, their complexions couldn't help changing further.

It was because at present, Su Rou appeared within the house. She stood ten meters away from the bed, looking at Chu Feng and Su Mei with both a stunned and horrified expression.

At that moment, it was as though Chu Feng and Su Mei did some vile thing as they hurriedly, in panic, wore their respective clothes, and during that period of time, Su Rou stood in front of the bed with the same expression.

“Chu Feng, do you remember what you promised me earlier? How can you do this?!” After waiting for Su Mei to wear her long skirt, Su Rou interrogated with an extremely strict tone.

“Sister, this isn't Chu Feng's fault, I...” But before letting Chu Feng speak, Su Mei rushed to explain.

“Little Mei, leave. Return to your room. I have something I want to talk to Chu Feng alone.” But before letting Su Mei finish speaking, Su Rou gestured her to leave.

Glancing at her elder sister, then looking at Chu Feng, Su Mei gnashed her teeth, pursed her lips, but ultimately, left with a shameful expression.

“I...”

“You don't need to say anything. I know that Little Mei went to find you. I'm her elder sister. How can I not understand her?”

“She loves you. Loves you greatly. She wants to let you know how much she loves you, so she wished to give her everything to you before you leave.”

“Chu Feng, I know your feelings are sincere to both me and Little Mei, but please understand. I still hope you two can wait until after the marriage before doing this sort of thing.”

“After all, having something to look forward to when you return is better than having nothing.”

Chu Feng initially wanted to say something, but Su Rou had a know-it-all appearance. Moreover, as she spoke, she walked up to Chu Feng, and did something that made Chu Feng stupefied. She actually slowly loosened her skirt in front of Chu Feng, and removed it.

At that instant, Su Rou completely exhibited her mature and well-developed, hot and fair body, in front of Chu Feng, and even leaped into Chu Feng’s embrace.

“Little Rou, you are?!” Chu Feng panicked a bit. He understood Su Rou’s words, but did not understand why Su Rou would suddenly do all that because in his perspective, although Su Rou was already “owned” by him, she was still a bit against doing the thing between a man and a woman.

“Chu Feng, Little Mei loves you, but I also love you. Little Mei can give anything to you, and I similarly can give anything to you.”

“Chu Feng, please forgive me. Forgive my stubbornness. I only have one sister, Little Mei, so I hope you can love her more than you love me.”

“Just wait a bit longer. Little Mei is sooner or later yours. We sisters are yours. But before that, she can’t do it with you, so let me take her place.”

Su Rou’s gentle tone kept on lingering next to Chu Feng’s ears, and her slender hands tore away the clothes Chu Feng wore just now, and started to trace along Chu Feng’s heated body.

In that situation, no man could continue enduring. Besides, Chu Feng was an impatient, “real” man.

So, his



thing

that he just controlled exploded again. Ignoring all, he pressed Su Rou underneath. However, this time, Chu Feng learnt his lesson. Before doing the deed, he laid a powerful Spirit Formation, sealing the entire house, preventing anyone from interrupting his good time.

Under the bright round moon, in the room that overflowed with love, one manly and one soft body interweaved, creating an enviable beautiful scene.

# Chapter 569 - Road of Death

MGA: Chapter 569 - Road of Death

The next morning, when Chu Feng reawakened, he discovered that Su Rou was there no more, but next to the bed, she left behind some bodily fragrance, letting him know that Su Rou did indeed accompany him for a night.

When he walked out of the room and saw Su Rou and Su Mei again, he discovered the sisters were holding each other's hands, and smiling while chatting. Their serene appearances made it look as if nothing happened last night at all.

It made the piece of worry in Chu Feng's heart disappear like a sliver of smoke. He once again felt how strong the two sisters felt about one another, as if nothing could make conflicts arise between them.

"How was it? Did you sleep comfortably last night?" After Su Mei saw Chu Feng, with her little hands behind her back, she walked up to Chu Feng and asked naughtily next to his ear.

"Eh, you little girl..." There was guilt in his heart, so he was a bit embarrassed. He couldn't avoid casting his gaze towards the nearby Su Rou, but discovered she only curled up her red lips and beautifully smiled, then turned her head away and no longer paid attention to Chu Feng.

At that instant, Chu Feng could really do absolutely nothing. He even thought that Su Rou told Su Mei what they did last night, or somehow Su Mei learnt about what he and Su Rou did.

But when Su Mei's red lips quivered and a mental message was projected into his ears, Chu Feng was instantly speechless.

"Next time, find a secretive place, and I'll give myself to you then. But be careful, we can't be discovered by my sister or else she will definitely not

forgive me~”

Just like that, on the special day of the Moon Festival, though Chu Feng was unable to be “complete” with Su Mei, he shared a bed with Su Rou once again. Although the process in which that happened made Chu Feng a bit lost, he once again experienced how much the sisters loved him.

The reason why they acted like that was because they were loath to separate with him. After all, from today on, Chu Feng was going to leave the Four Seas Academy and step onto an uncertain trek.

This day was also the final day of the Four Seas Academy’s disciple examination. The disciples who passed the examination before already had their respective instructors, and were currently entering the Four Seas Academy.

Of those people, the ones most focused upon were, of course, Su Rou and Su Mei. Their instructors were Divine Instructors! They really gave rise to envy.

But other than Su Rou and Su Mei, there were also many people who were admired, and those included Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang. They had already gained the qualifications to enter the Four Seas Academy, and also gained the chance to become disciples of Divine Instructors.

That chance was currently grasped within their own hands. Whether they could successfully become disciple of Divine Instructors, and from then on rise greatly in position, depended on their own abilities.

Those who fought to become disciples of Divine Instructors were all from the young generation. Their strengths were not weak, and they were all geniuses. However, in Chu Feng’s eyes, not a single one could defeat him.

Looking at those in the young generation, the ones with the highest strengths were only in the sixth level of the Heaven realm, and if Chu Feng used the power of his lightning, his cultivation would also enter the sixth level of the Heaven realm. In the same level, who could defeat Chu Feng? At least, up until now, only Zi Ling could.

In reality, not only Chu Feng, even Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi didn't have too much pressure. Not only did they destroy all the obstructions in the examination, they even defeated all their opponents, and at the end, became disciples of Divine Instructors, genius disciples who would be gazed upon by many.

In the process, they, with the cultivation of the third level of the Heaven realm, fiercely beat up Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai, who were both in the fourth level of the Heaven realm. Those two battles were one of the few, out of the many, fights that made people exclaim in admiration.

Chu Feng also felt happy for Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang when they were stared at by countless admirative and praiseful gazes as they become disciples of their respective Divine Instructors and also became disciples who were the most excellent and had the most potential in the Four Seas Academy.

It at least meant that they weren't only geniuses in the continent of the Nine Provinces. Even in the Eastern Sea Region, they similarly could make a standing for themselves.

After Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi successfully became disciples of Divine Instructors, Chu Feng decided to leave on the exact same day because on this day, those who weren't able to enter the Four Seas Academy had to leave.

But when leaving, Chu Feng didn't let them send him off because he didn't want to leave on a sad note. He wanted to keep a cheerful heart before stepping onto his next journey.

And just as he arrived in front of the Teleportation Array, Chu Feng recognized two familiar figures. It was Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai. Currently, bestowed by Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang, their noses were blue and their faces swollen. As they walked in the crowds of people, many whispers arose. It was extremely shameful.

Seeing their lips moving slightly yet no sound was made, Chu Feng knew that they were sending mental messages.

So, Chu Feng spread out his Spirit power, and with its immense strength, caught strands of their voices, and with that, listened into their mental conversation.

“God damn, we were actually defeated by those two guys in the third level of the Heaven realm. This time, we’ve truly lost a lot of face.”

“Sigh. If Big Brother Shentu Lang were here, he could definitely fiercely give those two a lesson.”

“Of course! If he was here, out of this year’s new disciples, he would have definitely become the most well-known person. When would it even be their turn to take the spotlight?”

“But, why hasn’t he still not arrived yet? Didn’t we say he was going to enter the Four Seas Academy as well? What the hell is he doing?!”

“Who knows? But I’m sure Big Brother Shentu Lang must have his own plans.”

Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai, indeed, were complaining about everything because of their defeat in battle. Moreover, from their words, Chu Feng also confirmed that they were indeed in the same group as Shentu Jiang.

“Oh? Who’s this? Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai right? What happened? I haven’t seen you for only a day, yet your heads have become pig heads?”

“Ah, I know. You must have taken quite a few blows from today’s fight right? Who was it from? It wouldn’t be from Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang right?”

“This is truly embarrassing you guys! Last night, you even put the word out there, and said you were going to beat up Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang. How come today, when you really go fight, you’re beaten to this state? So you only know how to brag and nothing else?” After eavesdropping on their mental conversation, Chu Feng intentionally walked up to them and jeered loudly, as if wishing the entire world could hear him.

“You!!” The two already had stomachs full of anger, so when they were made fun of by Chu Feng, their faces immediately turned livid, and were so furious that their veins popped out.

“Hmph.” But the two of them did not say much, and turned around with a cold snort because they were, indeed, defeated. It was something that everyone knew. If they continued defending themselves or hurling insults, they would get nothing but more ridicule. So, they could only endure.

“Ahh, don’t leave! Come chat for a bit longer!”

“What? You can’t take a few more words? Don’t you know what ‘wise advice goes against the ear’ means?”

“Trash! If I were you two, I would have burrowed myself into some hole in the wall. Pfs, some dog-butt Shentu Dynasty. So it’s a place specialized for raising up garbage!” Although the two of them already turned around, Chu Feng did not let them go easily. His insults were extremely loud, and only after the two of them disappeared from his line of sight did Chu Feng smile lightly, as if some evil plot succeeded.

Quickly after, relying on Teleportation Arrays, Chu Feng left the Four Seas Academy. However, he found out that two people were secretly following him.

As for who those two were, Chu Feng knew even with his eyes shut. They were definitely Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai. The two of them were already displeased at Chu Feng, and just now, he mocked them in such a way as well. How could they truly endure that?

This time, by following him, they naturally aimed to give Chu Feng a lesson. Little did they know that the humiliation before was merely a scheme set up by Chu Feng. They even thought they could fiercely beat Chu Feng up, but were ignorant to the fact that they were already led onto a road of death.

# Chapter 570 - Brothers Meeting

MGA: Chapter 570 - Brothers Meeting

Within the Four Seas Academy, arbitrary fighting was forbidden, and even more so, arbitrary murder was forbidden.

So, if Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai wished to take care of Chu Feng, they had to follow him all the way until he left the territory of the Four Seas Academy before they could do anything to him.

But Chu Feng was not as easy to handle as they had thought. After he left the grounds of the Four Seas Academy, Chu Feng used the bodily martial skill, the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens, for quicker movement.

Although the speed of the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens was not comparable to the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, it was still very fast. It forced Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai to use everything they had, yet they could still not catch up to Chu Feng.

Although the two of them could not catch up, they weren't left behind by him either. They advanced forward with the same level of speed. At first, the two of them even thought that Chu Feng discovered them, but, they found out in no point in time was he anxious, and moreover, he even sang as he travelled. How was that leisure attitude even close to preparing for the arrival of an enemy?

So, the two brothers, Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai, determined that Chu Feng had yet to discover them. But Chu Feng's method of movement was too aberrant. Not only was his speed quick, when he moved, he didn't even sleep or rest, didn't eat or drink, and when he moved, he continued non-stop for several days.

But naturally, Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai, who hated Chu Feng and the others down to the bone, and could only vent their anger by killing Chu

Feng, were not willing to give up so easily. So, they kept on following him. Only after entering the grounds of the luxurious tavern did they discover that traces of Chu Feng disappeared.

“Dammit! Where did that brat go? How come he suddenly disappeared?!” Shentu Jiang stood above the luxurious tavern and looked down, yet could not see even Chu Feng’s shadow. He couldn’t help panicking because more and more, he felt that they were possibly being toyed around by Chu Feng.

“This is quite familiar... Heavens! This place, isn’t this place that tavern we rested in when we first came to the Eastern Sea Region?” After Shentu Hai detailedly observed the things below, he suddenly became shocked.

“That’s true! At that time, there was still people circulating in this place, and it was even very prosperous! Why has it been destroyed to this state? Something must have happened here.” Hearing Shentu Hai’s words, Shentu Jiang discovered as well that indeed, it was the tavern they had took a rest in before.

\*gulugulugulu\* But as they were baffled, from the center of the tavern, burst of strange sounds rang out.

“Some sound is coming from over there, let’s quickly go check it out.” Hearing those sounds, Shentu Jiang’s and Shentu Hai’s expression changed. They even thought that they had found Chu Feng, speedily flying towards the direction of the sound.

“This, what is this?” But when the two flew over and saw the object that the noise came from, they hurried covered their mouths and noses, almost vomiting.

Because, under them, there was a churning pit of excrement. Currently, bubbles kept on forming from the excrement, and

gulugulu

sounds came from it as well. At the same time, a revolting stench permeated that land.



\*boom\* But abruptly, within the pit of excrement, an explosion burst out. At the same time, like a volcano erupting, excrement soared into the sky.

“Damn!” Seeing the yellow-coloured object shooting straight towards them, Shentu Jiang’s and Shentu Hai’s faces greened. They quickly used their strongest bodily martial skills and dodged to the side. Only by doing that did they avoid being tainted by the poop.

“Haha, I’ve finally gotten out!”

But just as the two of them celebrated their successful evasion of such a catastrophe, an elated voice suddenly rang out in the sky full of excrement. Looking towards the origin of the voice, Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai were immediately dumbstruck, and even rubbed their eyes quickly because they did not dare to believe the scene happening in front of their eyes.

Because, at that very instant, they recognized the person who was standing in the air and insanely laughing. He was the number one genius of the Shentu Dynasty, Shentu Lang.

“Big Brother Shentu Lang, it’s really you?!” With inconceivable emotions, Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai yelled out at the same time.

“Little Jiang, Little Hai? What are you two doing here?” Seeing Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai, Shentu Lang’s expression shifted, feeling very surprised.

“Big Brother, that’s something that

we

should ask you... Why didn’t you participate in the Four Seas Academy’s examination, and why were you there?” Shentu Jiang pointed at the pit of excrement underneath, replying to a question with a question.

“Ahh, it’s a long story, but damn, I truly stumbled upon bad luck.” Hearing Shentu Jiang ask about it, Shentu Lang didn’t hide anything and roughly outlined what happened to him.

“So something like that happened.” And after knowing that Shentu Lang was sealed into the pit of excrement by a person even younger than him, Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai were both astounded, feeling quite a bit of disbelief.

After all, they understood Shentu Lang’s strength. He was the number one genius in the several hundred years of Shentu Dynasty history. That appellation was absolutely not falsely gained, and they even felt that if Shentu Lang had participated in the Four Seas Academy’s examination, he would have become the most well-known person there. Perhaps he would have even become the strongest person in the examination.

Yet at present, someone’s strength was actually above Shentu Lang’s while that person was younger than him. How could they not be astounded?

“That’s right. Little Jiang, Little Hai, at this time, the Four Seas Academy’s examination should have finished right? Why aren’t you waiting inside the academy, and have come to this place?” Shentu Lang curiously asked.

“Don’t mention that. We originally came here chasing after a brat, but who would have thought after arriving at this place, he disappeared.” Shentu Jiang said with a face packed with anger. The more he thought about himself and Shentu Hai, the more they felt that they might have been tricked.

“Little Jiang, what exactly happened? Quickly tell me.” Seeing their fury, Shentu Lang knew that his two brothers might have been wronged.

Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai didn’t conceal anything either. They roughly narrated the events that had occurred to Shentu Lang.

“This is truly preposterous. There’s actually someone who dares to bully my brothers like that?!” Indeed, after knowing about it, Shentu Lang gritted his teeth with overflowing anger, then patted his chest and guaranteed, “Little Jiang, Little Hai, don’t worry. From what you’ve said, he shouldn’t have run too far. Right now, I’ll help you two search for him. With my strength, he shouldn’t even think of escaping from my palm.”

“That’s great! Big Brother, if it’s you, not to mention him, even those few in the Four Seas Academy will not end up well!” At that instant, Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai acted as if they had found their backbone. Their faces were full of happiness and excitement.

“No need to look for me. I’m here.” But just at that time, a loud and clear voice suddenly exploded in the air. Soon after an imposing dragon’s roar suddenly resonated as well.

At that instant, they saw wind blowing everywhere in the sky. The clouds shifted around, and a huge azure-coloured dragon, with powerful might, appeared in the sky.

And on that huge azure dragon’s head, there stood a person. That person was none other than Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, you actually dare to appear in front of us.”

“Big Brother, it’s him. He’s the person who humiliated the two of us publicly. Today, you must lend a hand to us to give this brat a good lesson!” When they saw Chu Feng, Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai were endlessly ecstatic.

But when they cast their gazes at Shentu Lang, awaiting his attack to torture Chu Feng for a good while, their faces couldn’t help changing, and with extremely nervous tones, they shouted simultaneously, “Big Brother, you, what’s wrong with you?!”

# Chapter 571 - Who?

MGA: Chapter 571 - Who?

Presently, Shentu Lang no longer had his former arrogance. His face was full of terror.

He, quivering, held up his hand, pointed at Chu Feng who stood atop the azure dragon in the sky, then asked Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai, “You, you two, the person you two were chasing wouldn’t be him, would it?”

“It is him, Big Brother. Is there a problem?” Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai were not idiots, so when they saw Shentu Lang’s expression, they knew some things must have happened.

“Dammit. The person who sealed me in this place is him! The person we were talking about are the same!” Shentu Lang spoke those words with a voice of hatred, but also helplessness.

“What? The person who defeated you was him? How is that possible? He’s only in the third level of the Heaven realm!”

After hearing Shentu Lang’s words, Shentu Jiang’s and Shentu Hai’s complexion changed. They couldn’t help looking at Chu Feng again, examining him carefully. Although Chu Feng’s current atmosphere was indeed extraordinary, in their eyes, it should still be impossible for him to defeat Shentu Lang.

“There’s no time for any explanations! Run! I’ll hold him off for you. Do not look back, and scam! The farther you go the better!”

Shentu Lang suddenly howled, and while doing that, he grabbed Shentu Jiang’s and Shentu Hai’s shoulders, and flung his arms with power that could uproot a mountain. Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai, like arrows, shot towards the distant sky.

“Brat, you dare to lock me inside the pit of excrement and forcefully use such waste to prolong my life! I have never received such humiliation in my life, and even if I cannot defeat you, I will not stop fighting until one of us dies!”

The current Shentu Lang was completely different from the past. His gaze was like a torch. His bloodlust overflowed. He, who embraced a determined heart to die, had not the slightest bit of fear. He only had thoughts to delay Chu Feng.

*\*bang\** Finally, he stepped forward. Boundless aura exploded from the ground as he rushed towards the clouds, heading straight for Chu Feng.

Holding nothing back, he released the aura of the fifth level of the Heaven realm. It surged forward, and even the air twisted when it passed by. The might it had was not weak at all.

But in Chu Feng’s eyes, no matter what Shentu Lang did, he would never be able to defeat him. He was like an ant in front of him. A raise of a hand or foot could crush him.

So, a hint of a smile formed, and he said, “There’s quite the bond you have between you and your brothers, and because of that, I won’t touch your Shentu Dynasty. But, you three brothers must die. This is the reasonable price you pay for your own actions.”

Immediately after he finished speaking, lightning surged within his eyes, and the Heaven power within his body started to quickly change as well, causing his aura to instantly rise rapidly.

Fourth level, fifth level, sixth level. In merely an instant, Chu Feng’s aura rose from the third level of the Heaven realm to the sixth level of the Heaven realm.

*\*boom\** After his aura finished adjusting itself, Chu Feng wasted no breaths saying anything. He opened his five fingers slightly, he leveled his arm slightly, and very easily, casually, palmed towards Shentu Lang who was dashing straight at him.

The earth and heavens were shocked by that palming. The might it contained was strong; it was as powerful as a dragon!

\*boom rumble rumble rumble\*

With such a simple palm, Chu Feng overwhelmed Shentu Lang's aura by several times.

At that instant, explosions burst out in the sky, the winds and clouds were altered, and the world trembled, as if everything went into chaos.

Looking at the roiling Heaven power coming towards him, Shentu Lang's complexion distorted greatly as well. Although he had a very grand demeanor before, and even tossed away any thoughts of living, when he truly saw Chu Feng's strength and truly faced death, he still feared.

But, this time, Chu Feng really did not give him any chances of survival. So, one saw only see the Heaven power streak across the sky, and the places it passed were all torn into pieces.

As for Shentu Lang, he was the same. With a

puchi

, the number one genius of the Shentu Dynasty, a cultivation expert in the fifth level of the Heaven realm, became a pool of blood within the turbulence of Heaven power. He could not even form a Consciousness.

“Heavens! Is-is-is he still human?!”

“How can he be that terrifying? He is simply like a demon!”

In the distant sky, there stood two people. They were precisely Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai. They had not left yet, because they did not believe that Chu Feng could kill Shentu Lang.

But at that instant, they did. Chu Feng, who they didn't even put into their eyes, was the most terrifying out of the five-man group. At that instant,

they were truly afraid. It was impossible for them, who personally saw Chu Feng kill, to be not afraid.

\*whoosh\* But just at that moment, Chu Feng who stood in the faraway sky, turned his head around. He cast his cold gaze at Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai.

“Crap, he has seen us! Run, run!!”

Their hearts immediately wavered when they met Chu Feng’s eyes. Their legs went limp, as if their blood was frozen. That kind of fear made them crawl back up while in the sky, and they almost fell down. Only after struggling for a good while could they stabilize their bodies.

\*swish\*

But just as they prepared to use their bodily martial skills and escape with all they had, a burst of gale whooshed past them from behind. An enormous monster had appeared in front of them.

That enormous monster had shining green scales and mist surrounded it. It was a huge azure dragon, and on the head of the azure dragon, Chu Feng was chillingly staring at them. Though it lacked strong killing intent, his icy gaze was still frightening.

\*poof\*

“Big Brother Chu Feng, we were wrong! We had eyes but couldn’t recognize Mount Tai! We shouldn’t have been disrespectful to you, so please give us a chance!” Shentu Jiang immediately knelt in the air and pleaded.

\*bang bang\*

Shentu Hai was even fiercer. Not only did he kneel in mid-air, he first unforgivingly slapped himself two times, before speaking painfully with tears and snot, “Master Chu Feng, it was my fault, it was my fault! I shouldn’t have looked for trouble, I shouldn’t have insulted your friends!

Please, as a great character, have benevolence! Please be broad-minded with us, and give us a chance to start anew! I'm begging you, have mercy!"

Chu Feng's emotions did not shift in the slightest when he looked at those two, because when he wished to kill a person, he would not be swayed.

So, Chu Feng said only one sentence, "Both of you are less than Shentu Lang."

\*boom\* Immediately after he spoke, his thoughts spun around. Chu Feng did not use Heaven power, but Spirit Formation power. Blue-coloured Spirit Formations became a cage, and from all directions, locked the two of them inside.

Quickly after, it rapidly shrunk, then with two "poofs", they were forcibly crushed into pieces, and died very thoroughly.

\*whoosh\*

He killed them with lightning-like methods. Then, Chu Feng spread open his palm slightly, then two faint lights, like meteors going backwards, flew towards his palms from the place they died at.

Looking closely, they were two Cosmos Sacks, and those two Cosmos Sack were naturally the remnants of Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai.

\*whoosh\* However, just as he obtained the Cosmos Sacks, Chu Feng flipped his palm, throwing them into his pocket, then cast his incomparably serious gaze behind him, and said, "Who?"



# Chapter 572 - The Queer Taikou

MGA: Chapter 572 - The Queer Taikou

“Quite sensitive Spirit power. You’ve actually detected me after I approached.” Just as Chu Feng spoke, a nearby space in the sky twisted. A single-legged old man appeared inside Chu Feng’s line of sight, and was chuckling while looking at him.

“Who are you. Why are you following me?”

After seeing that person, Chu Feng couldn’t help lightly knitting his brows because before, he wasn’t really able to ascertain whether a person was near him or not. He only felt that something was off, but couldn’t confirm if it was really a person.

The shout just now was merely a test, so he didn’t expect a person to truly come out. Thus, that old man’s appearance really did frighten Chu Feng.

In addition, not only did the old man in front of him wear clothing of a Four Seas Academy instructor, he even had unfathomably deep cultivation. And just now, Chu Feng killed two disciples from the Four Seas Academy. All of that made the situation head towards a disaster.

“You don’t need to be afraid. Although I am from the Four Seas Academy, I won’t charge you for any crimes because of two useless disciples. Rather, my thoughts are the same as yours; I feel that those two disciples should be killed.” The single-legged old man seemed to know what Chu Feng was worried about, and quickly smiled, explaining.

“Who are you? What are you planning by following me?” Chu Feng only determined that his strength was very strong, but could not determine whether he was an enemy or a friend. So, he was very cautious towards him.

“Hehe. My name is Taikou, and I’m a Divine Instructor of the Four Seas Academy. I have but one goal for coming here: I feel that you’re a genius, so I hope you can become my disciple. If you do, I will do all I can to develop you.” Taikou was quite straightforward, and spoke his intentions directly.

“What? You’re a Divine Instructor? You want me as your disciple?!” And after the old man spoke his words, Chu Feng was shocked.

Given his strength, he was indeed qualified to be a Divine Instructor, and was even a lot stronger than the Divine Instructors Chu Feng saw before. So, when he stated his name and identity, the first thing he thought of was that the old man in front of his eyes was very possibly the strangest but most powerful instructor out of the Ten Divine Instructors.

But that person clearly never took any disciples, and clearly Chu Feng wasn’t a Four Seas Academy disciple. Yet, he actually ran over here and said he wanted him as his disciple? What was all that for? It really made Chu Feng a bit speechless, and made him very stupefied.

“When I, Taikou, speak, I am always straightforward. My friend Chu Feng, I just wonder... are you willing to or not?” Taikou said with a light smile.

And at that instant, Chu Feng felt even more uneasy. Since the old man in front of him knew his name, he seemed to have done a bit of investigation. But Chu Feng still didn’t understand why he wanted to take him as a disciple. But, regardless if it was real or fake, or if there were other intentions, Chu Feng did not plan to enter the Four Seas Academy.

So, he clasped his hands, and politely said, “It is my honour to able to catch your eyes, Senior Taikou. However, I haven’t entered the Four Seas Academy. It doesn’t seem to be too appropriate to be your disciple given that, right?”

“Don’t worry. As long as you are willing to be my disciple, you will naturally be a disciple of the Four Seas Academy. Rules such as ‘you must pass the examination’ are only restrictions for ordinary people.

You

have no need for them.” Taikou waved his hand. His attitude towards Chu Feng was very friendly.

But Chu Feng truly did not plan to enter the Four Seas Academy. So, he could only shake his head, saying, “Senior Taikou, I am truly sorry. I do not wish to enter the Four Seas Academy.”

“Oh?” Hearing his words, Taikou’s sword-like brows slanted inwards, and he seemed a bit displeased, but that displeasure passed by within a flash. Very soon, he sighed, releasing the tension inside him, and said, “Those who wish to become my disciple are not suitable for me, and those I wish to become my disciple do not find me suitable. Such is fate. Whatever, I capitulate.”

As he spoke, Taikou turned around, and disappeared. But at the same time, a mental message was projected into Chu Feng’s ears.

“My friend Chu Feng, I’ll be blind to today’s matters, but in the future, if anyone dares to bully you in the Eastern Sea Region, you can use my name, Taikou. If there comes a day that you want to become my disciple, I, Taikou, welcome you with open arms.”

“Thank you Senior Taikou!” Chu Feng quickly saluted and thanked, but he did not receive any response from Taikou.

After waiting there for a while, Chu Feng concentrated and used his Spirit power to observe his surroundings. But, he could not detect any change, so he determined that Taikou truly left.

“That instructor is really as the rumours say. Extremely odd.” Chu Feng was fairly speechless when facing Taikou, but he did leave quite a nice impression behind. Although Taikou’s strange nature was a bit queer, at least he seemed to be an honest and broad-minded person.

But after experiencing such an event, Chu Feng also became more alert. He wore the Transformational Mask he got from the Hundred-faced Old

Man back then, and made the illusion of an ordinarily-faced middle-aged man with a large build.

Chu Feng decided he would show himself to the public as that man. With that, even if he were to stir up some trouble, it wouldn't affect himself, nor would it affect Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, and the others.

Moreover, Chu Feng gave himself a new name: Wuqing. As for the reason, it was very simple as well. In order to reach his goal, Chu Feng had to be a heartless [1] person.

After changing his face, Chu Feng set his first destination. The Lovers Terrace.

Qiushui Fuyan was in the Lovers Terrace. She was the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church, and also Huangfu Haoyue's former lover.

So, Chu Feng felt that when Huangfu Haoyue still held his rationality, he should have said something to Qiushui Fuyan. Thus, Qiushui Fuyan was likely the only other person who likely knew Chu Feng's ancestry.

However, the Eastern Sea Region was vast. If he wished to reach the Lovers Terrace, he would have to spend quite a bit of time.

Before that though, Chu Feng needed to raise his cultivation. So, he first found a hidden place, and prepared to refine the Son of Magma.

“Chu Feng, why not take out the Elite Armament fan Shentu Jiang obtained from the auction? Perhaps you can discover something.”  
However, just as he found a hidden place and before he started refining, Eggy spoke.

“That fan? On the fan, there is indeed a picture, but it's a bit blurry and there's no way to determine what is imprinted on it. I can't even be sure if it's a map or not.” Chu Feng said.

“Idiot. To normal people, indeed, it would be challenging, but you're different. Don't forget, you're a person who has cultivated the Heaven's

Eyes. With a glance, you can see the essence of something like this.”

“Although you haven’t thoroughly grasped the Heaven’s Eyes, after all, you have already cultivated it for such a long period of time. The picture on the fan coincidentally serves to test the results of your cultivation.”

“No matter if it’s real or fake, as long as you can confirm either, it means that you have grasped the early stage of the Heaven’s Eyes. If you run into a place that conceals strange treasures, you should also see it.” Eggy said.

“Yeah! How did I forget about it? The Heaven’s Eyes that I cultivated allows me to see things that others cannot. It can also reconstruct incomplete things!” After hearing Eggy’s words, Chu Feng realized it as well. Without saying anything more, he quickly took out the Elite Armament fan.

# Chapter 573 - Sacred Entities

MGA: Chapter 573 - Sacred Entities

Chu Feng opened up the Elite Armament fan. At a near distance, he found out that on the fan, there was really a picture imprinted.

There were still a few distinct lines on the picture, but most of them were blurry. In a normal person's perspective, indeed, it was a useless picture. However, when Chu Feng gazed with greater detail, his eyes couldn't help lighting up, because he subconsciously felt that there were a few hidden things in the picture.

So, he quickly revolved the Spirit power in his body, and concentrated it into his eyes. When the Spirit power finished condensing, Chu Feng's eyes instantly changed greatly. Special power was inside his eyes, and in short, the fierceness was a bit frightening.

That special change happened because Chu Feng used the Heaven's Eyes. He grasped but the most basic level of the Heaven's Eyes power. To be more precise, he was just barely into the introduction.

So, he was still unable to control the power of the Heaven's Eyes. If he used it, immediately, it would make his gaze appear incomparably ferocious.

However, if Chu Feng became proficient in the Heaven's Eyes, he could make such ferociousness fade away, and invisibly see through everything. It was very powerful.

\*hmm\*

And the most mystical thing was when Chu Feng used the Heaven's Eyes and looked back at the Elite Armament fan's picture, he discovered that the picture was actually changing. Many hazy lines started to become clear.

At the end, the initially very blurry picture, being gazed at by Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes, became a half-finished map, and that map was, indeed, a treasure map.

In the heart of the map there were four big words. Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain.

“Spiritual Wolf?”

“Organisms formed by the congregation of natural essences, because they have unique spiritual natures and bodies, are named Spiritual Beings. When Spiritual Beings are successfully shaped, they can shock the world with their supreme divine might.”

“Chu Feng! If this map is real, you will definitely be able to find a very superb treasure, because the Spiritual Awareness of Spiritual Beings are great supplements for cultivation!” Just by seeing the four words Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain, Eggy exclaimed excitedly.

“You're right, but sadly, the level of my Heaven's Eyes is not sufficient. I can merely find the rough location of the Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain, and I am also unable to restore the paths within the Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain on this map. I'm afraid it is not easy to find the Spiritual Lair and Spiritual Veins.”

“Besides, even more, I cannot determine the genuineness of this map.” Chu Feng sighed with a bit of regret.

After some Pulse Searching Method studying, Chu Feng roughly understood the various types of treasures hidden in the world.

One was the tomb type, meaning the location of powerful cultivators' tombs, or the artifacts constructed by powerful cultivators. Most of them were manmade.

The other was the Natural Oddity type formed from the gathering of natural essence. However, Natural Oddities branched out to many different types as well.

One were Queer Objects. For example, they were flowers, grasses, trees formed by natural essence accumulation, or extremely strange rocks, or just some random odd things.

Those things, despite containing enormous power and even had intelligence and the ability to move, ultimately had different bodies than humans or beasts. So, they were named as Queer Objects.

Other than Queer Objects, another type were Spiritual Beings. Spiritual Beings were similarly born from the accumulation of natural essence, but after maturation, not only would they acquire intelligence as well as power that belonged to themselves, they would even have a body of a human or a beast.

Spiritual Beings always took longer to form than Queer Objects, but after they did, they would always be stronger. Some would then just hide within the mountains, some would just stir up chaos in a certain area, but one thing unquestionable was their strength.

According to the indication of the map, the so-called Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain was obviously an area where a Spiritual Being was being formed. When a Spiritual Being was being formed, it would use the earth as its body. Their own awareness was hidden within the earth.

Along with the Spiritual Awareness' growth in strength, their external telluric appearance becomes clearer as well. When matured, the earth and the Spiritual Awareness combines, and at that time, the vessel it grew in, an enormous mountain range, or a special forest, becomes its real physical body. They were incomparably huge, and they had peerless divine might.

From one sentence of the Pulse Searching Method's chant, Chu Feng learnt that there was once a Spiritual Being with the body of a continent after it matured. From that, it could be seen how strong Spiritual Beings were.

And if he were to find the Spiritual Being, what Chu Feng aimed to do was to search for the Spiritual Awareness within the special land because Spiritual Awarenesses were great cultivation resources. They were the



foundations of Spiritual Beings, and to cultivators, there were endless beneficial effects.

But how could Spiritual Awarenesses be that easy to find? First, you had to find the entrance, also known as the Spiritual Lair. Then, you had to find the paths to the Spiritual Awareness after entering the Spiritual Lair. Those were also known as the Spiritual Veins. So, even if you found the entrance, you had to find the veins. If one wished to obtain Spiritual Awareness, they had to plan and spend quite a bit.

That map indeed recorded the place where a Spiritual Being concealed itself, and likely also recorded the positions of the Spiritual Lair and Spiritual Veins, but Chu Feng could do nothing as with his current Heaven's Eyes, he could simply not clear up Spiritual Lair on the map, nor the lines of the Spiritual Veins. That also infinitely increased the difficulty in finding the Spiritual Awareness.

However, that was not the most important thing. Most importantly, even if Chu Feng restored a large portion of the map, he could not determine if it was real or not.

“Ahh, if you have to blame something, you can only blame your incompetence in cultivating the Heaven's Eyes. If you had cultivated them well, how could you possibly not see the genuineness of this map?”

“Regardless, you're in control. To go or not to go, choose yourself. I will not meddle at all.” Eggy poke at his hardships jokingly.

“Really, I didn't plan to go. After all, you also know I still have a weak grasp over the Pulse Searching Method.”

“But, according to the indications on this map, the so-called Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain is truly not far from this place. Since we're so close, it's rather worth it to go take a look. It wouldn't matter if it's real or fake, since I should be able to tell when I see the real Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain.” Chu Feng smiled and said.

Spiritual Beings could not be underestimated. Although they took a long time to shape, several tens of thousands of years if short, several tens of millions of years if long, Spiritual Awarenesses that existed for only several thousand years, or several hundred years, or even a few dozen years, still had very outstanding effects.

Besides, looking at the Elite Armament fan, it seemed to be a bit aged. If that map was real, it meant that the Spiritual Being inside the Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain likely existed for quite some time. Of course, Chu Feng was not willing to give it up.

“Tch. If you want to go, then go! No need to make up excuses. But before going, increase your strength.” Eggy naughtily curled her lips. She understood Chu Feng very clearly. Not to mention it being close, even if it were far, judging by his character he would definitely go and check it out.

“Mm. It’s time see what this Son of Magma tastes like.”

Chu Feng chuckled. After putting away the Elite Armament fan in his hand, he took out the Son of Magma. Looking at it, Chu Feng’s face was filled with expectation.

That thing was very impressive. Saying that it was a Queer Object wasn’t too right, and saying it was a Spiritual Being wasn’t right either. Queer Objects were not humanoid, nor did they really have physical bodies.

So, precisely speaking, Queer Objects were spiritual consciousnesses without physical bodies of their own.

As for Spiritual Beings, they could only use the earth itself as a body after maturation. Only then could they count as having a physical body.

So, it could be said that Spiritual Beings were Spiritual Awarenesses that could combine with the earth.

But the Son of Magma started out as a humanoid shape. Its appearance was the exact same as a human infant, and the natural energy it contained was very terrifying as well.

So, Chu Feng determined that the Son of Magma was another type of Natural Oddity, also the strongest and most terrifying type. A Sacred Entity.

# Chapter 574 - Wolf Ivory Mountain

MGA: Chapter 574 - Wolf Ivory Mountain

Sacred Entities were fated to be stronger than Queer Objects and Spiritual Beings.

However, Sacred Entities were existences that people always feared and dared not to disturb.

The energy that they, regardless if they had a shape or not, contained was too berserk. It could simply not be used by cultivators, and those who dared to refine them were undoubtedly suicidal.

So, though Sacred Entities were powerful, in reality, they were useless to cultivators. They were only existences that people dreaded.

But to Chu Feng, the Sacred Entity was a great cultivation supplement within great cultivation supplements. For example, the Son of Magma in Chu Feng's hands currently. It was going to raise Chu Feng's cultivation greatly.

“Let me see what you taste like!”

After Chu Feng finished the appropriate preparations, he impatiently started to refine the Son of Magma. Because of its body, there was something special about refining it. Chu Feng could not consume it directly.

So, he had to first use a Spirit Formation to bind it, then he had to enter the formation himself. After doing that, he used the power of the Spirit Formation, which borrowed the Source Energy consumption method, and refined the Son of Magma bit by bit.

\*hmm\*

When a nearly invisible strand of gas was taken out of the Son of Magma's body and after it entered his own body, Chu Feng strongly felt how wild the power was.

If merely a single strand was like that already, Chu Feng could really imagine how berserk the body the Son of Magma was.

However, the Divine Lightning in Chu Feng's body was not there for a joke. No matter how much wilder the power got, as long as it entered Chu Feng's body, it would be immediately consumed by the Divine Lightning in his dantian. There would not even be any residue remaining.

Along with Chu Feng's success in refining the strand of aura, the Refinement Spirit Formation also successfully functioned. Layers and layers of powerful aura started to endlessly surge out of the Son of Magma's body and enter Chu Feng's own body. They were all absorbed and refined by Chu Feng.

At the end, the Son of Magma's body started to split. The faint gas started to become fiery-red gas.

With that, the Son of Magma's power became even wilder, but to Chu Feng, it mattered not as he continued absorbing. Like that, the terrifying existence, the indestructible Sacred Entity, was thoroughly refined by Chu Feng.

After refining the Son of Magma completely, Chu Feng's aura rose from the third level of the Heaven realm to the fifth level of the Heaven realm. Although he had already expected that, after he truly stepped into the fifth level of the Heaven realm, Chu Feng was still elated. His happy face was so happy that flowers bloomed.

It was because also, with his own Divine Lightning's power, Chu Feng cultivation could become equivalent to the eighth level of the Heaven realm. The eighth level of the Heaven realm! In addition to Chu Feng's special methods, it was not ridiculous to deal with those in the ninth level of the Heaven realm. So, with Chu Feng's current cultivation, he was nearly invincible within the Heaven realm.

Although cultivation like that was only ordinary in the Eastern Sea Region, it greatly increased what Chu Feng had to protect his life. After all, Chu Feng only broke into the Heaven realm recently, but so soon already he was that near to becoming a Martial Lord. All of that completely relied on the assistance of all sorts of Natural Oddities and cultivation resources.

More and more, Chu Feng realized the strength of his Divine Lightning. As long as there were powerful cultivation resources available, Chu Feng did need to worry about being unable to break through. No matter how much higher the realms were, Chu Feng had no problem entering them.

“Haha, it feels so good! It is truly a Sacred Entity. Although its formation was quite recent, as it only formed for several years, Sacred Entities are after all, Sacred Entities! The Source Energy of Sacred Entities is indeed greatly beneficial!”

And as Chu Feng rejoiced, Eggy also cheered. It turned out that as Chu Feng refined the Son of Magma, the Source Energy within the Sacred Entity was also absorbed by Eggy. Her current cultivation had rose from the second level of the Heaven realm to the sixth level of the Heaven realm. It was even one level higher than Chu Feng.

“You’ve actually gotten a better harvest than I did.” Chu Feng also discovered that change, and other than being shocked, he also felt happy for Eggy.

Eggy was very strong. The unique power she grasped was very terrifying too, and even though Eggy was in the sixth level of the Heaven realm, in terms of her real battle prowess, those in the ninth level of the Heaven realm wouldn’t be able to defeat her.

And as Eggy was Chu Feng’s assistant, when his assistant became stronger once again, naturally, Chu Feng was joyful.

“This Son of Magma is truly a Sacred Entity, or else it would be impossible for it to contain Source Energy. Moreover, the length of its formation was very short. It has probably only been forming for a few

years. It likely didn't die because it left the depths of the ground, but rather it died before even leaving the underground world."

"The time it had been congregating for is too short. Although it had the appearance of an infant, in reality, it had yet to have real life. Or else, we would have gained a lot more from it."

"Sacred Entities are, after all, Sacred Entities. Even though it was just a few years, it is still this effective. What level of enhancement would it bring if it had formed for several tens of thousands of years? Haha." Eggy was truly excited. Her stagnant cultivation finally moved forward again, so she truly felt exhilarated.

"Yeah! It didn't even have true life and had only been congregating for several years, yet it already brings such effects. If it had been condensed for several tens of thousands of years, what would have happened instead?" Chu Feng was similarly ecstatic. After experiencing the power of the Sacred Entity, Chu Feng hoped even more that the Spiritual Being was real.

Although Spiritual Beings were far from being comparable to Sacred Entities, if the time it condensed for was long, then to Chu Feng, it would still have great effects.

So, after both Chu Feng and Eggy made their breakthroughs, they impatiently restarted their journey, and headed towards the so-called Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain as stated on the map.

But since it was the first time Chu Feng came to the Eastern Sea Region, he was not familiar to anything. When he asked for directions on the road, there was no one who knew what the Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain was.

But luckily, Chu Feng was a World Spiritist. With the map on hand, he himself could find the general locations, and finally, Chu Feng found the Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain.

However, despite being marked as the Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain on the map, it wasn't called the Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain by the locals. It was called the Wolf Ivory Mountain.

According to the locals' introduction, the Wolf Ivory Mountain was originally a nameless mountain. Roughly a thousand years ago, it suddenly rose from the grounds.

However, within the changes of the years, several mountain peaks were endlessly altered. At the end, they became as sharp as wolf ivories, so the mountain was named the Wolf Ivory Mountain.

Coming outside the Wolf Ivory Mountain and looking at it from the ground, it was indeed as how the locals described it as. The highest mountain peaks of the Wolf Ivory Mountain were like wolf ivories. They were very special, and very strange as well.

“This mountain range is not simple. It seems like the map is more or less real.”

Just by seeing the mountain peaks that were like wolf ivories, Chu Feng determined that the Wolf Ivory Mountain was very special, and in order to observe the mountain even better, Chu Feng rose into the sky, and only stopped when he was several tens of thousands of meters off from the ground and could put the entirety of the Wolf Ivory Mountain into his eyes.

“This is!!”

When Chu Feng used the Heaven's Eyes to gaze down from above to see the Wolf Ivory Mountain, his calm face immediately changed because with the power of the Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng discovered that it wasn't just a few ivories that made up the Wolf Ivory Mountain. Other than the ivories, there was even a hazy outline. The body of a huge wolf!

That, truly, was a place where a Spiritual Being congregated, and according to Chu Feng's estimations, if that Spiritual Being finished



congregating, it could not be underestimated, and it would be a very terrifying existence.

But currently, there were only a few ivories that were physically formed by the Spiritual Being. However, at least it meant that the Spiritual Being had been congregating for a minimal of a thousand years. If the Spiritual Awareness was still inside, it likely also congregating quite a bit of spiritual power.

# Chapter 575 - Deciding to Interfere

MGA: Chapter 575 - Deciding to Interfere

Chu Feng stood in the air, looking down. After observing for a long time, he was still unable to see where the Spiritual Lair was at, let alone the positions of the Spiritual Veins and Spiritual Awareness.

As he could do nothing, Chu Feng had no choice but to fly down and start to search the vast Wolf Ivory Mountain. He wanted find the Spiritual Lair by searching every single inch.

\*boom, boom, boom\*

But just as Chu Feng arrived at the middle section of the continuous mountain from the east side of the mountain, he heard deafening explosions bursting out endlessly.

Approaching closer and taking a look, Chu Feng discovered that it was a battle between a Monstrous Beast and a person.

That Monstrous Beast was twenty meters tall, dozens of meters long, and as it stood there it was like a small hill.

Its appearance was like a pangolin. All over its body there was indestructible armor, but more importantly, it had the cultivation of the seventh level of the Heaven realm.

That Monstrous Beast could not be looked down upon. For each step it took, everything within the circumference of a hundred miles would shake. The surrounding trees were already forcibly split and had fallen from the shock.

The huge hammer it held in its hand was even incomparably ferocious. Every time it spun a wild gale would be created. When it slammed down,

it would create a deep pit. There were already thousands of holes in the mountain range it was in, making it completely unrecognizable.

The person fighting against it was not simple either, also being in the seventh level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, it was a female.

She had already passed the middle-ages, and was likely a bit over thirty. She still retained her grace, but more importantly, her cultivation. At that age, it was very impressive for her to have stepped into the seventh level of the Heaven realm.

After all, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, those who stepped into the seventh level of the Heaven realm could be counted by your own fingers, and not a single one wasn't an old person. To be able to enter that level, at that age, did not mean that she was powerful though. It just meant that the cultivators in the Eastern Sea Region were on a completely different level than the people in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

\*boom boom boom\*

The Monstrous Beast and the woman fought against one another, continuously creating terrifying ripples. But Chu Feng could see that the woman was going to be defeated. At present, all she thought of was how to escape the attacking range of the Monstrous Beast, yet she was firmly held in place by the Monstrous Beast, and had no chance.

“This Monstrous Beast seems a bit off, as if it lost its awareness.”

Chu Feng examined with his sharp Spirit power, and discovered the Monstrous Beast was bloodthirsty and furious. Despite the woman asking why it was attacking her again and again, the Monstrous Beast did not reply, and did nothing but continue throwing out fatal attacks at the woman.

It meant that either the Monstrous Beast was insane, or some problem must have appeared. In addition, Chu Feng had speedily went around the mountain range and discovered that even though there were quite a few

Monstrous Beasts, there weren't many in the Heaven realm. Why did such a powerful one appear suddenly?

Those strange things overlapped one another, and there must be some reason for all of it. However, regretfully, "it's not related to you, so you need not worry". Chu Feng was not that irked and that bored to care about another person's life. If the person in front of him was swapped with one that had a great disparity in strength against their opponent, or if a cultivator was bullying a commoner, then Chu Feng would definitely interfere.

But right now, two existences with similar strengths were fighting. Perhaps there was some misunderstanding in between them, or grudges, or maybe some other reason, so Chu Feng did not want to bother with it.

In the world of cultivators, the powerful reigned supreme. There were too many battles, too many killings. If Chu Feng interfered with those things every time he saw them happen, he simply couldn't handle it, nor have the time.

"Wait, there are other people." But just as Chu Feng left for a short distance, he discovered that two people were hiding within a nearby forest.

One was a male, one was a female, and both were old. Their cultivations were not weak either, both being in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, even stronger than the woman before. Looking at their clothes, they were likely with that woman.

But currently, not only were they not helping the woman out with her battle against the Monstrous Beast, instead, they were watching as though they were watching two tigers brawling.

Such a twist in circumstances caught Chu Feng's attention. With the propulsion of curiosity, he concealed any traces of himself, and gradually neared. At the same time, he started to concentrate his Spirit power to eavesdrop into their conversation.

“Old guy, are we really going to just watch as the Big Miss gets killed by this Monstrous Beast? Aren’t we a bit too black-hearted? After all, in so many years, the family master has treated us quite well.” As the old man looked at the scene in the distance, her face revealed some unwillingness.

“Do you think I want this? But our damn boy has been locked up in the Ma family! If we don’t follow their instructions to kill her, the one who will die is our boy! Do you hope that she dies, or our brat dies?” The old man rebuked.

“That god damn brat! He really gives us nothing but troubles. If this becomes known, where will our faces go!” Hearing those words, the old woman started to curse, but never mentioned anything regarding saving the Big Miss. From that, it could be seen that she had decided.

“Our damn brat is disappointing, but if there is blame, the Big Miss can only be blamed for being too serious. The Li family and Ma family have already allied and both hold the key to open that treasure. Right now, the time is ripe, so what’s wrong with directly opening it together with the Ma family?”

“But Big Miss disapproved regardless of anything. She did whatever she could to disrupt them and even recruited soldiers with high prices and looked for people she could trust. Clearly, she aimed to strengthen the Li family’s power and wanted to open up the treasure alone.”

“Obviously, the Ma family will not be happy with her actions. Thinking of ways to remove the Big Miss is some reasonable. So that’s why I say that she simply looked to die!”

“In other words, if Big Miss continues this, sooner or later, there will be a huge battle between the Li family and the Ma family. If that happens, many innocents will be dragged in. So, our current actions can be said to be helping the Li family. We are saving the Li family! There is nothing to blame on ourselves.” The old man very eloquently turned the betrayal of their own family into such a righteous action.

“Treasure?!” However, Chu Feng’s eyes lit up when he heard that word.

If the Wolf Ivory Mountain had a treasure, what treasure was it? The first thing Chu Feng thought of was the Spiritual Being hidden within the Wolf Ivory Mountain.

Could it be that it was already discovered?

“It seems like I must interfere with today’s matters.”

At that instant, Chu Feng spun around and flew towards the circle of battle between the woman and the Monstrous Beast. The events of today were very possibly related to the Spiritual Being and the Spiritual Awareness within the Wolf Ivory Mountain.

Even if they were unrelated to the Spiritual Awareness, since there was a treasure, Chu Feng would definitely not merely watch with hands inside his sleeves. He decided to barge into that matter.

“There is no enmity between us. Why must you continue pressing on and desire to kill me?” At that very instant, the woman was completely exhausted. She was completely pressured by the Monstrous Beast. She kept on questioning the Monstrous Beast, but it was useless as it responded with only deafening roars and boundless bloodlust.

\*wuaoo\* And just at that moment, another furious roar sounded. The huge hammer in the Monstrous Beast’s hand slammed downwards at her once again.

At that moment, the woman subconsciously moved to dodge, but she could do nothing as her Heaven power was completely drained. Her speed did not match her thoughts, and it was already impossible to evade that strike.

# Chapter 576 - Odd

MGA: Chapter 576 - Odd

“No!!”

Looking at the huge falling hammer, no matter how much stronger the woman’s cultivation was, she couldn’t help shrieking.

Not only was that hammer huge, it also contained horrifying pressure. If she was struck by it, she would definitely forcefully become a meat patty with flesh and blood mashed together. It was something that she could never, ever, accept.

“It’s time.”

But the woman did not know that as she was facing death, a person was hiding in a dark place, watching, awaiting the opportunity to appear. And that person was none other than Chu Feng.

From the old man and woman’s words, he roughly learnt of some things. So, since he chose to save the woman, naturally, he had to choose the most dangerous moment to appear because only then would she strongly remember that favour.

\*whoosh\*

The time was ripe, so naturally, Chu Feng held nothing back. He leaped, and like a dragon, flew out. At the same time, lightning flashed in his eyes, his aura already raised to the eighth level of the Heaven realm.

Chu Feng descended from the sky, and just stood in front of the woman. Then, he stuck out a single fist, and punched the approaching big hammer.

\*boom\* That one punch made an explosion. Heaven power surged, and the terrifying huge hammer was shattered by Chu Feng.

\*aoo\* The Monstrous Beast roared in pain, concurrent to the destruction of its hammer, and it was forced back by the ripples of the explosion.

Succeeding with that one strike, Chu Feng struck again. Boundless might of the Heaven realm's eighth level burst out, forming a formless giant net, imprisoning the Monstrous Beast inside.

\*aoo, aoo~~\*

The pressure that Chu Feng emanated was too strong. So strong that even those in the ninth level of the Heaven realm were inferior. Being pushed down by Chu Feng's pressure, the Monstrous Beast in only the seventh level of the Heaven realm was like a mouse frightened by a cat. It started to howl in fear, scuttling randomly.

But Chu Feng did not give any chances to it. With a thought, the power of the pressure instantly strengthened. It endlessly pressed upon the Monstrous Beast, through its physical body, straight into its soul.

Being under such horrifying might, the Monstrous Beast's eyes glittered. From insane struggling, its movements slugged, and even its body shrunk. From the size of a small hill into a tiger, and at the end, it even knelt obediently on the ground, dispirited.

At that moment, the Monstrous Beast did not even have the slightest bit of its previous might. It was like a little cowardly Monstrous Beast brat as it knelt in front of Chu Feng, not daring to even twitch. With only a thought, Chu Feng completely suppressed the Monstrous Beast.

“This...”

Seeing that, the woman was completely nonplussed. She even assumed she would die, without a single doubt, but never in her imaginations would she have thought that a person would appear in front of her, and with powerful methods, suppress the frenzied Monstrous Beast.

\*whoosh whoosh\*



Immediately after Chu Feng took care of the Monstrous Beast, two people also shot out from nearby. They were none other than the old couple.

“Audacious bastard, you dare to harm my family’s Miss?!”

The couple never would have expected the emergence of a man out of nowhere. But no matter what, Chu Feng clearly disrupted their plans. So, immediately after they emerged out of hiding, they made a surprise attack, aiming to put Chu Feng to death.

“Hmph.” Although their strength was in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, in Chu Feng’s eyes, they were frail. Chu Feng did not even glance at them. He merely snorted coldly, waved his big sleeve, releasing a layer of Heaven power.

That Heaven power seemed to be gentle, but concealed within was brutally powerful might. Being caught off guard, the couple suffered. They were thrown several hundreds of meters away before they could stabilize their bodies. They were almost heavily injured.

But they were ignorant to the fact that they were in that situation only because Chu Feng held himself back. If not, he could have, just now, easily killed them both.

However, the old man and woman clearly were not aware of that, and even assumed they were struck because of their own carelessness. Not only did they not retreat after knowing the difference in strength, they even explosively yelled, gathering power outside their bodies, wanting to throw an even stronger attack at Chu Feng.

“Uncle Sha, Aunt Bi, don’t attack him! Just now, he saved me! I owe a favour to him.” Just at that moment, the middle-aged woman suddenly spoke.

And after hearing those words, the couple couldn’t help but be taken aback. Despite their reluctance, it was not good for them to continue attacking, so they could only quickly come up to the woman, feigning

worry and guilt, and say, “Miss, are you alright? It’s our fault, we shouldn’t have left you here.”

“It’s all thanks to Lord Benefactor for saving me, or else I truly don’t know if I could have survived or not.” The woman looked at the two, though her gaze wasn’t really grudgeful. She then walked up to Chu Feng.

First, she looked meaningfully at the Monstrous Beast that wanted to kill her before, yet was compliantly kneeling on the ground, then bowed to Chu Feng, saying very appreciatively, “I am Li Chan, thank you for saving me. May I know Lord Benefactor’s name?”

“Wuqing.” Chu Feng did not even look at the woman. He only crouched down, and stroked the Monstrous Beast.

Although the Monstrous Beast was already under control, by force, because of Chu Feng and was as submissive as a sheep, Chu Feng could still feel its bloodlust.

So, when Chu Feng stroked the Monstrous Beast, in reality, he was imbuing his Spirit power into the Monstrous Beast’s body, to search for the origin of its problem, and currently, he obtained the answer. The Monstrous Beast was fed special medicine, making it lose its reason and become bloodthirsty.

“So Lord Benefactor is called Wuqing. This name is quite special.”

“Just now, thank you for willing to come out and save me, or else my life would have ended there. If it’s convenient, please come over to my Li residence for a small rest as thanks for saving my life.” Li Chan was not displeased because of Chu Feng’s coldness. Rather, from start to finish, she looked at Chu Feng with a very grateful expression.

Only after seeing Li Chan’s good attitude did Chu Feng turn around and look at Li Chan again. He discovered that despite being already in the middle-ages, she took good care of her face, and her body was very nice as well. Not only was she alluring, she was very appealing too. If Chu Feng hadn’t determined her age with Spirit power and purely looked at her outer

appearance, he would have truly been unable to see that she was a middle-aged woman.

It had to be said that an attractive and mature female like Li Chan could enchant quite a few males.

But sadly, she wasn't up to Chu Feng's taste. At present, there was really too few number of women who could enter Chu Feng's eyes, let alone one that already passed the middle-ages.

Thus, Chu Feng only simply examined Li Chan, then asked, "There's no need for any reward. I wasn't saving you. I just discovered that this Monstrous Beast was odd, and was afraid that after killing you, it would go hunt others. It doesn't matter much if it kills cultivators, but if commoners get harmed by it, that would not be too great."

# Chapter 577 - Ploy

MGA: Chapter 577 - Ploy

“Lord Benefactor, you said that this Monstrous Beast is odd. May I ask which part of it is odd? Can you tell me?” Hearing those words, Li Chan’s eyes couldn’t help trembling as she quickly asked.

She also knew that the Monstrous Beast was a bit off. After all, Monstrous Beasts were not Fierce Beasts, they were intelligence, and had some reason. But that Monstrous Beast acted as though it

was

a Fierce Beast. It only wanted to take her life, which made her feel that there was definitely something fishy about it.

“I can, in fact, tell you, but those two must stay far away from me.” Chu Feng coldly said as he looked at the old couple.

“What did you say?! Say that again if you dare...” Hearing his words, the couple who already hated Chu Feng deeply gnashed their teeth in anger, their faces flushing red.

“Uncle Sha, Aunt Bi, don’t be impolite. He’s a person who saved my life.” But before letting them finish their words, Li Chan spoke to silence them, and urged them, “You two, leave for a while.”

“Miss, we know nothing about this person. If we leave you here alone, that will be too unsafe.” The old man advised worriedly.

“Yeah, Miss. This person has unknown origins. Maybe he’s even with that Monstrous Beast!” The old woman advised as well.

“Don’t worry. I trust Wuqing.” Li Chan said with a smile.

The old couple couldn't really say much when Li Chan acted like that. So, after they glanced at Chu Feng, they warned, "Brat, you better pay attention to what you're doing. This is my Li family's territory! If you dare to do anything disadvantageous to my family's Miss, don't even think of leaving this place alive." After speaking those fierce words, the old man and the old woman left.

"Hoh." Chu Feng merely smiled disdainfully at their words. Naturally, he could hear that the old man was warning Chu Feng on the surface, but in actuality, was threatening him. He was telling Chu Feng to not speak rashly, or else he would not restrain himself against Chu Feng.

"Lord Benefactor, I wonder, what have you discovered? Can you tell me now?" After the old couple left, Li Chan asked once again.

However, Chu Feng did not reply. Instead, loudly yelled, "Two old things, you're hiding here and eavesdropping! Don't you feel any shame?"

"God damn. Truly, damn it. Where did this brat come from? He can even detect us hiding here. Don't tell me he's a World Spiritist?" After hearing Chu Feng's words, the old man hiding in a nearby forest cursed in a low tone.

"Old guy, what should we do? That young man doesn't seem to be simple. He wouldn't have truly discovered something and reveal us two right?" Simultaneously, the old woman's face was full of worry.

"Right now, nothing can be done. We can't really attack him in front of the Big Miss right? This brat does have some strength. If we can kill them, then great; but if we can't and anger Big Miss, we would have to face the consequences."

"This brat does indeed have some ability, but there's no need to worry too much. That Monstrous Beast has been altered by an expert hired by the Ma family. No matter how much stronger this brat is, at most, he can only see that something's wrong with the Monstrous Beast, and would not be able to return it to its former nature."

“Besides, even if the Monstrous Beast is reverted, how is it related to us? Don’t worry. First, report this matter to the Ma family and see what they have planned. If worst comes to worst, we’ll take care of this brat and the Big Miss altogether. For our own damn boy, we can do anything.” After the old man said those words, he leaped, and left.

“Ahh~” The old woman looked at Chu Feng meaningfully again before following the old man’s shadow.

“Your two servants don’t seem to be too obedient huh?” Only after knowing that the old couple left for quite a distance did Chu Feng smile and speak to Li Chan.

“Hoh.” Li Chan was a smart person, so naturally she understood what happened. But, after all, that couple was her Li family’s people, so she could only bitterly smile, not knowing how to explain.

“That Monstrous Beast was likely fed special poison by someone, and its nature was also sealed by a special Spirit Formation. So, that’s why it was so bloodthirsty and lost its rationality.”

“It also means that the reason why this Monstrous Beast appeared at this place is because it’s a plot. It was likely waiting for you here.”

“As for why you’ve appeared in this place and who knows that you will appear here, I’m sure you’re aware of the answer to those questions right?”

“Also, I might as well tell you this. I’m a World Spiritist. When that Monstrous Beast attacked you, I felt the old man and woman just now were hiding nearby. They were watching.”

“Of course, they’re the ones who are close to you, and I am merely a stranger. If you believe me, then be more cautious against them in the future. Otherwise, just assume I told you nothing.” Chu Feng didn’t conceal anything, and just directly stated that the old couple were traitors.

At that instant, Li Chan sank into silence. Her expression kept on altering for a while, her eyes showing some helplessness and uneasiness. There were even bursts of fear.

In reality, before Chu Feng said all that, she already had some suspicious because it was indeed that old couple who brought her here, and after bringing her to this place, they, for some reason, left.

When she encountered the Monstrous Beast, no matter how she yelled, the old couple did not show themselves; but after the Monstrous Beast was suppressed, the old couple immediately appeared. That made her feel distrust.

Currently, after Chu Feng spoke, she believed her suspicion even more: that the old couple had likely betrayed her Li family.

“We’ve met only by chance, and I didn’t come out because of you. I was worried that this Monstrous Beast was going to harm others. As for the reason why I told you all that, it’s because I feel like you’re a decent person, and I don’t want a decent person to be harmed by someone in such a way.”

“So, you also don’t need to thank me, and let us say our farewells here.” Seeing Li Chan’s powerless and scared reactions, Chu Feng smiled smugly in his heart. Then, he acted as if he was going to leave and not care about anything else.

“Lord Benefactor, don’t leave!” Indeed, as Chu Feng predicted, when he prepared to leave, Li Chan instantly panicked. When she was agitated, she actually grabbed Chu Feng’s hand.

“Miss Li, unfamiliar men and women do not touch one another. What are you doing?” Chu Feng flung Li Chan’s hand away. He was not acting there. Other than the women he felt were suitable, Chu Feng could not bear other females touching him.

“Lord Benefactor, I am truly sorry. I was too nervous.”

“But, can you be a good man to the end, and help me out? I’m begging you, help me! Save my Li family! If you’re willing to help me, I will pay a hefty sum!” After Li Chan let go of Chu Feng’s hand, she then pulled Chu Feng’s clothes, sorrowfully pleading. She was even going to kneel on the ground.

“Miss Li, don’t be like this. If you have anything you want to say, just go ahead. Looking at you right now, it does seem like a catastrophe is approaching. What exactly happened? There’s no harm in telling me.”

“Although I, Wuqing, am not any righteous and benevolent great hero, I’m also not willing to see honest people abused by bad ones.”

“So, if I can help you out, I’ll give it a try. If I can’t, then I will still give it a try. As for reward... If I can truly help with anything, then it’s not late to talk about that thing when everything concludes.” After hearing the word “reward”, Chu Feng immediately swapped his expression. Currently, he seemed more like a businessman.

But in reality, it was intentional. He wanted to give Li Chan an illusion. A person who only aims for profit, but has some sort of rules he abides by.

Of course, Chu Feng’s real goal was not the reward given by the Li family. It was the treasure that the Li and Ma family knew about.



# Chapter 578 - The Specific Events

MGA: Chapter 578 - The Specific Events

“This...” Although currently, Li Chan felt that there was danger ambushing from all directions, she was not so stupid as to tell her family’s secret to a person she just met.

But, if Chu Feng were to leave and the old couple were truly traitors, then it was very likely that she would die immediately. So, she was in a really difficult situation.

“Honestly speaking, I can dispel the poison within the Monstrous Beast, given that sufficient medicine is gathered. At that time, various questions such as who fed it poison, or who it met before it changed, will be solved easily. Then, the truth of who wished to harm you can very likely be known. Evidence can even be obtained.”

“Of course, if you don’t believe me, then assume I said nothing. I have never enjoyed coercing people into difficult circumstances.” Chu Feng spoke those words with a smile, then turned around, and prepared to leave.

“Lord Benefactor, don’t leave!” Seeing that, Li Chan tensed up, and hurriedly pulled onto the corner of Chu Feng’s clothes again, then said, “I believe you, please stay behind and help me!”

“This isn’t a place for speaking. Follow me.” Seeing Li Chan agree, Chu Feng willed, then an azure dragon appeared under his feet. At the same time, he waved his big sleeve and brought Li Chan onto the azure dragon. Then, it shot into the blue sky, very quickly leaving the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range, and arrived at a hidden area.

“Lord Benefactor, what martial skill did you just use? It was so fast! I have never seen such impressive methods.” After feeling the power of the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, Li Chan’s face was full of perplexity, and thought even higher of Chu Feng’s strength. She felt, more and more,

that the man in front of her eyes was not to be underestimated, and was very powerful.

Chu Feng only smiled lightly at Li Chan's praise. He intentionally used that technique because his goal was to make Li Chan trust him even more, and make her believe that he could help herself.

So, Chu Feng didn't explain anything, and said, "Speak. What happened to you or to your family?"

In a situation like that, Li Chan still hesitated for a while, but at the end, weighing the situation, she decided to tell Chu Feng the truth.

And after Li Chan's narration, Chu Feng couldn't help but rejoice. It seemed like the treasure that the Li and Ma family were talking about was truly related to the Spiritual Being.

The beginning of the events had to be started from five hundred years ago...

Five hundred years ago, the Ma family's ancestor and the Li family's ancestor were people of impoverished origin. Relying on the widespread cultivation chants in the Eastern Sea Region, they did become cultivators, but because their talents were too ordinary, they stalled in the Spirit realm, and could not advance forward.

The cultivation of the Spirit realm was very common in the Eastern Sea Region, so they could only be counted as the pettiest existences. Naturally, the Ma family's and the Li family's ancestors could not rely on the cultivation of the Spirit realm to make any name for themselves.

They, at that time, reached the extremities of poverty. They couldn't even marry wives, and were spat on by others. They, sworn brothers, could only rely on one another to survive, and survive relying on hunting in the Wolf Ivory Mountain.

But one day, the Ma family's ancestor and the Li family's ancestor discovered an injured person in the Wolf Ivory Mountain. They knew that

he was very possibly a cultivation expert, and if they were to save him, it could possibly change their fates. So, the two of them carried him back to their home, and earnestly took care of him for over three years.

It was exactly as the proverbs said: “Those who put their heart into working will not be disappointed”. In a certain day in autumn, that person finally reawakened. Moreover, using special medicines and abilities, that person, very quickly, thoroughly recovered. And as it turned out, he was truly a cultivation expert.

In order to thank the Ma family’s ancestor and the Li family’s ancestor for saving his life, that cultivator left behind a huge sum of wealth for them, and even passed down profound cultivation methods, as well as large amounts of cultivation resources.

Before leaving, not only did he use his skills to help the Li family’s ancestor and the Ma family’s ancestor raise their cultivation in the Spirit realm to the Heaven realm, he even told them that there was a special treasure impregnated within the Wolf Ivory Mountain.

However, the time was not yet ripe, and the treasure could not be used. However, if too much time passed, the treasure would gain intelligence and powerful strength, and it would be very difficult to deal with then.

So, the mysterious expert laid a special seal, concealing the treasure’s entrance, and left behind two keys that could open the Spirit Formation, giving them to the Li family’s ancestor and the Ma family’s ancestor.

Before he left, he instructed the two to open the Spirit Formation five hundred years later. At that time, they were destined to gain some benefits from inside. But they could not be too early, nor could they be too late. With their attainments, it was best to wait for five hundred years, or else they would gain nothing.

Afterwards, the mysterious expert left, and with everything that he bestowed, the Li family’s ancestor and the Ma family’s ancestor rose very quickly in power. Not only did they marry wives, they even became local prominent characters.

But it was useless as after a few short dozens of years, their lives came to an end. They could simply not wait until five hundred years later to gaze upon the sealed mysterious treasure.

So, before death, they combined their powers to occupy the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range, and told their successors about the treasure inside the mountain range, and also told them to follow the mysterious expert's instructions, to open up the treasure in a certain year and month to strengthen the Li family and the Ma family.

At present, it was five hundred years later. The relationship between the Li family and the Ma family was still very good, and they were also preparing to open the treasure within the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range.

But, Li Chan did not trust the Ma family's master, and felt that he held selfishness in his heart. Moreover, in recent years, he had started to spend great sums and hired quite a few experts. Currently, the Ma family's total strength already far surpassed the Li family's.

If they were really going to open up the treasure, she was worried that the Ma family was going to take that chance and destroy the Li family, then take the treasure all for themselves.

So, Li Chan always rebelled against their actions and dragged out the treasure opening date. During that period of time, she also spent great sums in hiring experts to join her Li family.

But, Li Chan also knew that she would anger the Ma family if she did that, and indeed, a dangerous scene like today occurred. If it wasn't for Chu Feng, Li Chan would have definitely died.

So, Li Chan immediately felt that the Monstrous Beast was the Ma family's handiwork, and the old couple were the ones who sold her out.

“To be honest, I heard a conversation between that old couple just now, and it's as you guessed. The Ma family is indeed planning kill you, and yes, it was the old couple who sold you out. As for the reason, it seems like their son committed some sort of offense, so he was taken away by the Ma

family. Now, the Ma family is using him to coerce the old couple.” After knowing what happened, Chu Feng smiled while looking at Li Chan. He already knew that she reached a dead end, and would definitely ask him for help.

As expected, after hearing Chu Feng’s words, Li Chan tightly furrowed her brows, confirming her own guesses and worries because the old couple did indeed have a quite disappointing son.

“Lord Benefactor, please help me! As long as you bring me back to the Li family, I will repay that kindness with rewards!” Li Chan begged sincerely.

However, Chu Feng indifferently smiled at Li Chan’s plea, then said, “I can bring you back to the Li family, and you can also tell the truth to your family, but do you have proof? Can you guarantee that your family will trust you? Even if they do, does your Li family have the strength to oppose the Ma family?”

# Chapter 579 - Success

MGA: Chapter 579 - Success

“I...” At that instant, Li Chan went silent. Only after a long time did she speak, “In these years, the Ma family has hired quite a few experts and they are developing their own people extravagantly. In terms of total strength, my Li family is indeed inferior to the Ma family.”

“However, the Ma family has never made a move on my Li family. Rather, they have kept on maintaining this extremely good relationship on the surface. I’m guessing that they fear only one person, and that’s my father.”

“My father is a Martial Lord, and although he is only a rank one Martial Lord, after all, he’s still a Martial Lord. His strength cannot even be comparable to those in the Heaven realm. Even if a single Martial Lord faces several thousands of Heaven realm experts, they can easily kill them all, and stand in an undefeatable place.”

“Looking at the Ma family, although they had hired quite a few experts and developed quite a few experts of their own as well, only the Ma family’s master is a Martial Lord.”

“The Ma family’s master, like my father, is a rank one Martial Lord. If the two of them fight against one another, the outcome is very difficult to predict, but something that can be ascertained is the one who wins their battle will represent the victory of that family.”

“So, right now, I’m not worried that the Ma family will dare to directly attack my Li family. What I’m worried about is my father.”

“My father is the Ma family master’s sworn brother, and they grew up together since they were young. He trusts the Ma family’s master completely, and in his eyes, his sworn brother is even more important than his family.”

“So, I simply cannot tell him that the Ma family has selfish intentions, or else not only would he be enraged, he would even punish me, unless...”

“Unless there’s evidence right?” Chu Feng said smilingly.

“Mm. Although my father cares a lot about the brotherly affection with the Ma family’s master, he is definitely not an ignorant person. If there are certain evidences that show the Ma family plans to harm me, then that would be a lot better.” Li Chan endlessly nodded her head.

“That’s quite simple. For example, this Monstrous Beast. The reason it is like this is definitely because of some World Spiritist’s work. But as long as you give me some time, I can return it to its original state, and at that time, the person who did those things to it and sent it to this place will be known. Naturally, those proofs will point towards the Ma family.”

“Also, in a situation like the one right now, continuing to drag it out isn’t the way to go. So, I suggest you ask your father to join hands with the Ma family and open the sealed treasure. It cannot be delayed anymore.” Chu Feng said.

“What? Open the treasure in the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range?!” Hearing those words, Li Chan’s complexion couldn’t help changing, then she said, “Lord Benefactor, according to the mysterious expert’s words back then, the treasure right now should already have a certain amount of intelligence, and also very powerful strength. Without the cultivation of a Martial Lord, there is no way of suppressing it.”

“So, I’m really worried. If the treasure is opened and we enter, the Ma family will use my father. This is also why I’ve thought of all kinds of ways to delay the treasure’s opening.”

“You’re wrong. If this is continued, you will simply not be able to drag this out for long because this is not only your father’s personal wish, nor is it the Ma family’s master request. It is the teachings of the ancestors. Both family’s ancestors.”

“Can you change the teachings? Can you get your father to go against the teachings?” Chu Feng severely asked.

“I...” Li Chan was speechless, not knowing how to reply because Chu Feng spoke very correctly.

“But, if you let your father know that the Ma family has a selfish heart before opening the treasure, then when it

is

opened, as long as your father is on guard, it will no longer be certain who will die.” Chu Feng said.

“Lord Benefactor, you’re quite right. But I am just truly worried. Even if you can restore this Monstrous Beast’s original nature and make him speak the truth, my father may not believe that everything was directed by the Ma family’s master. I understand him too well. Not only does he emphasize camaraderie, he is very obstinate regarding that topic.”

“In these years, after combined operations between the Li family and the Ma family, when splitting the benefits, my father had always acted brotherly, and allowed the Ma family to take more. That’s also the main reason why, right now, the Ma family has more wealth than my Li family.” Li Chan worriedly said.

“Before you clear up the current situation, there are only two paths laid out in front of you. One, is to just stare as your Li family gets destroyed.”

“The other is to bet it all, and fight for the final chance you have. However, the chance of success will definitely not even reach half. So, do not have delusional thoughts and think you can have a total win.” Chu Feng reminded solemnly.

And looking at Chu Feng’s fierce gaze and clearly analysis, Li Chan’s expression changed. She felt more and more than the man in front of her was very powerful, and even felt that he sincerely wanted to help her Li family, and could really do such a thing.



At that instant, Li Chan, involuntarily, build up trust deep in her heart towards Chu Feng, despite only knowing him for a very short amount of time.

The reason why that happened was because Chu Feng used a special method. That special method came from the Heaven's Eyes of the Pulse Searching Method. Not only could the Heaven's Eyes see through everything, it could even bewitch the living.

Despite having a very poor grasp on the Heaven's Eyes at present, after a series of actions, it wasn't really hard to make a person like Li Chan build up trust and good impressions on himself.

So, Li Chan announced to everyone that Chu Feng was a cultivation expert, and was willing to work for the Li family. Because of that, she invited Chu Feng to the Li family.

“What? Chan'er, you were attacked?” Within the main palace of the Li family, a white- and grey-haired, yet spirited old man had shock and terror on his face after knowing Li Chan was attacked in the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range.

And that person was Li Chan's father. The master of the Li family, a person with the strength of a rank one Martial Lord.

“Father, it was this Monstrous Beast that attacked me. But luckily, I was saved by this hero. If not, from today on, you wouldn't have ever seen me again.” Li Chan had a face of suffering as she pointed at Chu Feng and the submissive and cowardly Monstrous Beast next to him.

“What happened? Didn't I tell you to stay next to her side? Why was she still attacked?” Hearing those words, the master of the Li family furiously shouted at the old couple.

“It's our fault, please punish us accordingly!” The old couple were cunning characters. In a situation like that, they did not beg nor explain in the slightest. Instead, they half-knelt on the ground, and with faces of sincerity, they asked for punishment.

“You two...” Indeed, when he saw their reactions, the master of the Li family immediately lost any rage he had. Then, he helplessly sighed, waved his hand, and said, “Whatever, whatever. Nothing happened to Chan’er anyway, and besides, you two didn’t intend for it to happen, so how can I give out punishments? Just return.”

“Thank you.” As if they already knew he would react like that, the old couple’s mouths rose to form a hint of a smug smile, then after deeply looking at Chu Feng and the Monstrous Beast behind him, they bowed, turned around, and left.

# Chapter 580 - Best Treatment

MGA: Chapter 580 - Best Treatment

“Young hero, thank you for saving my precious daughter. May I have your name?” After the old couple left, the Li family’s master was full of smiles as he examined Chu Feng. It could be seen that he felt very grateful.

“I am Wuqing!” Chu Feng replied, hands clasped.

“So it’s Young Hero Wuqing! Your talent is truly good, already in the eighth level of the Heaven realm at this age. I’m sure you won’t have any difficulty becoming a Martial Lord.” After the Li family’s master looked at Chu Feng for a while more, he nodded his head, satisfied, then clapped and said, “Servants!”

After speaking, two young female servants walked out of another room in the hall. Both of them held an exquisite tray, and on the trays, there were rows of sparkling beads displayed. They were Heaven beads, one thousand of them.

“Young hero Wuqing, it’s all because of you that my Chan’er is alive. These are only small gratitudes, think nothing of them, but please accept them.” The Li family’s master said.

“Milord, I’ve already agreed to the Big Miss’ invitation and I will use my power for the Li family. She has also promised me a reward of equivalent degree already. Thus, as a person of the Li family, protecting her is my responsibility! Milord, how can I possibly take another reward?” Chu Feng tactfully refused.

“Young Hero Wuqing, you are truly wise. Then, just assume these Heaven beads are rewards for what you’ve previously done.” The Li family’s master smiled and said.

Naturally, he knew when Chu Feng saved Li Chan, he hadn't joined the Li family yet, so at that time, Chu Feng did not have any responsibility nor obligation to protect Li Chan. Reasonably speaking, there was no shame in Chu Feng taking the extra reward.

Yet Chu Feng still refused, which meant he wasn't a person who only thought of profit. Instead, he had his own principles he abided by, and the Li family's master respected Chu Feng a lot on that, because people who were like that could always be greatly used.

"Wuqing, since my father's already spoken in such a way, just accept it." Li Chan also urged.

"If it is like so, I'll humbly accept them. Thank you milord, thank you Big Miss." Hearing that, Chu Feng could only accept.

Although a thousand Heaven beads had extremely minuscule effects to Chu Feng, as one would say, "although a mosquito is tiny it's still meat". Besides, the thousand Heaven beads were willingly gifted to him. If he didn't accept them, wouldn't that just be hurting himself instead?

"This Monstrous Beast's cultivation is not weak, but it is absolutely not one from my Wolf Ivory Mountain Range. Why has it come over here, and without any reason, attack you?" Only after rewarding Chu Feng did the Li family's master carefully examine the Monstrous Beast kneeling by Chu Feng's side.

"Milord. This Monstrous Beast has likely consumed some sort of special poison from a World Spiritist, and its reason and intelligence were sealed away as well. So, that's why it became so violent and bloodthirsty."

"However, as long as a certain amount of time is given to me, I will be able to open the seal. At that time, the reason why this Monstrous Beast appeared in the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range will be easily found." Chu Feng replied.

"So you're also a World Spiritist" Hearing those words, the Li family's master couldn't help lighting up his eyes. After all, not everyone could

become a World Spiritist. They were superior to others from birth, and regardless of time or location, they were respected by others, and looked upon differently as well.

“I am indeed a World Spiritist.” Chu Feng nodded his head.

“Good, good! This time, my Li family has gained a blessing from misfortune, and invited such an excellent person like Young Hero Wuqing!”

“Servants! Quickly arrange the best residence for Young Hero Wuqing, and from today on, he will receive the finest treatment from my Li family.” The Li family’s master said cheerfully.

“Yes sir!” After that, under the arrangements of a servant, Chu Feng brought the Monstrous Beast and left the hall.

“Ah Chan’er, your Uncle Ma personally came over to see me again and talked about opening the treasure in the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range.”

“He said that everything has been prepared, and they even invited a Purple-cloak World Spiritist over! There will absolutely be no problem opening the treasure, so I’ve already agreed to do so ten days later.” After Chu Feng left, the Li family’s master spoke to Li Chan.

“Since Father has already agreed, what can I do? I’ll follow your arrangements.” If it were before, Li Chan would have definitely been like thunder when hearing that news: extremely furious.

But at present, she was only a bit angry and simply didn’t argue against her father. The reason she did that was naturally because Chu Feng advised her to do so.

“Chan’er, don’t worry. My Li family and the Ma family has been very close for generations, and your Uncle Ma is even a brother who grew up with me.”

“So, Chan’er, you don’t need to worry about anything. Even if the Ma family sends out a few more forces this time to open the treasure, your Uncle Ma will definitely split it evenly with my Li family.” Seeing Li Chan’s angry appearance, the Li family’s master smiled while conciliating. It could be seen he loved his daughter a lot.

“Father, everything that I’ve done before was to better our Li family, so I hope you can understand my efforts.”

“But you are my father, and since you’ve made the decision already, as your daughter, I can only support you with all I have.”

“I’ll go organize the Li family’s troops and make plans for opening the treasure ten days later.” Li Chan said.

“Heh, Chan’er, I don’t doubt your ability, but your marriage... That’s truly something I worry about.”

“Look at you! You’ll be thirty-five this year, and if you don’t quickly find a person to marry, you’ll really become an old woman soon! I see that young man named Wuqing is quite nice, how about...” On the face of the Li family’s master, there appeared a smile that was a bit shameless for his age.

“Father, what are you talking about?” Hearing those words, Li Chan immediately tensed up.

“Don’t pretend. Your eyes when looking at that Wuqing were very strange. In all the years that I’ve had you as my daughter, this is the first time that I’ve seen you look at a man like that. Both of your ages are quite close as well, so how about I talk to him for you?” The Li family’s master continued smiling and said.

“Father, don’t say random things! Or else, or else, I’ll!” At that instant, Li Chan seemed even more tensed up, but at the same time, a hint of redness spread across her face, then she quickly ran out of the room.

After leaving, Li Chan put her hand to her chest, feeling her intense heartbeat. Her gaze glittered uncertainly as she said in a low voice, “What’s with this feeling? I’ve only known him for less than a day... Have I truly been moved by him?”

Actually, it was very normal for Li Chan to have that feeling. After all, more or less, she was affected by the enchantment of Chu Feng’s Heaven’s Eyes. Besides, even without the effects of the Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng’s strength and attitude in handling matters contained limitless charm.

Chu Feng did not know anything about the conversation between the Li family’s master and Li Chan. Being led by a servant, Chu Feng arrived at an elegant and vast manor.

Within the manor grounds, there were quite a few cultivators, though not a single was from the Li family. All of them were experts hired by the Li family with hefty sums. Their cultivations were not weak, and more or less, they each grasped their respective unique powerful skills.

While in the Li family’s lands, those people could relish excellent treatment meant for distinguished guests. However, the treatments varied. As for which were better treated, it depended on their strengths and abilities.

But after Chu Feng entered, he directly occupied the most luxurious palace of them all, and even had the most excellent servants. That attracted quite a few people’s attention as gazes of displeasure were condensed on the palace Chu Feng stepped in.

# Chapter 581 - Purple-coloured Spirit Formation Power

MGA: Chapter 581 - Purple-coloured Spirit Formation Power

“Who was that person just now? He’s actually using the best palace in this manor?”

In a certain area within the manor rounds, after a woman, who had a ugly appearance and heavy makeup on, and also had the cultivation of the eighth level of the Heaven realm, saw Chu Feng enter that palace, her face was full of displeasure.

“I’ve carefully examined him just now. His cultivation is also only in the eighth level of the Heaven realm. I wonder why he is qualified to go into that palace.” A big man with scars across his face, also having cultivation in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, spoke very displeasedly.

“If you have time to be concerned about others, why not spend it on how to improve yourself.” Just at that moment, an old man holding a cane, wearing a blue-coloured World Spirit Cloak, walked over. That old man was not only a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, he even had the aura of the ninth level of the Heaven realm. He was the one with the strongest cultivation in the manor.

“Yuelao!” Seeing that old man, the people there more or less revealed reverence. Since those people had very arrogant attitudes and no one viewed another as superior, it was hard to avoid some clashes of the tongue. Some even fought against each other, but without exception, all of them were given a lesson by Yuelao, so they deeply knew how powerful he was.

“Yuelao, we were only crying out injustice for you. Whose strength can be comparable to yours out of all the people the Li family invited?”



You

should be living in that place, but the Li family did not have such arrangements.”

“We even thought that the reason why the Li family didn’t arrange for you to live in there was because they could find an even more powerful character. I even thought they could get a super-expert, a Martial Lord! But who would have thought that ultimately, they got a person like him.”

“What virtue or ability does he have? Not to mention you, it’s likely many people in this manor can defeat him.” After Yuelao appeared, the crowd tried to instigate a fight between him and Chu Feng by stating how he deserved to be in that mansion instead of Chu Feng.

“Do I need you to cry out injustice for something like this?” Yuelao lightly chuckled. He, who was old and cunning, clearly saw through their instigation.

“The Li family is wealthy, but they only give chances to people with strength. I’ve gotten news that in the next few days, the Li family will have an important operation, and the Li family has hired us for this exact operation.”

“So, if you want to obtain even greater rewards, you shouldn’t envy other people’s treatment. The best thing to do now is to prepare, and exhibit your own strength soon.” Yuelao said seriously. His tone was like an elder brother scolding his younger brothers.

“We understand.” After hearing Yuelao’s words, not a single person on scene dared to have any complains.

“Okay, you’re dismissed. Go back and prepare well. Whether he’s a dragon or an ant, it will naturally be revealed on the day of the operation.” Yuelao casually waved his hand, but the meaning behind his words was very clear.

None of the people on scene were stupid, so of course, they understood what he meant. Hence, after the greetings, they went back to their

respective residences.

“Hmph.” However, after everyone left, Yuelao cast his gaze back at the palace Chu Feng was in, his gaze surging with a hint of a chilly aura.

As a World Spiritist, Chu Feng, as expected, felt the crowd’s hostile gazes in the manor, but he simply didn’t put them in his eyes.

So, after entering the palace, Chu Feng ordered the servants assigned to him to prepare a quiet cultivation location. After entering the cultivation location, Chu Feng laid layers of Spirit Formations, preparing to train.

Chu Feng needed to open the Spirit Formation that sealed the Monstrous Beast’s nature, but he also discovered that the Spirit Formation was purple-coloured, which meant it was a Spirit Formation laid by a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

A Spirit Formation laid by a Purple-cloak World Spiritist was definitely not something Chu Feng could destroy, but since Chu Feng dared to make a promise in front of the Li family’s master and Li Chan, of course, he had absolute confidence.

So, what Chu Feng needed to do right now was nothing other than to make a breakthrough in terms of his strength as a World Spiritist. He wanted to try to make a link to the power of purple-coloured Spirit Formations, and step into the realm of Purple-cloak World Spiritists.

Reasonably speaking, Chu Feng’s real cultivation was the fifth level of the Heaven realm. It was impossible for him to make a link to the Spirit Formation power with that kind of strength, because his body could not bear such a burden.

But in reality, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered when he stepped into the Heaven realm and obtained the power of the third lightning, the very essence of his cultivation changed.

At present, Chu Feng’s real strength was not the fifth level of the Heaven realm. It was the eighth level of the Heaven realm. That was Chu Feng’s

real strength.

The power of the three lightning was no longer additional external power. It already thoroughly belonged to Chu Feng. It was his own power. It was his real cultivation. So, in that situation, Chu Feng could naturally make a link to the Spirit Formation power.

\*hmm\*

Indeed, after Chu Feng made sufficient preparations, he willed. Boundless purple-coloured gas surged out from the World Spirit Space, and was then led into Chu Feng's own Spiritual World.

At that instant, Chu Feng felt his own Spirit power becoming a bit stronger, and with another thought, the purple-coloured Spirit Formation power could be controlled however he wished to.

He succeeded. On his first try, Chu Feng successfully connected himself to the power of the purple-coloured Spirit Formations, and grasped power only Purple-cloak World Spiritists could grasp. It was simply a piece of cake.

“Eggy, how is it? I'm quite impressive aren't I?” Even though Chu Feng was completely confident he could gain the power of the Purple-coloured Spirit Formation, when he succeeded on his first attempt, even Chu Feng himself couldn't help being a bit complacent, and bragged at the little beauty Eggy.

“Tch. It's barely satisfactory.” Eggy alluringly curled her lips and said.

\*boom rumble rumble rumble\* However, just at that moment, the World Spirit Space trembled violently, just like an earthquake.

Such a change made Chu Feng's expression change greatly. He hurriedly cast his gaze towards the huge door behind him. Because, as a World Spiritist, he immediately felt that the reason why the World Spirit Space trembled was all because of the door behind him. It was from the power that exploded inside the door that affected the World Spirit Space.

\*boom\* Indeed, as Chu Feng tightly stared at the huge door, another burst of frenzied power was shot out from inside, causing the World Spirit Space to shake once again.

“Powerful!” At that instant, even if it was Chu Feng, he couldn’t help inhaling deeply because even with the door separating them, Chu Feng could feel what kind of horrifying power surged within.

“You’ve finally gotten impatient? But sadly, the Spirit Formation here is too powerful. Even

I

can only obediently give up, let alone you.” Just at that moment, Eggy also came over, but on her exceptionally beautiful face, faint excitement emerged.

“Eggy, do you know what kind of an existence is locked inside, and what cultivation it has?” Chu Feng asked seriously, because he was truly aware that the thing inside was very terrifying.

# Chapter 582 - Son of a Martial Emperor

MGA: Chapter 582 - Son of a Martial Emperor

At the start, Chu Feng could already feel the horrifying aura behind the enormous door. That aura made Chu Feng feel terror from the bottom of his heart, deterring him from approaching the huge door that was full of chains. Even though the World Spirit Space was his territory, he did not dare.

Back then, Chu Feng even thought he could gradually resist that aura as his strength rose, making him dare to go near the door, even open the door and control the existence behind it.

But he discovered that he was wrong. The stronger his strength became, the more he felt the overwhelming strength of that existence. If that door did not exist, he simply didn't dare to imagine what would happen.

Especially, just now, when the thing inside pounded against the huge door, aiming to break the Spirit Formation, it was the first time that Chu Feng felt peril.

It was because the horrifying power was truly too horrifying. Even though Chu Feng had yet to face it head-on, he already strongly felt how powerful the existence behind the huge door was.

Its power was like an endless great ocean.

And Chu Feng himself on the other hand, was nothing but a tiny speck of dust floating around in the sky.

So, when he compared himself to the huge existence within the door, it was the difference between a speck of dust and an ocean. If the thing

inside suddenly broke the bindings of the Spirit Formation, then Chu Feng was definitely going to die.

“It is merely a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World that has a deranged nature and is full of hatred. Since the seal on this door is specialized for World Spirits from the Asura Spirit World, I am sure that it is from the Asura Spirit World.”

“As for its cultivation, I was unable to confirm it before, but looking at the power it used to smash against the Spirit Formation just now, it seems to be quite a bit stronger than my expectations.” Eggy sweetly smiled and said.

“Exactly what realm is it in?” Chu Feng restlessly asked.

“According to the cultivation realms you have here, very barely, I suppose it can be counted as a Martial Emperor.” Eggy smiled, downplaying the significance of her words.

“What? Martial Emperor?!” Hearing the two words “Martial Emperor”, Chu Feng couldn’t avoid being dumbstruck, his face astounded.

There was actually a Martial Emperor locked within his own World Spirit Space. That was rather shocking, especially so since Chu Feng went to the Imperial Tomb and experienced the power of the Imperial Might. Whenever he thought of the fact that there had always been a Martial Emperor in his World Spirit Space, he truly had no choice but to be stunned.

“What’s there to be afraid of? It’s not like this guy has been locked in your World Spirit Space for one or two days. If it could escape, it would have already. How would it even let a boy like you continue living so leisurely?”

“You need to know that its malice is very strong. I’m sure it already hates you straight to the bone, and if it

does

escape, the first thing it will do is skin you, drink your blood, and take your life! Hehe!” Eggy strangely smiled, scaring Chu Feng.

“I’m not afraid, just shocked. Shocked that a Martial Emperor is imprisoned in my World Spirit Space.” Chu Feng shook his head, but very quickly, a thought popped up, and he asked, “Eggy, does this mean that you’re also a Martial Emperor? And wouldn’t the person who sealed you two in my World Spirit Space also be a Martial Emperor?”

Seeing Chu Feng’s dumbfounded and tongue-tied reaction, Eggy couldn’t help tidying up her skirt and hair, then very pleasedly said, “Accurately speaking, that’s true. My cultivation back then, according to your cultivation ranking here, was indeed of the Martial Emperor level, unlike that guy over there who can only barely be counted as a Martial Emperor.”

“As for the person who sealed my cultivation here without me knowing, I’m afraid I cannot be sure of his cultivation.”

\*gulp\* At that instant, Chu Feng strongly gulped, then said, “Heavens. You were actually a Martial Emperor.” Although he already had his guesses, when Eggy personally admitted her cultivation, Chu Feng was still quite surprised.

“Hmph. You brat, what is this attitude? Do I not look like a Martial Emperor? I’ll even tell you this: I am not simply a Martial Emperor. I’m also a great demon who kills without blinking! Even in my Asura Spirit World I’m an infamous existence! You better not anger me!” Seeing Chu Feng’s reaction of disbelief, Eggy pouted, seeming very displeased.

“Haha, of course not of course not. How could I dare to doubt Milady Queen’s strength?” Seeing Eggy angry, Chu Feng hurriedly shook his head, denying her words. But, he wasn’t able to hold back his laugh.

“You damn Chu Feng! Just you wait. On the day that I restore my strength, see how I’ll take care of you.” Eggy gnashed her teeth in anger, but regardless what expression she had on her absolutely beautiful face, it was so pretty that it did not seem serious. In Chu Feng eyes, she even seemed to be nothing but cute.

And after attempting to destroy the huge door two times, the Martial Emperor level World Spirit sealed behind the door quieted down as well.

As for why that happened, Eggy explained it as possibly because Chu Feng successfully linked himself to the purple-coloured Spirit Formation power, making the World Spirit feel a familiar scent, which in turn agitated it.

But Chu Feng had no need to worry about anything. The Spirit Formation in the World Spirit Space was very powerful. It was not something that the World Spirit could break. As for the reason why the person who laid such a formation sealed Eggy and such a horrifying World Spirit in Chu Feng's World Spirit Space, it was simple.

Obviously, that person wanted Chu Feng to use Eggy and the World Spirit. However, with Chu Feng's current cultivation, he was unable to grasp such power.

After that, Chu Feng left the World Spirit Space. Despite already calmed expressions on his face, his heart was still quite excited because to him, at present, if he thought of exactly who sealed Eggy and the horrifying World Spirit in his body, he was able to think of his father.

Back then, after confirming that Huangfu Haoyue's cultivation was of the Martial King rank, Chu Feng had felt that his father was a great Martial King, but right now, he couldn't help destroying that thought. His father was definitely not a Martial King. He was very possibly a Martial Emperor, perhaps even stronger.

And as a cultivator who was advancing forward bit by bit in the vast world of martial cultivation, when Chu Feng recollected that his own father was a mighty Martial Emperor, he couldn't help but feel his blood boil because that was definitely something to be proud of.

“Father. Although I don't know what happened back then, I will find you. I will find the answer. As your son, I will not disappoint you.” After speaking those words with great confidence, he cast his gaze at the Monstrous Beast that knelt obediently nearby, and still had frenzied blood circulating its body.



\*hmm\* Suddenly, Chu Feng waved his sleeve. Purple-coloured Spirit Formation power visible by the naked eye poured out from his body. Afterwards, his finger was like a brush as it drew on the ground. With practiced actions, a grand Spirit Formation was gradually rising.

Chu Feng wanted to quickly destroy the Spirit Formation sealed in the Monstrous Beast's body. That was not something simple, but Chu Feng was totally sure and had absolute confidence he could break it open in a short amount of time.

It was for no other reason but because his blood boiled. As long as he recalled that his father was a Martial Emperor, and that he was a son of a Martial Emperor, he blood truly boiled and burned, strongly pushing him forward.

# Chapter 583 - Black and White

## Rakshasa

MGA: Chapter 583 - Black and White Rakshasa

The Li family's manor. Li Chan was invited to the palace Chu Feng lived in.

“Lord Benefactor Wuqing, you asked for me in such a hurry. Is there something wrong?” Li Chan's position in the Li family was not low. Other than the family master, it was reasonable to say she was the one with the most authority.

But a woman who had such a high position, when she personally saw Chu Feng, couldn't help referring him as “Lord Benefactor”. Moreover, she had a very good attitude, so much that something seemed to be wrong.

“Iron Beast, go ahead.”

“Truthfully tell Big Miss exactly what happened.” Chu Feng cast his gaze towards the Monstrous Beast next to him.

“This is?” Only then did Li Chan discover that the Monstrous Beast which attacked her back then seemed different. Although it was still submissive, it clearly lost its former oddness. Looking at its clear gaze, it seemed to have its own awareness.

Indeed, after Chu Feng spoke, the Monstrous Beast actually stood up, walked up to Li Chan, and very apologetically bowed to Li Chan before saying, “Big Miss, I express my apologies for the matters on that day. However, I hope you can understand that I was truly helpless.”

“You, you've recovered your nature?” After the Monstrous Beast named Iron Beast spoke, Li Chan was instantly elated. Quickly after, she looked at Chu Feng and said, “Lord Benefactor Wuqing, you've succeeded?”

“Yes. With Mr. Wuqing’s powerful methods, not only did he restore my nature, he even recovered my memories regarding everything that happened in these past days. So, even though I lost my awareness since a few days ago, I remember everything that I experienced.”

Before letting Chu Feng speak, Iron Beast took the lead and spoke first. Furthermore, from its words and attitude, it could be seen that it was actually really grateful to Chu Feng for breaking open his seal and returning his nature.

“Then, what exactly happened? Who sealed your nature, and who brought you into the Wolf Ivory Mountain?” Li Chan impatiently asked.

“As predicted by you and Mr. Wuqing, it was the Ma family, and the person who caught me was the master of the Ma family, Ma Yukun.” The Monstrous Beast calmly spoke, but the truth immediately came out, in a single sentence.

“It was truly them?” And after hearing those words, Li Chan’s expressions changed greatly. Although she had already thought of the answer, when it was confirmed, she still felt disbelief.

Afterwards, Li Chan immediately brought Chu Feng and the Monstrous Beast to her father’s residence. Moreover, she told everything to him.

As per Chu Feng’s arrangements, the Monstrous Beast even supplemented details and said many things that did not exist in order to make the Li family’s master believe that his brother held malicious thoughts for a long time already, and that he wanted to take over his Li family.

“Dammit! What a waste it was to see him as my brother. He dares to entrap me like this, and even wanted to kill my daughter?!” Indeed, with the combined assistance of Chu Feng, Li Chan, and the Monstrous Beast, the Li family’s master, who knew the truth, clenched his fists in anger and gritted his teeth.

Chu Feng, who was already a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, could feel the surging fury in the Li family master’s body, as well as his boundless

bloodlust.

“Father, what should we do now? His Ma family clearly harboured selfish thoughts and has schemed for a long time. In a few more days, it will be the day to open the treasure. He will definitely make a move on us.” Li Chan asked with a face of worry.

“This...”

“The treasure opening date has already been set. If I suddenly go back on my word, he will definitely be suspicious. Right now, it is really not a good situation.” Being questioned by Li Chan, the Li family’s master felt himself to be in quite the predicament.

“Milord, Big Miss, I do have a plan.” Just at that time, Chu Feng spoke.

“Wuqing, what plan do you have? Quickly tell us!” Hearing that, the Li family’s master hurriedly asked.

“The near-death experience that the Big Miss had, despite being carefully planned out by the Ma family, was still set up by the Shabi couple [1]. If it weren’t for those two traitors, she wouldn’t have possibly entered such a perilous state.” Chu Feng said.

“Hmph. In these years that the Shabi couple followed me, I had never maltreated them. If it weren’t for my development, they simply wouldn’t have had their current cultivations. I treat them in such a kind manner, yet they repay that kindness in such a way. I will definitely make them pay the price for their actions.” When the Shabi couple was mentioned, the Li family’s master was as furious as the thunders, his killing intent boiling.

“Milord. Naturally, this Shabi couple must be punished severely, but right now, we can use them.” Chu Feng said smilingly.

“Use them? How?” Li Chan asked closely.

“They know that the one who saved you is me, and also know that I’m a World Spiritist. I subdued the Monstrous Beast and brought it back, so

they can definitely suppose that I want to find clues regarding the attempted murder from the Monstrous Beast.”

“Tomorrow, announce my failure to remove the seal in the Monstrous Beast, which caused the Monstrous Beast to thoroughly lose control, and as nothing could be done, it was killed. I will also use special Spirit Formation methods to generate a fake Monstrous Beast corpse to show to the public, and make them believe it to be genuine.”

“With that, the Shabi couple will definitely report this to the Ma family, and because of that, they will not know that we have knowledge of their secret. In addition, the camaraderie between you and the Ma family’s master will make them assume that you’re still oblivious.”

“As for the treasure opening a few days later, we will undergo it normally. However, we must move before the Ma family moves. The so-called ‘beating someone in their own game’.” Chu Feng said.

“But the total strength of the Ma family is already superior to my Li family. Moreover, they have planned for a long time. I’m afraid we won’t be able to defeat them a few days later.” Li Chan worriedly said.

“Actually, that’s not a very hard problem either. Although the Ma family’s total strength is likely greater than the Li family, they have only one Martial Lord: the Ma family’s master. Milord, as long as you can defeat him, the Ma family will be undoubtedly defeated.” Chu Feng smiled and said.

“Wuqing, you’re quite logical, but I’ve personally sparred Ma Yukun many times before and we have always ended up with a draw. If I need to kill him, I’m afraid it won’t be easy. If the surprise attack fails, then the two of us will be forced into a dragged out battle. I would be quite fine, but it’s likely that all of you will be in danger.” The Li family’s master expressed worry as he spoke.

“Milord, there’s no need to worry about that. I, Wuqing, have studied Spirit Formation techniques carefully, and have once stumbled upon luck. Milord, as long as you’ve firmly decided in killing Ma Yukun, then I can

guarantee that you'll defeat him." Chu Feng said while being full of confidence.

"Wuqing, I wonder...what methods do you have? Speak your mind!" The Li family's master asked.

"I have here a single forbidden medicine obtained from an ancient remain. Although it cannot make you into a rank two Martial Lord from a rank one Martial Lord, it will have no problem increasing your strength greatly so you can kill the Ma family's master."

"However, after all, it's a forbidden medicine. Ten hours after consumption, the medicinal effects wear off, and when it does, you will feel pain akin to ten thousand insects gnawing upon your bones. But with your current cultivation, you will definitely not die. Rather, it will help your future cultivation." As Chu Feng spoke, he took out a black and white pellet.

"This is, the Black and White Rakshasa!"

And when the Li family's master saw the pellet, his expression changed greatly, his aged face full of shock.

# Chapter 584 - Exploitation

MGA: Chapter 584 - Exploitation

“Wuqing, you actually have something like that?!” Seeing the black and white pellet in Chu Feng’s hand, the Li family’s master was bewildered.

Forbidden Medicine could raise a cultivator’s cultivation in a short period of time. That was something everyone knew. However, the medicinal power of Forbidden Medicines varied, and colours were used to differentiate the strong ones from the weak ones.

After reaching a realm such as a Martial Lord, ordinary Forbidden Medicines didn’t really have any use. Similarly, they were not affected by the backlash from ordinary Forbidden Medicine because their bodies truly reached extremely terrifying states.

However, high-quality Forbidden Medicine contained power that could even affect Martial Lords, but those kinds of Forbidden Medicine were always difficult to create, and even the method of creation was a secret that wasn’t spread to others. Moreover, after producing such an item, there were at least two different colours. Forbidden Medicine like those had names unique to them.

For example, the one Chu Feng took out just now. It was a type of high-quality Forbidden medicine, and its medicinal power was so strong it could change a Martial Lord’s cultivation. Especially for a rank one Martial Lord, its effects were the most distinct.

But even in the Eastern Sea Region, it was not easy to find Forbidden Medicine like that. It was something that truly lacked in supply, and was something that could only be found by chance. That was why the Li family’s master seemed so astounded when Chu Feng took out that Forbidden Medicine.

“I am indeed unable to produce this Black and White Rakshasa, and indeed, I found it in a certain remain.” Chu Feng nodded his head, smiling. The Forbidden Medicine was plundered from the Ji Dynasty. Since he knew that he would have a use for it in the future, Chu Feng did not sell it, and left it by his side.

“Wuqing, this Black and White Rakshasa is truly too valuable. I cannot take it for nothing. The market price for a Black and White Rakshasa should be fifty thousand Heaven beads. I’ll give you sixty thousand Heaven beads. Take them as the cost for the pellet.” As the Li family’s master spoke, he cast an eye gesture at Li Chan.

After Li Chan nodded her head, she turned around and left. When she returned, in her hand there was a Cosmos Sack, and inside were sixty thousand Heaven beads.

Chu Feng did not oppose the Li family’s action, and gladly accepted the beads. Although he knew that the Black and White Rakshasa wasn’t a simple thing, he never expected it to be so valuable. Sixty thousand Heaven beads was not a small number. There was no reason for any refusal.

“Wuqing, it is my Li family’s luck to be able to invite you to this place. With this Black and White Rakshasa, I will have absolutely no problem defeating Ma Yukun.” With the pellet in his hand, feeling the berserk medicinal power contained within, the Li family’s master mouth couldn’t help rising into a confident smile.

And seeing her father praise Chu Feng in such a way, and thinking about the things Chu Feng did before, Li Chan was a bit proud too. After all, Chu Feng was brought back by her.

“Chu Feng, do you feel that this Li family’s master is trustworthy? I keep on feeling something wrong with him. Either he is extremely stupid and has nothing in his heart called suspicion, or his scheming ability is so great that even you and I cannot see through it.” But just at that moment, Eggy spoke, expressing a bit of worry.



“Don’t worry. Unless he doesn’t take the Black and White Rakshasa, otherwise, I can control him within a short period of time. Even if I can’t control him, his cultivation will completely disappear if I wish it to.”

“Besides, regardless of how much stronger he gets, he is only a rank one Martial Lord. So, even if he doesn’t take the Black and White Rakshasa and retains his own cultivation, and also wants to harm me, if I put my full strength in the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, he may not be able to catch up to me. Also, intuition is telling me that this Li family’s master is not a person who has extremely complex schemes. Rather, he’s a person who reaches the extremities of stupidity. He is probably one of those legendary idiots who are never willing to change their minds and keep on trusting.”

Chu Feng lightly smiled. There was a special Spirit Formation added into the Black and White Rakshasa. After the consumer refines it, the Spirit Formation would enter their body without them knowing.

As long as Chu Feng activates that Spirit Formation, it would control the consumer for a short period of time. Even if he was unable to control the consumer, he could restrain his power.

Chu Feng, at present, wanted to use the Li family’s master to take care of the Ma family. After removing the Ma family, he believed that the Li family’s master wouldn’t just watch as Chu Feng took the Spiritual Awareness in the Wolf Ivory Mountain Rang. So, the Black and White Rakshasa was Chu Feng’s trump card.

However, it was definitely not his final trump card. Those were still the three Secret Skills he grasped. Chu Feng knew that Martial Lords were very powerful, and with his current strength, despite being invincible within the Heaven realm, he was still unable to kill a Martial Lord.

But, the three Secret Skills Chu Feng grasped had evolved. If Chu Feng used them with his full power, it was likely even a Martial Lord could do nothing to him. That was also why Chu Feng was so confident.

After that, exactly as it played out in Chu Feng's head, the Li family let out information and announced to the outside that Chu Feng attempted to break open the Monstrous Beast's Spirit Formation, but at the end, was unsuccessful, causing it to go mad. As nothing could be done, he could only kill it.

When that was known, many Li family members who didn't know the truth were very disappointed. After all, they hoped Chu Feng could break open the Spirit Formation so they could find out the criminal who aimed to assassinate their family's Big Miss.

But that put the Shabi couple and the Ma family's members at ease. They truly thought that the Li family knew nothing, so everything went according to their original plan.

Just like that, a few more days passed, and finally, the day that the Li and Ma family agreed to open the treasure within the Wolf Ivory Mountain arrived. The Li family gathered all of the experts and grandly flew over to the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range.

“God damn, that bastard really has some luck. He actually saved the Big Miss! Right now, he has really thoroughly gotten good impressions from her and the family master.” When an expert invited by the Li family looked at the lively conversation between Chu Feng and Li Chan, and when even the Li family's master chatted occasionally with Chu Feng, he was permeated with envy, and such envy gave birth to hatred as well.

“In the world of cultivators, strength will forever rule supreme. The Li family did not invite us here for chats and laughs.” Just at that time, Yuelao spoke.

“Yuelao, what do you mean?” Hearing that, many experts went close to him. They felt very displeased when they looked at Chu Feng, and really wished something bad would happen to him. They even wanted to give him a lesson.

“What day is today?” Yuelao asked.

“I’ve heard that there’s an ancient remain in the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range, and the Li and Ma family will open it together.” Someone replied.

“Since they’re opening it together, then there will definitely be a contest. In this world, there are no true alliances, only true benefits.”

“I’ve heard that the Ma family invited quite a few experts from the outside as well. So, when we meet later, there will definitely be clashes. At least there will be a time when we compare our might. That time will be the time when we show our strengths. With only the cultivation of the eighth level of the Heaven realm, what can that brat Wuqing do?”

“Later on, if the Ma family does not jeer, then it’s fine. But if they do, I will be the first to make my move and shame the Ma family. If the Ma family doesn’t take that loss, they will definitely send another person up. At that time, all of you can recommend Wuqing to go. With his cultivation, he will definitely be greatly defeated, and his great defeat would also shame the Li family. So... Hmph!” Yuelao coldly snorted, his face completely chilly.

“Excellent idea Yuelao, excellent idea!” And after hearing Yuelao’s words, those experts sneered, and the gaze they looked at Chu Feng with was filled with expectation.

# Chapter 585 - Spirit Formation Technique Contest

MGA: Chapter 585 - Spirit Formation Technique Contest

After a short trip, Chu Feng and the others very quickly arrived at the agreed location in the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range, a small ravine within some mountains. At the bottom of the ravine, a large group of people had gathered, and judging by the clothes they wore, they were from the Ma family.

The cultivation that the Ma family had was all quite good. The weakest were in the fifth level of the Heaven realm, but most were at the peak of the Heaven realm. They even had eighteen Blue-cloak World Spiritists, but the Li family only had a number that could be counted with one hand: five.

So, it could be said that in terms of the number of people and total strength, the Ma family did indeed far surpass the Li family. That was not only limited to the experts the Ma family invited. Even the people from the Ma family surpassed those from the Li family.

There was especially an old man within the crowd who had an extraordinary complexion and powerful presence.

He was near three meters tall, and his body was so sturdy that even through his clothes his chunks of healthy muscles could be seen. Even the wrinkles on his face did not seem like wrinkles, but more like scars.

Although he neared the age of a hundred, the feeling he gave off was as if he was at the peak of his life. Without much thinking, Chu Feng knew who that person was. He was certainly the master of the Ma family, a rank one Martial Lord, Ma Yukun.

“Brother, you’ve finally come! I’ve waited quite a long time for you.” Seeing Chu Feng and the others, Ma Yukun first rose into the sky and while full of smiles, he initiated a conversation with the Li family’s master. The Li family’s master was also very enthusiastic, like nothing had ever happened. Both of them exhibited the brotherly affection between themselves.

Chu Feng was used to seeing such a scene, so his focus did not stop on the Ma family’s body, but at the ravine.

When he used his Heaven’s Eyes and looked down from above, he discovered that the ravine did look quite like the location of a Spiritual Lair.

However, after Chu Feng descended, he simply could not find anything out of the ordinary, let alone the entrance. Now that wasn’t because Chu Feng’s cultivation was too weak. It only meant that the mysterious expert who sealed that place was too strong. It wasn’t the terrain that hid itself from Chu Feng’s Heaven’s Eyes, but the Spirit Formation laid that was hidden from Chu Feng’s Heaven’s Eyes.

“Brother, I have waited dozens of years for this day, and our ancestors are always watching us from above.”

“Right now, we can finally open this place. We must be early with matters, so why not open it right now?” As the Ma family’s master spoke, he took out a stone case from his Cosmos Sack. Although there wasn’t anything special about the stone case, the patterns in the center of the stone case told Chu Feng it was not simple at all. The object inside the stone case was even less simple.

“Mm. Brother, you’re correct. However, our ancestors had made it clear that it must be a World Spiritist who opens this place, but neither of us are a World Spiritist. Who should such an important responsibility be given to?” The Li family’s master also took out an almost identical stone case.

“Brother. Although neither of us are qualified for this matter, right now, what we don’t lack are people like World Spiritists in our families.

However, such a significant duty can only be bore by a single person. Who exactly to send is a problem...”

“But the solution to that is very simple. From what I see, choose your Li family’s most excellent World Spiritist, and I’ll also choose a decent one from my Ma family.”

“Let them two compare their Spirit Formation techniques, and the victor will bear this heavy responsibility. They will then open this place with both our keys. How about it?” The Ma family’s master smiled and said.

“Sure! Brother, we’ll follow your words.” The Li family’s master nodded his head in approval. Then, he looked at the Li family crowd behind him, and locked his gaze on Yuelao after lightly scanning over them. He said, “Yuelao, I’ll pass my Li family’s heavy responsibility to you.”

“Yes sir!” Seeing that, Yuelao hurriedly replied. He first tidied up the blue-coloured World Spirit Cloak on him, then complacently looked at the crowd. Particularly, he looked at Chu Feng with a special gaze, as if saying, “Little boy, can you do this? In this crucial moment, the one who represents the Li family is still me.”

“Mr. Gu, go.” At the same time, the Ma family’s master waved his hand.

Immediately after he finished speaking, an old man also wearing a blue-coloured World Spirit Cloak walked out from the Ma family’s mass of people.

Not only was the old man a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, his cultivation was not weaker than Yuelao, also having the cultivation of the ninth level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, in comparison to Yuelao’s smugness, he seemed quite tranquil, but his gaze emanated absolute confidence.

“My friend, I wonder... How do you wish to compete?” After the old man called Mr. Gu walked out, he very politely asked Yuelao.

“Is there even a need to ask? Since it’s a spar between World Spiritists, naturally, we compete with Spirit Formation techniques.” However, Yuelao

coldly snorted, then willed. With a “hmm”, boundless blue-coloured Spirit Formation power surged out from his body.

\*whoosh whoosh whoosh\* Afterwards, he moved his palms around, facing the sky and very quickly drawing. A large Spirit Formation was then erected in mid-air.

\*whoosh\* And when the boundless blue-coloured power coming from Yuelao’s body passed through the huge Spirit Formation he created in the air, a blue-coloured sword of three-meters width and nine-meters height formed, and slashed down towards Mr. Gu.

It was not a martial skill, nor a Secret Skill. It was a special Spirit Formation formed by a combination of formation, so it had a certain amount of offensive nature. The blue-coloured huge sword that Yuelao formed was a rather brilliant method.

“As expected of Yuelao. Such a powerful Spirit Formation technique!” Indeed, after the blue-coloured huge sword appeared, all of the World Spiritists in the Li family couldn’t help lighting up their eyes and praising, because they, who were also World Spiritists, absolutely could not do the thing that Yuelao did.

But even though the Li family’s crowd was exclaiming in surprise, the World Spiritists from the Ma family were very calm, as if they had absolute confidence that they would win.

“My friend, you truly do have great methods, but sadly, if it is only a blue-coloured Spirit Formation, I’m afraid you will not be able to defeat me.”

Just at that moment, Mr. Gu coldly smiled. Then, he raised a single hand and drew in the air. A purple-coloured Spirit Formation quickly condensed in front of him.

“What? How is that possible? He’s a Purple-cloak World Spiritist?”

“Heavens! That too inconceivable! He’s actually a Purple-cloak World Spiritist! Isn’t that power only Martial Lords can grasp?”

After seeing the purple-coloured formation, the faces of the people from the Li family changed. Formerly very smug, their faces were now full of shock.

Normally speaking, purple-coloured Spirit Formation power should be power only Martial Lords could grasp. Those who became a Purple-cloak World Spiritist before being a Martial Lord could be said to be a dragon within men.

At present, Mr. Gu of the Ma family was obviously a person like that. How could the Li family not be astonished? After all, there was an impassable distance between Blue-cloak World Spiritists and Purple-cloak World Spiritists. All of them knew that the Li family had lost.



# Chapter 586 - Chu Feng Enters the Stage

MGA: Chapter 586 - Chu Feng Enters the Stage

“Hmph. A Purple-cloak World Spiritist? So what? I don’t believe you will break my giant sword!”

Although he knew that the Spirit Formation power his opponent grasped completely surpassed his own, Yuelao was unwilling to admit defeat. Gritting his teeth, he channeled all his power into the formation.

With merely a blink, the blue-coloured large sword that was only nine meters long expended rapidly, and actually became over a dozen meters long. Even its might increased by several times.

But that Mr. Gu still did not fear such a change. Rather, within his smile, a trace of mocking leaked out.

“Grow!”

Suddenly, Mr. Gu loudly shouted. A purple-coloured formation towering in front of him spun quickly. Countless symbols swirled inside, forming a strange but gorgeous pattern. As radiance dazzled, powerful aura emanated from within.

\*boom\*

Just as Yuelao’s huge blue-coloured sword was going to near Mr. Gu, an explosion came from the purple-coloured Spirit Formation. Coinciding with such an event was a large purple-coloured hand abruptly stretching out from the same formation. Five fingers spread out, aiming to grab the huge sword.

The large hand was very huge. It was simply like the hand of a giant. Moreover, its speed was quick, and its might fierce. It grabbed onto the blue-coloured huge sword, and with a light clench, a bang burst out, the blue-coloured sword becoming fragments.

\*poof\* Simultaneous to the shattering of the blue-coloured huge sword, Yuelao's complexion paled, his mouth widened, and a mouthful of blood sprayed out, staining his clothes. Then, his legs went limp, and he powerlessly fell down. If it weren't for the people from the Li family arriving on time, he would have definitely crashed onto the ground.

\*wuaao\*

But as Yuelao was utterly defeated and suffered heavy injuries, a furious roar came from the purple-coloured formation. After such a roar, the huge hand that already appeared actually grew speedily. Under the crowd's gazes, a huge monster walked out.

That monster had a purple-coloured half-transparent body. It was formed by Spirit Formations. It was humanoid, but had a beast-like face. It was almost dozens of meters tall, and its aura was very powerful, its strength extraordinary as well. Despite being created by a Spirit Formation, it was very lifelike, as if it had intelligence. It struck fear into many people's hearts.

“So powerful. He has actually exhibited Spirit Formation techniques to such a realm.” Seeing the enormous monster, the people on scene exclaimed endlessly, convinced by Mr. Gu's Spirit Formation techniques.

“Brother, it seems like this heavy responsibility of opening the treasure falls upon my Ma family's Mr. Gu for completion.” At that instant, the Ma family's master spoke with a smile. His face and words were brimming with smugness.

“Haha, good good good! Brother, you've actually found such an excellent World Spiritist. I can see that you've put quite painstaking efforts in order to open this place. Brother, I truly thank you for the hard work.”

But the Li family's master wasn't too displeased. Instead, he very happily laughed, and as he spoke, he and the Ma family's master walked together towards Mr. Gu, preparing to hand the stone cases in their hands to him.

Although on the surface, the Li family's master didn't seem to be concerned about the horrendous defeat of that fight, the other people in the Li family had very ugly faces on. They, who even had so many airs of arrogance before, were currently extremely downcast.

It was because the exchange just now did not only represent the complete defeat of Yuelao, it also represented their Li family's complete defeat. That made the people of the Li family feel that they had no face, and were endlessly ashamed.

"Mr. Gu, you are truly very skilled. But I have also studied Spirit Formation techniques, so I wonder if you can give me some pointers on it, Mr. Gu?" But as the people from the Li family felt that everything was set, a loud and clear voice suddenly rang out from the ranks of the Li family.

"Who?" After that voice rang out, almost everyone on scene couldn't help being surprised. They quickly shot their gazes at the origin of the voice.

And when they saw him, their complexions changed once again because at that very instant, they could clearly see a handsome middle-aged man slowly walking out from the Li family's crowd. That person was none other than Wuqing, transformed from Chu Feng.

"Wuqing, what are you doing? Are you looking to die? Quickly get the hell back here, don't go out to lose face!"

"Bastard, does this guy want fame so much that he wants to go insane? Just look at his opponent. Even Yuelao could not defeat that Mr. Gu, yet he dares to walk out?"

"Ahh, this time, my Li family will truly lose a tremendous amount of face."

After discovering that it was Chu Feng who called out, many people in the Li family felt extremely helpless. Some even sent hidden mental messages to Chu Feng, telling him to get back to avoid any more embarrassment for the Li family.

Actually, not only those who didn't know Chu Feng acted like that. Even Li Chan and the Li family's master who knew Chu Feng slightly more currently frowned strongly, not knowing what action was best because they too did not feel that Chu Feng, who was only in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, could defeat the Purple-cloak World Spiritist in the ninth level of the Heaven realm.

"My friend, you are quite courageous. May I have your name?" After derisively examining Chu Feng, Mr. Gu smiled lightly and spoke.

"I am Wuqing." Chu Feng replied serenely.

"Ah, so it's Wuqing. My friend Wuqing, do you truly want to have a Spirit Formation technique spar with me?" Mr. Gu very mockingly asked.

"Don't tell me you do not dare?" Chu Feng replied with cold words.

"Haha, you jest. I don't dare? Do you think I'm afraid of you?"

"Since you insist, I'll grant your wish. However, the distance between our strengths is too big. If I truly attack, I'm afraid I will heavily injure you."

"So, I won't attack you. If you want to defeat me, that's fine as well. So long as you use your strongest Spirit Formation technique to attack my Spirit Formation Giant and make it tremble, then it's your win." Mr. Gu smiled while looking at Chu Feng, his gaze full of disdain.

"Oh? Are your words really true? As long as I can cause the thing you made to shake, it's my win?" Chu Feng loudly asked, almost disagreeing on the method of determining the victor.

"But of course. I've always kept true to my word. My friend Wuqing, please don't think that I'm looking down on you. This is really for the sake

of your safety. I have no other choice.” Mr. Gu spread open his hands, as though it truly did not matter for him.

“Then I must thank you for your kind intentions.” Wearing a light smile on his face that suddenly turned cold, Chu Feng opened up his arms, then rapidly waved them. Layers of odd symbols endlessly poured out and drilled into the air.

Chu Feng’s speed was extremely quick, so quick that one could not see his hands clearly, nor his movements. They could see only the countless afterimages formed by his arms as they kept on flashing in front of him.

In that situation, with Chu Feng in the middle, his surroundings started to change as well. At first, there were only bursts of rumblings, but then the earth started to faintly tremble. At the end, innumerable shattered rocks rose from the ground, rising gradually and even the air around him twisted.

# Chapter 587 - The Domineering Chu Feng

MGA: Chapter 587 - The Domineering Chu Feng

“This is quite an imposing atmosphere. It seems like this guy can really play tricks.” Seeing the powerful might that Chu Feng generated, many people stared at the side with cold eyes and spoke only to scorn. No one believed that Chu Feng’s power was genuine, and instead felt Chu Feng was going to embellish the previous defeat with another one.

“Ahh, one cannot escape from the disaster they stirred up themselves. He is truly preparing to embarrass the Li family!” And Yuelao who was heavily injured by Mr. Gu just now helplessly shook his head. After personally experiencing his power, he was pretty much sure of Chu Feng’s defeat.

\*hmm\* But just as everyone felt that Chu Feng was putting up false might, they saw him abruptly merge his blurred hands. In front of him, a dozen vortexes appeared. They spun around quickly, and like circular doors, stood in the air.

As the vortexes spiraled, purple-coloured lights emerged from them, along with countless blinding symbols. When the purple-coloured lights interweaved with the symbols, they formed strange and bright patterns. At the very end, the dozen vortexes transformed into purple-coloured Spirit Formations.

“Heavens! That is?!”

When everyone saw that, all of their expressions distorted. They were dumbstruck, and their glittering eyes were full of astonishment.

All of them were quite extraordinary people, so they could all tell what Chu Feng created were all purple-coloured Spirit Formations. Moreover, it

was a dozen purple-coloured Spirit Formations. Chu Feng, the person only in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, actually grasped purple-coloured Spirit Formation power as well.

“How is this possible? Can it be that he’s a Purple-cloak World Spiritist?!”

At that instant, many people who disliked Chu Feng were stupefied thoroughly by the scene in front of their eyes because they really did not dare to believe that Chu Feng was also a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

“Lord Benefactor Wuqing is actually?”

In reality, not only were those who were awaiting Chu Feng embarrassment stunned. Even Li Chan, the Li family’s master, and the Ma family’s crowd were baffled.

If one were to say that a person who obtained purple-coloured Spirit Formation power in the ninth level of the Heaven realm was a genius, then a person who obtained such power in the eighth level of the Heaven realm was a genius within geniuses.

“They are indeed purple-coloured Spirit Formations, that is true; but more importantly to World Spiritists is the control of those Spirit Formations and not merely false bravado. Can you control the dozen of Spirit Formations you opened simultaneously?”

Mr. Gu, who was also a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, had already confirmed Chu Feng’s identity. However, he did not feel that Chu Feng could proficiently control the power of purple-coloured Spirit Formations, and even more so, he didn’t believe Chu Feng could successfully lay a dozen Spirit Formations.

Thinking back to when he first obtained the power of purple-coloured Spirit Formations, and when he skillfully grasped the power of purple-coloured Spirit Formations, the time he spent on doing both those things was a lot, and he had also worked very hard.

\*wuaooo~~~~~\*

But at that moment, within the dozen of purple-coloured Spirit Formations, deafening roars rang out concurrently. That noise was even more terrifying than the roar from the giant Mr. Gu formed earlier.

\*wuaooo~~~~~\*

However, that roar was merely the beginning. Within the unending roars, a dozen large and sturdy figures stepped out of the Spirit Formations in succession. Everyone was thoroughly astounded by that.

Not a single one of those figures was smaller than the one Mr. Gu formed, and looking at them in terms of might, every single one of them surpassed the giant beast that Mr. Gu made.

It was because they not only had large physiques, on their semi-transparent bodies, there was even a layer of domineering armor. With armor on their bodies, and huge axes in their hands, their imposing outer appearances made it difficult for anyone to determine whether they were giants or beasts. But, something unquestionable was that they were definitely near-invincible enormous warriors.

\*wuaoo~~~~~\*

As everyone was submerged in shock, there came another deafening roar. Those dozen of enormous monsters, as commanded by Chu Feng, strode forward, dashing quickly towards Mr. Gu.

\*boom boom boom\*

As they madly ran, they kept on making thunder-like explosions. Not only did they stir up roiling dust, they even shook the mountains and earth. Moreover, their speeds were extremely quick, arriving in front of Mr. Gu after only a blink.

\*ao~~~~\*

\*boom~~~~\*



At that instant, the huge beast Mr. Gu formed had intentions of protecting Mr. Gu, but in an instant it was torn into pieces by the dozen of monsters Chu Feng formed. Ultimately, it reverted into purple-coloured Spirit Formation power, which then scatteredly floated in the air. The huge beast that Mr. Gu thought to be invincible could not even take a single blow in front of Chu Feng's giants.

“Damn brat, don't underestimate me!”

When the huge beast was torn into pieces, Mr. Gu immediately paled, but, he was not afraid. Rather, he howled at the sky with strong bloodlust.

He overlaid his palms, throwing out a very special hand seal. When that hand seal was completed, the earth underneath his feet also violently trembled. Countless cracks appeared, and at the end, the earth started to shatter and rise into the air.

“This horrifying power... Could it be that he wants to pour all he has, and is betting everything on this single strike?” Seeing the environmental change caused by Mr. Gu, Yuelao couldn't help inhaling a breath of cool air. He, also a World Spiritist, seemed to have a premonition.

“Haa!”

Indeed, when the power in Mr. Gu's body accumulated to a certain degree, he suddenly roared at the sky. Then, boundless purple-coloured Spirit Formation power, like a volcano erupting, started to burst out of his body.

The purple-coloured Spirit Formation power rose into the sky and was exceptionally grand, but the most shocking thing was that the boundless power started to gather together, and formed a large snake that touched the sky.

That large snake was over two hundred meters long. It had sharp teeth in its mouth, and its eyes glowed with red. Not only was it lifelike, its might was even extremely powerful. Even a very arbitrarily movement in the sky gave rise to gales.

\*whoosh\*

\*boom boom boom boom boom\*

Suddenly, the large Spirit Formation snake's tail suddenly moved, and like a whip it streaked downwards. In only an instant, it completely smashed the dozen of enormous monsters. Its strength was powerful, and was simply unstoppable.

“Hmph.”

However, Chu Feng was not afraid in the slightest as he faced the horrifying Spirit Formation snake. He snorted, coldly, then opened up his right hand, his left hand then quickly drawing a symbol in his right hand's palm.

After drawing the symbol, Chu Feng raised his right hand slightly. At that instant, purple light swirled around in his palm. The symbol was speedily changing, becoming countless patterns surrounded by purple lights. They were like little snakes as they climbed Chu Feng's arm from his palm, and almost immediately, they covered the entirety of Chu Feng's right arm.

At that instant, on Chu Feng's right arm, the patterns surrounded by purple lights were oppressing, and frightening. But, that was only the beginning. Chu Feng waved his right arm slightly, and the Spirit Formation power that was smashed by the huge snake actually started to gather together, and became a huge hand even a bit larger than the huge snake.

The huge hand was purple-coloured and several hundred meters long. Its sinister appearance was simply akin to a devil's palm. But that wasn't even much. More importantly, in every single pore of that palm, sharp blades similar to teeth of saws extended outwards. With a glimpse, it made people shudder from fear and it chilled their spines.

# Chapter 588 - Opening the Treasure

MGA: Chapter 588 - Opening the Treasure

“It seems like I have underestimated you. But, my full-powered strike may not lose to yours!” Seeing Chu Feng’s attack, Mr. Gu was also aware of the unfavourable situation.

But he did not retreat. Instead, his hand seals changed again. The huge Spirit Formation snake “dancing” in the air shrieked, then it opened its horrifying huge mouth that was full of fangs and flew quickly towards Chu Feng.

He knew that his huge Spirit Formation snake would not be able to defeat Chu Feng’s terrifying huge hand, so he didn’t even plan to meet force with force. He wanted to put everything into one thing: to attack Chu Feng with the speed of the huge Spirit Formation snake.

“Naive.” However, Chu Feng lightly chuckled at Mr. Gu’s action. The radiance on his arm poured out, lightly trembling, then with a bang, the huge hand in the sky exploded, and disappeared.

“What happened? It is possible that the formation Wuqing made was too strong, and he couldn’t control it, so it shattered?” Seeing the disappearance of the huge hand, people felt that there was a fault in Chu Feng’s control, leading to the destruction of the formation. After all, there was too much Spirit Formation power contained in the huge hand, and it was indeed not something normal people could control.

“You know what they say: the old ones are the cunning ones. That Wuqing will be defeated.” At the same time the huge hand disappeared, the Spirit Formation snake Mr. Gu formed was less than a thousand meters away

from Chu Feng. It was almost instantly going to collide into Chu Feng and consume him.

\*hmm\*

But just as everyone felt that Chu Feng was undoubtedly going to be defeated, he coldly smiled, then his palm lightly trembled again. The space in front of him transformed, and when everyone came to their senses, the horrifying huge hand actually appeared in front of Chu Feng, and stopped the huge snake's path.

As it turned out, the huge hand did not disappear, nor did it shatter. Everything just now was only an illusion that Chu Feng made. The huge hand could actually be controlled however his heart wished to.

\*wuaoo\* Mr. Gu, of course, wasn't a simple character either. Seeing the reappearance of the huge hand, he did not panic too much. His face gloomed, and with a thought, he controlled the huge snake, aiming to circle around the huge hand to attack Chu Feng again.

\*boom\*

However, Chu Feng did not give that chance to him. His right hand clenched suddenly, and the huge Spirit Formation hand clenched also with strong pressure. Moreover, it caught the huge snake. The hand's speed was quick, much quicker than the huge snake.

With a bang, the huge Spirit Formation snake that Mr. Gu created was shattered by Chu Feng huge hand.

“How is this possible? It's impossible! I've actually lost to a brat like him, I...”

\*poof~~~~~\*

Seeing his lifeblood crushed into pieces, Mr. Gu very bitterly howled at the sky, but before he could finish, his mouth widened, a mouthful of blood sprayed out.

Moreover, this time, not only was his face pale. His forehead was awash with sweat, and it was even like the skin on his body shrunk. In an instant, he aged dozens of years, and was like a person who was going to age to death. From that, it could be seen how much spirit he put into the Spirit Formation snake he formed just now.

But looking back at Chu Feng, his face was currently florid, and very casually, he dissolved the huge hand. He simply wasn't affected at all. Clearly, the attack just now wasn't his strongest killing move.

“How is that possible? This, this, this, this Wuqing is actually so powerful?!”

“Where did the Li family get such a World Spiritist? He is truly young and has potential!” At that instant, not a single person didn't have a face full of shock. They were thoroughly convinced by Chu Feng's strength.

Especially the people who looked down on Chu Feng and wished he would mess up. At that instant, their faces were very ashamed because this time, their eyes were really mistaken. Not only was Chu Feng not merely an ordinary person, he was even an outstanding genius.

“Haha, my friend Wuqing, I never would have thought that you were a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, and you are even so practiced with Spirit Formation techniques! The technique just now truly broadened our horizons!”

The Li family's master excitedly laughed loudly. This time, he was even happier. Clearly, it was a smile that came from his heart. After Chu Feng walked up to him, he even unrestrainedly praised.

As for the Ma family's master, Ma Yukun, the corners of his mouth twitched. Especially when he saw the Purple-cloak World Spiritist he spent great sums to invite no longer having any use, his fury was overflowing, and his bloodlust raged.

But, right now, he had no choice but to forcefully suppress the fury and murderous intents in his heart. He put on a very relieved and happily

surprised expression and walked up to the Li family's master and Chu Feng.

“Brother, is this that Wuqing you told me before? Indeed, not simple at all.” The Ma family's master first looked at the Li family's master before handing the stone case in his hands to Chu Feng, and said, “My friend, the heavy responsibility of opening this place rests upon your shoulders. Do not disappoint us!”

“Wuqing, my Li family and the Ma family has waited five hundred years for this day. Everything depends on you now.” At the same time, the Li family's master also gave the stone case to Chu Feng.

“Don't worry. I will definitely not disappoint everybody.” Chu Feng lightly smiled and accepted the two stone cases.

Holding the stone cases, Chu Feng could feel that there were special formations protecting the stone cases. Those formations were very powerful, and it could be said that the methods Chu Feng grasp simply could not open the stone cases.

But, that was not a problem for Chu Feng because he, who was sharp, immediately saw the way to open the stone cases. Moreover, there was only one method to do so. It was not to use the power of World Spiritists to open them, but to combine the two stone cases.

Indeed, after Chu Feng put the two stone cases together, two bangs rang out. The two stone cases then opened, but it was different from what he expected. Within the stone boxes, two normal Spirit Formation keys were not inside. There were actually two glowing objects.

\*swish swish\*

After the two objects of light appeared, they rapidly rose into the sky, then flew down again. Their speed was strangely quick, and when people came to their senses, the two objects started to quickly circle around the crowd, as if searching for something.

“Quick, catch it!”

At that instant, no matter if it was the people from the Li family or the people from the Ma family, they were endlessly excited. Some even thought that the two objects of light were treasures and wanted to catch them. Even the Li family’s master and the Ma family’s master made their move together.

But they could do nothing as the two objects of light were too fast. Even the two Martial Lords could not catch them. That couldn’t help making them panic.

\*whoosh whoosh\*

However, just as everyone expressed helplessness one after another, the two objects of light became two pencil-straight light, charging straight into Chu Feng’s brain.

“Ahh!”

At that instant, Chu Feng only felt a stabbing pain in his brain. A scorching current of air spread from his head, then it filled his entire body. When he endured the scorching current of air and opened his eyes, even if it was him, his pupils couldn’t help shrinking, and his calm face couldn’t help changing suddenly.

# Chapter 589 - Hong Qiang

MGA: Chapter 589 - Hong Qiang

“This is?”

At that very instant, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that he was still standing within the ravine. The sceneries around him didn't change at all, but the people within the ravine did. Everyone from the Li and Ma family was completely gone.

At present, other than him, there was only one other person in the ravine. It was a middle-aged man. He wore plain cloth clothing, and stood nearby with his hands behind his back.

When a light breeze brushed past his body and blew his ink-like black hair as well as his clothing, Chu Feng could feel that his strength reached a point that he could not even touch.

“You are not from the Li family, nor from the Ma family.” Suddenly, that person turned around, and at that instant, Chu Feng could also see that man's face.

His face was very ordinary, and in addition to his simple cloth clothing, he was simply as ordinary as one could get. But, in between his brows, the man had a hint of a unique demeanor. It was like the descent of a lord, and of an extremely valiant person. He was truly an exceptional expert.

Without even thinking, Chu Feng knew he entered an illusion.

Although the man in front of his eyes was very real, he was likely only a strand of awareness. As for why he seemed so real when gazed upon, it was because Chu Feng was currently located inside the illusion. He seemed real, but in reality, nothing was real in front of his eyes.



As for who that person was, it was not a difficult guess. He was likely the mysterious expert, that the Li and Ma family saved five hundred years ago.

“Senior, I am indeed not a part of the Li or Ma family. I am an assistant invited by the Li family, responsible for opening the treasure you left behind.” Chu Feng replied truthfully because his opponent was too powerful. Even though he was an awareness fragment left behind five hundred years ago, if he wanted to kill Chu Feng, it would definitely not take more effort than blowing dust.

“I left so many things for them back then, and even specially channeled Spirit power into the two of them, but the result is five hundred years later, they couldn’t even develop a half-decent World Spiritist, and still have to rely on an outsider’s help?” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, the mysterious expert seemed rather helpless.

“Whatever, whatever. Their successors’ incompetence is not related to me since the favours I owed were paid back five hundred years ago already.” The mysterious expert seemed to be very disappointed at the Li and Ma family’s successors. Only after sighing for a while did he raise his head again, look at Chu Feng, and ask, “Young man, what’s your name?”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart tightened. The man actually saw through his Transformational Mask, and knew that his real identity was a young man.

“Senior, I am called Chu Feng.” After he was seen through, Chu Feng did not dare to hide anything, and could only speak his real name.

“Chu Feng, you have quite good talent. If the Eastern Sea Region was the same as five hundred years ago, then you would be seen as a rare genius. This land here would not have bound you.”

“Whatever. Rather than leaving the treasure here for the Li and Ma family’s ordinary people, why not give it to you for marriage costs or something. Perhaps in the future, in the Holy Land of Martialism, we could meet.” The mysterious expert smiled and said.

“Senior, you’re, you’re in the Holy Land of Martialism?!” Hearing those words, Chu Feng couldn’t help being taken aback because the meaning behind his words did not only mean he was in the Holy Land of Martialism, it also meant that he was still alive. If he was already so powerful five hundred years ago, what realm would he be in five hundred years later? Most importantly, he’s a person who has lived for over five hundred years?!

“Hoh. I was originally from the Holy Land of Martialism, and accidentally came to this place five hundred years ago. But, you don’t need to be too shocked. The natural energy in the Holy Land of Martialism is completely different from here. The average life of a person at that place is not low. As long as one becomes a Martial King in addition to large amounts of life prolongation resources, it isn’t hard to live for over a thousand years.”

“In the future, if you can enter the Holy Land of Martialism, then you will see everything. I will guarantee that you’ll like that place, because that place is more suitable for you.”

“And if you can come to the Holy Land of Martialism, you can find me at the Fallen Leaves Bamboo Forest. Remember, my name is Hong Qiang.” The mysterious man smiled and spoke. It could be seen that he liked Chu Feng quite a bit.

“Senior Hong Qiang, thank you for your kind intentions. In the future, when I enter the Holy Land of Martialism, I will definitely pay a visit to you.” Chu Feng remembered that name because sooner or later, he was going to step into the Holy Land of Martialism, and if there were a person willing to help himself in that mysterious and unpredictable land, it was definitely something good.

“Judging by your talent, it shouldn’t be hard for you to enter the Holy Land of Martialism. I’ll wait for you here.” Hong Qing satisfiedly nodded his head, then said, “Chu Feng, listen well. This Wolf Ivory Mountain Range is a place where a Spiritual Being gathers, and five hundred years ago, I already found this place’s Spiritual Awareness.”

“At present, you’ve obtained the Spirit Formation I left behind. Exactly because of that, you can open the lock to the Spiritual Lair and enter it. Go along the Spiritual Veins inside, and you will find the Spiritual Awareness.”

“But with the time of five hundred years, the Spiritual Awareness has since have small achievements. It naturally also has its own intelligence and a certain amount of power. I predict that its current cultivation is in the realm of a rank one Martial Lord.”

“But you don’t need to be afraid. Back then, taking advantage of the Spiritual Awareness’ infant state when it had yet to have intelligence, I laid a formation in the area it congregated at. As long as you enter, you can use that formation and suppress everything that is in the formation.”

“Okay. This awareness fragment has been here for too long. It cannot existence for lengthy periods of time, and will disperse soon.”

“If we are fated to, let us meet in the Holy Land of Martialism.” Finishing those words, the mysterious expert’s body became a strand of rainbow light, then it charged into the sky and disappeared. Quickly after, the scenery around him also twisted and changed.

“Fallen Leaves Bamboo Forest, Hong Qiang!” At that instant, Chu Feng shut his eyes, and deeply carved in his heart that mysterious expert’s name and his place of residence.

Although they met only once, since that expert entrusted everything here to him, it could be counted giving him a favour. Chu Feng did not expect that the mysterious expert would help himself in the future, but he had to repay such a favour, so naturally, he had to visit him.

“Wuqing, what’s with you? Are you okay?”

Just at that moment, Chu Feng kept on hearing nervous and anxious voices next to his ear. Opening his eyes to look, he saw the Li family’s master, the Ma family’s master, as well as the crowd of the Li and Ma family, surrounding him in circles while tightly staring at him.

As he faced the crowd's nervous gazes, Chu Feng lightly smiled, then said to the two family masters, "Milords, don't worry. I know the method to open it."

After speaking, Chu Feng willed, then a golden pattern appeared on his forehead. After it appeared, it quickly transformed, spreading downwards from his forehead. Soon, it covered Chu Feng's entire body.

But that was not the end. The patterns continued climbing downwards, and actually went onto the surface of the ground along his body. Then, it spread like a spider's web, and instantly spread throughout the entire ravine.

\*rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble\*

At that instant, golden light shot everywhere in the ravine and rumbles sounded. Beneath such strange might, even the earth started to tear. An extremely special square entrance then emerged in the heart of the ravine.

# Chapter 590 - Fatal Change

MGA: Chapter 590 - Fatal Change

“Haha, success! After waiting for five hundred years, the time has finally come!” Seeing the already opened entrance, the Ma family’s master was unceasingly excited, immediately running in.

Quickly after, the Li family’s master, Chu Feng, and the others followed closely in.

After entering, Chu Feng discovered that all around the Spiritual Veins were normal rocks. Even if he observed detailedly with his Spirit power, he could not see any abnormalities. But, when he attempted to break them, he found out that the normal rocks were unbreakable, and were unexpectedly very hard to move.

That was sufficient to prove the specialness of the Spiritual Being. Unless Chu Feng’s Spirit power reached a very powerful stage, otherwise, only by using the Heaven’s Eyes could he find the location of the Spiritual Veins.

And the reason why the rocks were so special was naturally because they were affected by the Spiritual Being. According to the Pulse Searching Method, Chu Feng also learnt that such a thing was a normal phenomenon. Depending on the different time lengths of Spiritual Being formation, mystical and dangerous things of different degrees would be created within the Spiritual Veins.

However, looking at the features of the rocks as well as the number of years that the Spiritual Being had been forming for, there was likely not too many dangers in the Spiritual Veins. The only danger should be the Spiritual Awareness that had intelligence.

“Wuqing, how did you do that? You’ve actually opened this place.” After walking along the Spiritual Veins for a while and discovering that there

were no aberrations, the Li family's master walked up to Chu Feng side, smiling and asking.

“Those two light objects were keys. After they entered my body, not only did they grant me power to open this place, they also reminded me what to do.” Chu Feng replied with a smile.

“Oh? Then did those two light objects point out anything else to you?” The Li family's master continued asking.

“They didn't. But milord, don't worry. This path leads straight to the location of the treasure, and there are no obstructions or anything challenging on it. However, the treasure is a living being, and it has a certain level of cultivation. Milord, although your cultivation is sufficient to take care of it, you must also be careful.” Chu Feng responded.

“I see, I see. Ah Wuqing, thank you for the hard work on this journey.” Hearing those words, the Li family's master satisfiedly nodded his head, but as he spoke, a hint of a cold smile flashed past his face.

\*whoosh\* Seeing a hint of dark smile, Chu Feng heart immediately tightened, and he subconsciously used a bodily martial skill, leaping backwards.

“Die.” As expected, just as Chu Feng evaded, the Li family's master suddenly attacked. He slammed down with his palm, a layer of horrifying battle power exploding at the location Chu Feng was just at. Luckily, Chu Feng dodged it, or else that strike would have definitely heavily injured Chu Feng.

“Milord, what are you doing?” Although he was aware that the Li family's master had malicious intents towards him, when he truly threw an attack at him, Chu Feng still felt astonished, and very furiously questioned.

“Father, what are you doing?!” At the same time, Li Chan also questioned with a face of confusion. As she spoke, she even opened her arms and stood in front of Chu Feng. She was deeply afraid that her father would attack Chu Feng again.

“Chan’er, don’t be tricked by him! I’ve already asked your Uncle Ma. He simply didn’t use any Monstrous Beast against you, nor had he thought of doing anything to my Li family. All of those were lies fabricated by this Wuqing. He aims to use me and you so that my Li family and the Ma family kills each other, while he profits on the side!” The Li family’s master pointed at Chu Feng and furiously said.

“Father, what are you saying? Why can’t I understand? Why would Wuqing harm my Li family? He’s the person who saved me! He’s a person who wants to help my Li family!” Li Chan did not know what to do.

“Sigh. Chan’er, how can you be so foolish? That Monstrous Beast was not even bound by any Spirit Formation, and the Shabi couple didn’t betray our Li family either. Everything was set up by this Wuqing! That Monstrous Beast is an accomplice with this Wuqing! He is using you!” The Li family’s master also explained to Li Chan very helplessly.

“How is that possible? Father, you must have made a mistake. Wuqing definitely wouldn’t use me or harm my Li family. I believe that he is innocent!” Li Chan was still defending Chu Feng.

“My silly niece, don’t tell me that you’re willing to believe an outsider than your Uncle Ma? Do you really think that I will harm your Li family?”

“Don’t be stupid. My Ma family and your Li family has been so close for so many years! How could I do anything disadvantageous to your Li family?” At that instant, the Ma family’s master also spoke, and his face was full of innocence.

“Big Miss, wake up! Don’t continue being tricked by this outsider!” At the same time, the Shabi couple also urged her.

“You! You two!” Seeing the several people in front of her, Li Chan couldn’t help taking a few steps back. She was thoroughly frightened by the circumstantial change at that instant. So much that she almost fell to the ground. Luckily, Chu Feng behind her held her up.

The current Chu Feng was rather calm. He already saw through everything. Li Chan's father, the master of the Li family, was indeed as he thought. A person who reached the extremities of stupidity.

Very clearly, he secretly met the Ma family's master in these few days and questioned him, whether he controlled the Monstrous Beast to kill Li Chan, and whether he was planning to harm the Li family.

And the outcome was very obvious as well. The Ma family's master made up some lies and put all of the accusations onto Chu Feng's head. The most speechless thing though, was that the Li family's master, the idiotic person, actually believed them all.

"Li Chan, you truly have a good father. It is quite the miracle for your Li family to have existed until now." Chu Feng smiled, relieved. As he spoke, he pulled Li Chan behind, then looked at the Li family's master and the Ma family's master, saying, "It seems like right now, you two feel that I no longer have any worth, and want to eliminate me?"

"It's not that you have no worth, it's that you should die in the first place." The Ma family's master fiercely said, as if Chu Feng truly wronged him, and that he was the real criminal.

"Ho, you can

want

to kill me, but whether you can or not will depend on your skills." Chu Feng coldly snorted, then leaped, and the azure-coloured huge dragon appeared underneath his feet. Then, a light flashed, and Chu Feng had already rushed deeper into the Spiritual Veins.

"Hmph. You are looking to die!" Seeing Chu Feng escape, the Ma family's master also stepped forward, and disappeared in an instant, chasing after Chu Feng.

"Brother, I'll give you a hand!" Quickly after, the Li family's master also chased after him, similarly, his bloodlust evident.



“Father, don’t go! You can’t attack Wuqing, don’t be tricked by Ma Yukun!” Seeing that, Li Chan’s face changed greatly, but just as she wanted to chase as well, two people appeared in front of her. It was the Shabi couple.

“Scram! Don’t block my road!” Li Chan furiously shouted.

“Heh. Miss, don’t be lost in his lies and have your heart muddle by that bastard. It’s better to stay by our side and let

us

protect you.” The Shabi couple coldly laughed, and as they spoke, they grabbed Li Chan’s arm.

“Ahh!” At that instant, Li Chan felt two enormous bursts of Heaven power drilling into her body. Then, all of her strength was gone, and she lost her ability to move on her own.

# Chapter 591 - Phoenix of Ice

MGA: Chapter 591 - Phoenix of Ice

Underneath the Wolf Ivory Mountain, within the Spiritual Veins, with one in the front and one in the back, the Ma family's and the Li family's master were speedily flying.

They pretty much used their strongest bodily methods, but the two rank one Martial Lords could not even catch up to Chu Feng. They couldn't even see Chu Feng's back.

“Dammit! How can that guy be so fast?”

That situation was something the two family masters never expected, but they did not panic. After all, that path would end up at a wall, and as long as they continued chasing, catching Chu Feng was something that would happen sooner or later.

However, things were not as simple as they had imagined. When they madly flew to the end yet did not see Chu Feng, it was as if Chu Feng disappeared. He did not leave any traces behind.

But in that instant, the two family masters simply didn't have the heart to think where Chu Feng went. They were thoroughly absorbed by the scene in front of their eyes.

It was a square cave, and the walls at that place were not ordinary rocks like the ones within the Spiritual Veins. They were strange crystal-like and ice-cube-like things.

Yet, those things were not crystals, nor ice cubes. They were Ice Crystals, extremely strange and special objects in this world.

Ice Crystals were extremely hard objects, one of the best materials to use when making weapons. They were very rare, and very valuable. But at that

place, Ice Crystals formed a vast rectangular palace. Moreover, in the center of such a strange palace, there was an object.

It was an egg, its diameter over ten meters. It was an egg formed by Ice Crystals. But, as the huge egg lay serenely in the center of the palace, faint blue-coloured light visible by the naked eye could be seen circling around it. Moreover, it emanated energy that cultivators could clearly feel.

“Treasure! That’s the treasure in this place! It contains such powerful energy, and it is a very rare Natural Oddity. This makes my Ma family’s five hundred year long wait worth it.”

At that instant, the Ma family’s master was endlessly excited. With quick meteor-like steps, he flew, and in a blink, arrived in front of the Ice Crystal Egg, and wanted to take it.

\*hmm\*

However, just as his palm touched the Ice Crystal Egg, a burst of wild power spread from within. Catching him off guard, it actually threw the Ma family’s master, the rank one Martial Lord, away.

\*bzzz\* Simultaneously, thick cracks also started to appear, and they were rapidly spreading. With only an instant, the cracks covered the entire Ice Crystal Egg and finally, within “bzz” sounds, shattered

“Brother, careful! Quickly retreat!” At that instant, the expression of the Li family’s master couldn’t help changing greatly as he hurriedly called out loudly.

Because, at that very instant, at the location where the Ice Crystal Egg was, an enormous thing several meters tall appeared. It was a phoenix. A phoenix formed by Ice Crystals.

Although the Ice Crystal Phoenix’s body size was not very big, it gave off an extremely powerful aura. It had the strength of a rank one Martial Lord. However, that was not the important part. The important part was its incomparably noble demeanor. With a glimpse, one’s soul would tremble.

They would also have the impulse to kneel and worship, as if it was an unoffendable holy existence.

“Brother, this is the treasure we must take down. How can we retreat? Quickly take it down with me. The energy it contains can definitely make my Ma family and your Li family prosper, and we can create an unprecedented flourishing age!”

In comparison to the Li family master’s fear, the Ma family’s master was extremely thrilled. Not only did he not shrink away, he even unrestrainedly released his powerful aura of a rank one Martial Lord, then like an arrow, shot towards the Ice Crystal Phoenix and started to fight against it.

\*aoo~~~~\*

\*boom boom boom\*

Two rank one Martial Lord existences clashed against one another, instantly giving rise to many frenzied ripples. Martial power only Martial Lords had merged with the power only the Ice Crystal Phoenix had. The entire vast Ice Crystal palace became their battlefield.

The Ice Crystal Phoenix was very strong. Although it did not speak, it emitted its extremely strong enmity. Every time its wings fluttered, extremely cold hurricanes formed. In addition to that, endless barrages of incomparably sharp Ice Crystal blades were shot out from its body. Every single of those could create extremely terrifying damage.

But evidently, the Ma family’s master was not a simple character. He had an abundance of fighting experience, and he also grasped many mighty martial skills. As he used them skillfully, he actually fought evenly against the Ice Crystal Phoenix, the Spiritual Being.

“Heavens! Wha-wha-wha-what is this?!”

At that instant, the people from the Ma and Li family finally arrived as well. When they saw the Ice Crystal Phoenix that was like a deity, overflowing with light, they were also deeply astounded. All of them stood

where they were, dumbstruck. No one dared to take a single step forth, and many people were gradually backing away as well.

“Brother, what are you looking at? Why aren’t you subduing this monster with me?! My Ma family and your Li family’s future is grasped within our hands!” The Ma family’s master roared once again.

After a mental struggle, the Li family’s master also, finally, howled, and with similarly powerful aura, he entered the circle of battle.

\*boom boom boom\*

Despite lacking experience, the Ice Crystal Phoenix was very strong. However, it could not fully exhibit such powerful strength. Only because of its innate strength could it be on even grounds against the old and cunning Ma family master.

But after the Li family’s master entered, the Ice Crystal Phoenix could not fight against four hands with its two wings, and very quickly entered a disadvantageous situation. The two family masters’ attacks then became more and more ferocious. Using all sorts of martial skills, they started to unceasingly throw those attacks on the body of the Ice Crystal Phoenix.

\*aooo~~~~~\* Finally, a heart-tearing and lung-splitting cry full of hatred rang out. The Ice Crystal Phoenix lost its fighting ability, and after the last ripple dissolved in the air, its enormous body actually started to shrink, and became an Ice Crystal Egg only the size of a watermelon.

That Ice Crystal Egg was completely different from the one before. Although its size was a lot smaller, the energy it contained was more pure.

“Haha, success! Brother, we’ve succeeded!” The Li family’s master was endlessly ecstatic. He, who was the nearest to the Ice Crystal Egg, held it up first, and happily cheered.

\*puchi\*

But just at that moment, he suddenly felt pain in his chest. Following that was hot liquid endlessly flowing out of his chest. Casting his gaze downwards, his face involuntarily froze.

He discovered, aghast, that a three-foot azure blade pierced through his chest, and he recognized also that three-foot azure blade. It was the Mastered Elite Armament of his most trusted brother, the Ma family's master, Ma Yukun.

“You, you, you!!”

At that instant, the Li family's master quickly turned his head around, discovering that the Ma family's master was indeed, standing behind him. Moreover, he was holding the Mastered Elite Armament that pierced through his chest.

# Chapter 592 - Less Than An Animal

MGA: Chapter 592 - Less Than An Animal

“Ma Yukun you animal! My trust in you was in vain! You, you, you actually treat me like this!”

The Li family’s master simply didn’t dare to believe his own eyes. He didn’t dare to believe that his own brother truly betrayed himself, but when everything happened, he had no choice but to believe it.

At that instant, he was furious, but even more so, he felt pain that came from his heart. The pain of being deceived by the brother he assumed to be close to him.

However, the Ma family’s master did not care about the Li family master’s reactions. He only sneered, then pulled out the Elite Armament and jabbed it again into the Li family master’s chest. The power he put into that thrust was enormous, forcefully stabbing the Li family’s master onto the ground.

When he fell, the Ice Crystal Egg was held within the Ma family master’s hands. Only after glancing at it did he satisfiedly smile and look at the Li family’s master, saying with a cold smile, “Brother, don’t blame my ruthlessness and ignorance of brotherly camaraderie. You can only blame your excessive idiocy.”

After speaking those words with extreme derision, the Ma family’s master cast his gaze towards the Ma family crowd at the palace’s entrance, then waved his sleeve, ordering, “Begin!”

\*boom boom boom\*

“Ah!”

“Ahh!”

After the Ma family’s master spoke those words, the Ma family’s crowd immediately overflowed with bloodlust, and without saying anything, started to immediately attack the Li family crowd. Not to mention they were caught off guard, even if they were to have a head-on-head confrontation, their strength was far inferior to the Ma family’s strength. So, as the two forces collided, the Li family was utterly defeated.

The thing that surprised the people from the Li family the most, however, was that the two Head Elders of the Li family, the Shabi couple, not only didn’t fight against the people from the Ma family. Instead, they attacked those from the Li family, and were extremely merciless. Every single strike took their lives, and in a blink, several Li family members were already killed by the old couple. Their identity as traitors was full shown with nothing concealed.

As for the daughter of the Li family’s master, Li Chan, although her life wasn’t in danger, she was thoroughly subdued by the Ma family. She was tied up by a World Spiritist with a Spirit Formation Rope, and at that instant, she could not contribute to the battle at all. She could only watch as her own family fell one after the other in front of her.

“Ma Yukun you animal, you animal! Have you forgotten our ancestors’ teachings? Has your heart been eaten by a dog?!”

Seeing his subordinates die successively from his own foolishness, the Li family’s master was completely enraged. He ignored his own injuries, forcefully endured the agony in his chest, and pounced towards the Ma family’s master.

However, how could he, who was already heavily impaired, able to defeat the Ma family’s master? With the raise of his leg and a kick, the Li family’s master was once again thrown onto the ground. Furthermore, the Ma family’s master fiercely stamped on his body, forcibly shattering his breastbone.



“Brother oh brother, what do you want me to say to you? What use are the ancestors’ teachings? What use is brotherly camaraderie? Can they make my Ma family flourish? Can it make my Ma family monopolize this Wolf Ivory Mountain Range? Let me tell you, it cannot!”

“Nothing is useful in this world. Everything is crap. There is nothing that can change the truth of ‘winners are kings and losers are thieves’. I am not afraid of bearing tainted names, and I’m also not afraid of being scorned by others, because when I triumph, no one will dare to point their fingers at me.”

“They will only serve me. They will only fear me. As for the successors, they will not remember what methods I used before. They will only remember the success that I, Ma Yukun, brought about. They will only remember the mighty achievements that I, Ma Yukun, left behind!” Ma Yukun insanely laughed. His laughter was very sinister, not feeling any shame for his actions, and instead felt glory.

“Animal, animal! I was truly blind! I only took you as a brother because I was blind! I only trusted you so much because I was blind! You, you animal! You animal, you are inferior to pigs and dogs!” The Li family’s master gnashed his teeth in anger, his face flush with red. As he struggled, he loudly cursed.

“Animal? You say that I’m an animal? That’s right. I don’t mind telling you that I’m an animal.” Being cursed like that by the Li family’s master, Ma Yukun was not angry in the slightest. Instead, he chillingly smiled, then looked at Li Chan and said, “Bring her over here!”

“Let me go, let me go!”

After the Ma family’s master spoke, those from the Ma family did not hesitate and hurriedly brought Li Chan to the Ma family’s master.

“Ma Yukun, what are you doing? If you have anything you want to do, do it at me! Don’t harm my Chan’er!” Seeing that, the Li family master’s face was instantly pale from terror, deeply afraid that the Ma family’s master would lay his poisonous hands on his daughter.

“Brother, what are you worried about? Would I harm Chan’er?”

“Chan’er, my beautiful niece. How could I bear hurting her? Don’t worry, I will definitely not harm her. I will raise her well, I will treat her well.”

The Ma family’s master strangely smiled, then used his hand to hold up Li Chan’s jaw. He said, eyes squinting, “My good niece, you’re a lot smarter than your father, and I like that intelligence. Say, you’ve guarded your body for so many years and kept it as clean as jade, were you waiting for me, your uncle?”

“Pah! You scum.” Li Chan opened her mouth, spittle spraying on the Ma family master’s face.

“Scum? That’s right, I am scum. Today, I’ll let you see how scum-like I am.” Being spat on by Li Chan, the Ma family’s master seemed as if he was aroused by that and actually ripped her skirt away, revealing her smooth and soft snow-white skin. Moreover, as he spoke, the Ma family’s master pressed Li Chan underneath him.

“Ma Yukun, what are you doing? Chan’er is your niece, your niece!”

“You animal, let go! Bastard, let go!” Seeing the Ma family’s master having desires to do

that

thing with his own daughter, the Li family master’s heart could almost explode. As he climbed up, stumbling, he wanted to fight against him with his life.

“Lie down, you.” However, the Ma family’s master only waved his hand casually. The Li family’s master then fiercely crashed onto the ground, a mouthful of blood spraying out. The bones in his entire body broke, and he was powerless to stand up again.

“Mm, that’s more like it. Lie down there and don’t move. See how I toy with your own daughter. Hahaha... On that topic, brother, our Chan’er still

has a chaste body right? Truly, good things are not given to outsiders. Hahaha...” As the Ma family’s master lasciviously laughed, he extended his vile palm to touch Li Chan’s snow-white skin.

However, the Li family’s master could do nothing about that scene. He could only watch as his own daughter was violated by his assumed-best brother.

At that very instant, he was extremely regretful. He loathed his stupidity when he believed a person he should not have believed.

If he had believed his own daughter, and believed Wuqing, the current events absolutely would not have happened.

But of all the things existing in this world, the one thing it lacked was medicine for regret. At present, he could only pay the price for his actions. His daughter’s disgrace, the Li family’s eradication. Those were the prices that he had to bear.

As for Li Chan, she currently gave up any struggling because she did not have that ability. From the corners of her eyes flowed tears of her desire to die, but who could she blame? If she had to blame something, she could only blame herself for having such an idiotic father.

“Oh? I’ve seen quite a few scumbags, but I have never seen one who’s so scummy.”

But as the Li family was almost completely killed and Li Chan’s chastity was going to be taken away, familiar voice to everyone to suddenly rang out in the palace.

# Chapter 593 - Everything In Control

MGA: Chapter 593 - Everything In Control

“Wuqing?!”

After that voice rang out, everyone couldn't help stopping what they were doing and cast their gazes towards the origin of the voice. At that instant, they astonishedly discovered that currently, deep in the palace, there stood a single person. It was Chu Feng.

After seeing Chu Feng, almost everyone jumped from fright because clearly, they didn't see him before and even thought that he was killed. But now, Chu Feng appeared suddenly, which meant, obviously, that he wasn't killed yet.

But, since Chu Feng wasn't killed, where did he hide? How could he appear within the Ice Crystal palace without making any sound, and without anyone knowing? How did he do all that?

“Ma Yukun, you are truly an animal within animals, and scum within scum. It is quite difficult for anyone to top that.”

Chu Feng did not pay attention to the crowd's shocked gazes, and first looked at the Ma family's master with a smile before looking at the Li family's master who lay on the ground and had a body full of wounds, and said, “Li family master, you now know your brother's real appearance right? How does it feel?”

“I...” His face was filled with shame, and he didn't know how to reply. He only lowered his head silently, because he had no words to face Chu Feng.

Now, he knew that Chu Feng truly wanted to help him, but not only did he not accept such kind intentions, he even planned to kill Chu Feng. That

was simply a perfect example of repaying kindness with hatred. He was not able to determine what was right and what was wrong.

“Haha, you brat, you do have some skill to be able to escape my ears and eyes, but if I were you, I would have definitely not come out. I would have quietly escaped.” The Ma family’s master smiled darkly.

“Escape? Why do I need to escape? Facing a group of people that I can easily kill at any given time, is there a need to escape?” Hearing the Ma family master’s words, Chu Feng smiled mockingly.

“What? Kill us? With your cultivation of the eighth level of the Heaven realm? You brat, you truly speak shameless words!” At that instant, the Ma family master’s face suddenly turned cold, then opened up his hand, and abruptly palmed.

The power of that palm was Martial power. It was very strong, absolutely superior to Heaven power. So when it was thrown out, the space between them cracked and twisted instantly.

It was simply unstoppable.

“Hmph.” However, Chu Feng stood where he was when facing such a horrifying attack. He did not even frown. Only when the berserk Martial power neared him did he snort coldly.

\*hmm\*

After that snort, the Ice Crystal Palace trembled intensely. At the same time, a dazzling golden light appeared as well. That light was too bright. It was like the radiance of the sun, blinding to the point that people did not dare to look straight at it, and could only look to the side.

Only after they felt that the dazzling golden radiance gradually disappeared did they dare to cast their gaze back at the Ice Crystal Palace, and when they saw the scene in front of them, all of them were dumbfounded. Astonished. Many people’s faces even greened from terror.

At that very instant, within the Ice Crystal Palace, not only was Chu Feng standing in the center of the palace, unharmed, the Ma family master's horrifying palm from before was as if it hadn't appeared at all before. Not to mention doing any damages, there simply weren't any traces left behind.

But that was not the most ridiculous thing. The most inconceivable thing was that Li Chan, who was pressed under the Ma family's master before, currently appeared behind Chu Feng. Even the Spirit Formation that bound her was undone. She currently hid behind Chu Feng in panic, arranging her skirt to cover her skin.

"Brat, less of these deceptions! If you want to die, I can grant you that wish right now." In reality, not only others, even the Ma family master's face blued, a bit of fear emerging into his eyes.

But being afraid was being afraid. He didn't believe in bad luck, so he howled as layers upon layers of Martial power surged within his body. When the Martial power gathered to a certain level, he threw out a first.

\*boom\* Even the Ice Crystal Palace trembled intensely when that fist was thrown. Quickly after, exploding from the boundless Martial power fist came a hundred-meter long leopard.

The huge leopard had all four limbs, was vivid and lifelike, and contained unparalleled divine might. As it ran in mid-air, it made roars that shook mountains, and with might that could trample over everything, it flew over to Chu Feng.

"Crap! That his strongest martial skill, the Flying Leopard Madly Runs!"

"Quickly retreat, or even we will be dragged down by it!"

At that instant, many people on scene furrowed their brows tightly. Fearfully, they backed away because all of them recognized that martial skill. They knew the power of that martial skill. If it truly exploded, even the ripples would injure them. On the light side, they would be heavily injured; on the heavy side, they would die.

\*hmm\*

However, just as the crowd felt they could not escape a disaster, the dazzling golden light appeared once again, and like before, it appeared for only an instant before vanishing.

“Heavens! What exactly is happening?!”

When everything was finished and when they cast their gazes back at the Ice Crystal Palace, this time, they were thoroughly stupefied.

Because, in front of their eyes, Chu Feng still stood there unharmed, unmoved. The strongest martial skill of the Ma family’s master, like the Martial power palm before, disappeared in the air.

The most inconceivable thing was that currently in Chu Feng’s hand, there was an extra thing. It was the Ice Crystal Egg. The Ice Crystal Egg initially held in the Ma family master’s hand presently appeared within Chu Feng hand.

At that moment, in the gazes that everyone looked at Chu Feng with more or less contained surprise and fear because in their perspectives, Chu Feng was simply like a monster. It was like he contained some unbelievable ability.

In reality, not even others, even Li Chan who stood behind Chu Feng had her eyes rounded widely, her eyes glittering with bewilderment and shock.

Even though she was so near to Chu Feng, she still didn’t know how everything happened, or how Chu Feng did it.

“You bastard! Stop these deceits and if you have the guts, fight me head-on!” At that instant, the Ma family’s master furiously roared, his face clearly showing fear.

“What? You’re afraid?” Chu Feng lightly smiled, a bit of disdain in his eyes.

“Afraid? I, a Martial Lord, am afraid of a brat like you, who’s only in the eighth level of the Heaven realm?!”

Despite being petrified, the Ma family’s master was not a person who was willing to admit defeat. He opened his arms, and continuously exhibited several strong martial skills, throwing extremely powerful attacks at Chu Feng.

However, the outcome was exactly the same as before. After the glitter of the golden light, all of his attacks disappeared.

“You, you, you, are you even human?!” That time, even the Ma family’s master panicked totally. As he panicked, he even nervously took a few steps back, almost tripping and falling to the ground.

Currently, he felt so powerless. Regardless of what attacks he threw out, they simply could not harm Chu Feng. But looking back at him, he was unfazed. From start to finish, he wore a smile on his face, giving off an appearance of complete control.

In that situation, in spite of being rank one Martial Lord, it was impossible to

not

be afraid because after experiencing all that, he felt, in his heart, that Chu Feng was even more powerful than him. He was absolutely not just

a tiny bit

stronger. He truly controlled everything.



# Chapter 594 - Must Die

MGA: Chapter 594 - Must Die

“Do you still not see it?” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

“See what? What are you talking about? What the hell are you doing?”

The Ma family’s master was truly terrified because regardless of how much stronger an expert was, it was impossible to block his attack without any sound and take away an object from his hands. So, he even suspected that Chu Feng simply wasn’t human.

“I even thought that you were smart, but I didn’t expect you to be as stupid and ignorant as your brother.” Chu Feng smiled disdainfully, then with a thought, the Ice Crystal Palace was engulfed by golden radiance again.

However, this time, the golden radiance’s dazzle was limited. Though still blinding, it didn’t reach a level where people didn’t dare to stare straight at it.

In a situation like that, finally, people could also see clearly the origin of the golden radiance. It came from inside the Ice Crystal Palace. Lines of golden patterns and symbols merged together, drawing a very grand formation. The Ice Crystal Palace was actually a formation itself.

“What a powerful formation. How can you control such a formation? Who exactly are you?!”

At that instant, the Ma family’s master connected the dots. It wasn’t Chu Feng who was powerful, but the formation that was powerful. The reason why Chu Feng could do such mystical actions just now was all because he relied on the power of the golden formation.

It was too powerful. The Spirit Formation was made by golden-coloured Spirit Formation power, and it was definitely the handiwork left behind by

a Gold-cloak World Spiritist. Moreover, it was absolutely not a simple Gold-cloak World Spiritist who did such a thing.

In addition, since this place was always in a sealed state, the Ma family's master felt that it wasn't possible that Chu Feng laid it because he did not have that ability. Most likely, the formation was laid by the mysterious expert five hundred years ago.

But, how could Chu Feng control the formation laid by the mysterious expert? That was the thing he could not understand.

“I say you're stupid, but you really are stupid. Can you still not see that it was the keys that gave me power to control this formation?”

Chu Feng indifferently smiled, then with a thought, boundless pressure came crashing down, and with a poof, the Ma family's master was forced to kneel on the ground. His face was full of pain. He simply didn't have the ability to fight against the formation.

“You shameless person, you dare to use the thing left behind by my Ma family's ancestor against me?!” The Ma family's master knew that his own end approached, so he didn't beg and instead, fiercely cursed.

“Shameless? Do you think a person like you can call others shameless?” Chu Feng laughed, then said, “Honestly speaking, I'll tell you this. The reason why I can control this formation is still all thanks to you. If it wasn't for all of your overly mediocrity and uselessness, Senior Hong Qiang wouldn't have told me the method to control this formation.”

“What?! Lord Hong Qiang... Youyouyou, you actually know his name?!”

“Impossible, that's impossible! The Li and Ma family saved Hong Qiang's life! How can he repay our kindness with enmity and hand this formation over to my enemy?!” After knowing the truth, the Ma family master's gaze glittered and his face was like ash, unwilling to believe that fact.

“Repay kindness with enmity? Yes, your families' ancestors did indeed save Senior Hong Qiang, but the reason why your two families can have a

day like today is because it was all granted by Senior Hong Qiang. He already doesn't owe your ancestors anything, and even more so, he does not owe any of you anything."

"Do you expect him to protect your family for generations and generations because of a small, tiny favour? Let alone that it isn't realistic, even if Senior Hong Qiang has such desires, a despicable person like you is clearly not worthy."

"Die. Today, I will remove a contemptible successor such as you in place of your Ma family's ancestor, so your Ma family's ancestor will not bear all sorts of tainted names because of you." As Chu Feng spoke, his eyes flickered, and the pressure crushing the Ma family's master started to endlessly strengthen.

"Ahh~~~~~"

Under such horrifying pressure, the Ma family's master had no ability to resist. He could only let the pressure press his body until it twisted and deformed. Then, his blood and flesh mashed together, and even his Consciousness was crushed into pieces. Even his Source Energy was absorbed by Chu Feng as the Ma family's master, thoroughly, became a pool of blood.

"This is no good. Run, run! That person has malicious intents! Even the family master was killed by him, so we cannot step into that Ice Crystal Formation!"

After seeing Chu Feng crush the Ma family's master into a pool of blood, the people from the Ma family were not lightly terrified. All of them no longer cared about killing the Li family's people, turning around and running. They wanted to leave that place which was full of trouble. If Chu Feng even killed the Ma family's master, god knows if he would attack them as well.

"Ahh!"

However, just as the crowd turned around and before they even took a few steps, a dragon's roar rang out suddenly. Quickly after, they saw a huge azure dragon descending from the sky, blocking their path of escape. And, Chu Feng was standing on the huge dragon.

“The people here were only listening to orders, so I can let them go alive. But not you two. What I, Wuqing, detest the most in my life is betrayal, so you must die.” Chu Feng narrowed his eyes, tightly staring at the Shabi couple. However, his gaze was full of icy bloodlust.

“Hmph. Who do you think you are?! You think you can kill us whenever you want to? At the end, you are only a brat in the eighth level of the Heaven realm. After leaving that formation, what do you think you have?”

“Everyone, no need to be afraid. If we join hands and kill this boy, it is as simple as flipping one's palm! At that time, the treasures here will belong to us! Everything that the Li family and Ma family has will belong to us!” Seeing Chu Feng leave the Ice Crystal Palace, the Shabi couple also found confidence and were actually luring the crowd to attack Chu Feng.

The crowd which had their path of escape blocked currently also felt that they had no other choice. Recalling that Chu Feng's aura was truly in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, they involuntarily made preparations for a life and death battle against Chu Feng.

After all, if they lost, they would just die. But if they won, they would be thoroughly rich. Moreover, they felt that there was a greater probability of them winning, so it was simply not hard to make that decision.

\*whoosh\*

However, just as the Ma family crowd made such a decision, Chu Feng suddenly made his own move. Using the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, almost instantly, he arrived in front of the idiotic (shabi) Shabi couple.

\*boom\*

Then, a palm was suddenly thrown out, fiercely colliding into old man Sha's body. Also with such a simple palm, the old man didn't even get to cry out in pain before his soul was shattered by Chu Feng, his body becoming a mist of blood.

“Indeed, I only have the cultivation of the eighth level of the Heaven realm, but do you think you're fit to kill me?” After killing the old man Sha with lightning-like methods, Chu Feng spoke those words with contempt.

“Ahhhh~~~~~ Bastard, I'll kill you!” Seeing her husband killed by someone in front of her eyes, old woman Bi went into a rage, pouncing at Chu Feng after fierce shout.

“Hmph. If you want to die, I'll grant you that wish.” There was not the slightest bit of emotional change on Chu Feng's face when old woman Bi pounced at him, throwing her life away. Another palm was thrown out, and with a bang, old woman Bi, like her husband, ended up with a miserable death.

# Chapter 595 - Sixth Level of the Heaven Realm

MGA: Chapter 595 - Sixth Level of the Heaven Realm

“Young Hero Wuqing, have mercy, have mercy!”

When they personally saw the death of the Shabi couple, the Ma family crowd who even wanted to fight against Chu Feng with their lives before, now, no longer had any traces of preparing for such a reckless decision. At that very instant, no matter male, female, old, or young, all of them knelt onto the ground, unceasingly kowtowing.

They finally realized how foolish their thoughts were. They finally knew that they underestimated the man in front of their eyes. Even if he left the horrifying formation, Chu Feng still had the strength to easily kill them. The man called Wuqing already reached an unimaginably powerful state.

\*whoosh whoosh\*

Quickly afterwards, Chu Feng waved his sleeve back and forth once, and the berserk gale blew once again. However, when the gale returned, several Cosmos Sacks appeared on Chu Feng's palm.

And naturally, those Cosmos Sacks were taken from that group of people. After putting them away, without even glancing at them, Chu Feng said only one sentence, “Scram. Go back to where you came from!”

“Young hero, thank you for your mercy! Thank you for your mercy!” Seeing that, the Ma family's crowd didn't dare to hesitate and as they stumbled, they ran out.

“Young Hero Wuqing, thank you for saving us. We are very fortunate to have you, or else my Li family would have truly been in great peril!” After

Chu Feng walked to the entrance of the Ice Crystal Palace, those who survived in the Li family thanked Chu Feng with faces full of gratitude.

However, facing such solicitous boot-licking people, Chu Feng didn't even feel they were worthy of a glance. He waved his sleeve, gale swept out, and like the actions before to the people from the Ma family, he took all of their Cosmos Sacks.

“Young Hero Wuqing, you...”

Chu Feng's action really made the people from the Li family shocked. Especially the experts invited by the Li family. The corners of their mouths twitched, and their hearts ached.

They weren't a part of the Li family, so there was no need for them to live and die with the Li family. They served the Li family only for money, yet at that instant, the rewards given by the Li family were not the only things in the Cosmos Sacks taken by Chu Feng. The personal wealth they accumulated for many years was also inside. This time, they had taken great losses.

And seeing their shocked reactions, Chu Feng smiled coldly and said, “Don't think that I'm obligated to save all of you. Just now, your Li family master wanted to kill me. If I hadn't dodged quickly, I would have died by his palm.”

“So, please clear up the situation. I, Wuqing, am no longer allies with you. I am the same as the Ma family, an enemy.” As Chu Feng spat out those words, he swept his icy gaze over the crowd.

“Young Hero, have mercy, have mercy! Take all the money, don't kill us!”

At that instant, the Li family's crowd couldn't help but tremble, then quickly knelt on the ground, and like the Ma family's people before, endlessly begged because just then, they felt murderous intents in Chu Feng's gaze.

At that instant, they definitely believed that Chu Feng would kill them if they dared to disobey in any way because that gaze was very terrifying. It was as if Chu Feng wasn't human, and was truly a cold-blooded demon.

After that, Chu Feng walked straight towards the Li family's master. And he seemed to have already expected such movements. So, at present, he seemed quite calm when he spoke to Chu Feng, "Wuqing, I was foolish. I couldn't differentiate between right and wrong, so that was why I believed that animal Ma Yukun and betrayed your kind intents. I even wanted to kill you... Kill me. Kill me. I'll feel better in my heart."

"Wuqing, don't! Don't kill my father. I'm begging you, give him a chance." Just at that moment, Li Chan hurriedly ran over, and immediately came in front of her father. Then, she knelt in front of Chu Feng, and pleaded for her father.

"Big Miss, quickly rise." Seeing that, Chu Feng personally propped Li Chan up, then looked at the Li family's master and said, "Logically speaking, I should kill you because when you dared to attempt to kill me, that was a crime worthy of death already."

"But today, I won't kill you. Not because I pity you, but because you have a good daughter."

After speaking those words, only then did Chu Feng cast his gaze towards Li Chan and said, "Big Miss, I have use for the object discovered here. I will take it."

"However, since this is a place your Li family has guarded for many years, think of this as a loan. In the future, I will give a repayment of an equal price." After speaking, Chu Feng leaped, and without even looking back he stood on the azure dragon's head and left.

After Chu Feng left, it was like a burden lifted for the Li family crowd. They hurriedly rushed into the Ice Crystal Palace and started to heal the Li family master's injuries. Only Li Chan gazed at the direction Chu Feng left in, and for a long time, remained in such a daze.



Chu Feng left the Spiritual Lair, but did not leave the Wolf Ivory Mountain. Holding the Ice Crystal Egg, he could truly feel that object's power.

Its cultivation was comparable to a rank one Martial Lord, but the energy it contained was absolutely not comparable to the Martial power a rank one Martial Lord had. It was a real Spiritual Object, a cultivation valuable.

Chu Feng impatiently wanted to refine it, so he found a concealed place, and started the journey of refining the Ice Crystal Egg.

Although the egg was a Spiritual Being that congregated for over five hundred years, there was nothing threatening about it anymore. In addition, after becoming a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, Chu Feng could even more skillfully use absorption methods. Thus, after a short two hours, Chu Feng thoroughly refined the Spiritual Being.

After refining the egg, the Heaven power throughout Chu Feng's body changed. He successfully stepped into the sixth level, and if he were to use the three lightning, Chu Feng was equivalent to have entered the ninth level of the Heaven realm, only a step away from being a Martial Lord.

Less than a year had passed since Zi Ling was taken away. In less than a year, Chu Feng's cultivation rose from the eighth level of the Profound realm to the current sixth level of the Heaven realm. It was truly a heavenly quick speed of improvement, quite frightening as well.

“Ahh, indeed, if I want to make breakthroughs right now, the cultivation resources required are too terrifying. Even a Spiritual Being that took over five hundred years to form allows me to make only one level of breakthrough. If I refine only Heaven beads, how many would I need to break through?”

Although he succeeded in increasing his cultivation, Chu Feng was still dispirited because after using Spirit Formation Essence, the Son of Magma, and the Ice Crystal Egg, the three oddities, to break through, Chu Feng became more aware that the resources he required was very frightening.

If it weren't for those three oddities and if he had directly used widespread things such as Heaven beads for cultivation, even he didn't know how many would be required.

“Breaking into the sixth level of the Heaven realm is already quite good. Just be pleased with what you have.” But just at that moment, Eggy spoke, giggling.

# Chapter 596 - Paying a Visit to the Lovers Terrace

MGA: Chapter 596 - Paying a Visit to the Lovers Terrace

“Eggy, it’s a Spiritual Being that has gathered for over five hundred years! But it only allows me to make a single level of breakthrough. If it were Heaven beads instead, I truly do not dare to think how many I would need in order to enter the sixth level from the fifth level.”

Chu Feng felt quite helpless. Despite already knowing that the cultivation resources he required would get more and more enormous as his cultivation reached higher and higher realms, when he truly faced such a situation, he still felt quite unspeakably bitter.

“Idiot. That Ice Crystal Egg is indeed a Spiritual Being, that is true; but it has only been congregating for five hundred years. You must know that powerful Spiritual Beings need to congregate for at least ten thousand years.”

“Besides, you need to think like this. At present, you have found a Spiritual Being shortly after entering this Eastern Sea Region. From that, it can be seen that the Eastern Sea Region is indeed a place impregnated by oddities. At least, there’s a lot more Natural Oddities here than in your continent of the Nine Provinces.”

“As long as you reach a proficient level with the Pulse Searching Method, would you still worry having no cultivation resources? In this place, you are simply like a fish in water. There are infinite cultivation resources you can use.” Eggy sweetly smiled and said.

“Mm, you do know how to comfort people, but you are correct. Whatever, it’s time to go.” Actually, Chu Feng already understood the things that

Eggy said, but after hearing her speak them, he still felt quite a bit more comfortable.

“Where?” Eggy asked puzzledly.

“Of course, to the Lovers Terrace to find Qiushui Fuyan.” Chu Feng smiled lightly, then leaped into the air and stepped onto the journey towards the Lovers Terrace.

The Eastern Sea Region was very big, and the road to the Lovers Terrace was very far as well, so logically speaking, he had to spend quite a bit of time. However, after Chu Feng travelled for a while, he discovered a huge Teleportation Array within a vast city.

The Teleportation Array was very ancient, but it was a lot more profound than the ones in the Four Seas Academy. They were said to be left behind by powerful World Spiritists from past eras, so regardless of its teleportation speed or number of people it could teleport, both were of very high levels.

But, the Teleportation Arrays from the Ancient era were all controlled by the Immortal Execution Archipelago. If one wished to use them, they had to pay high fees. Longer the distance teleported, higher the fee. Not to mention normal people, even ordinary cultivators could not take out such a sum.

Even if there were some people who could take out such money, they were not willing to spend them on such fees for travelling. Only true rich, noble clans could use them.

Although Chu Feng wasn't anything like that, he still had a large number of Heaven beads currently on him, and as the Heaven beads didn't have too much help towards his cultivation, it was good enough to be used for travelling.

So, with the assistance of the Ancient Teleportation Arrays, Chu Feng greatly reduced the time he needed to journey. Within a few short days, he

arrived at the Lovers Terrace. It was dozens of times quicker than what he would have taken if he were to have flown himself.

“These Ancient Teleportation Arrays are truly not simple. They are even several times quicker than the ones in the Four Seas Academy. Eggy, from what you see, what kind of World Spiritist laid these antique formations?”

After walking out of the Teleportation Array, he was deeply stunned by its horrifying speed. To know that in a few short days, he had stepped over countless lands and sea regions.

Seeing such profound and powerful methods, Chu Feng, who was a World Spiritist, was involuntarily amazed because as a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, he had already learnt how to create a Teleportation Array as well, and from that, he knew clearly how skillful one needed to be in controlling Spirit Formations as well as the special methods required to lay such long-distance Teleportation Arrays.

“From my understanding, it should have been laid by a Royal-cloak World Spiritist. But, as too much time has passed since the time it had been laid, the Teleportation Array has deteriorated. It requires long-term restoration by at least a Gold-cloak World Spiritist in order to continue using them.”

“So, the Immortal Execution Archipelago cannot be blamed for demanding such high teleportation fees. After all, it costs quite a bit to get Gold-cloak World Spiritists to come repair these Teleportation Arrays often.” Eggy explained.

“So Royal-cloak World Spiritists huh?”

“If Royal-cloak World Spiritists are already so powerful, what degree of strength would Immortal-cloak World Spiritists reach?”

Originally, Chu Feng thought such outstanding Teleportation Arrays were laid by an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, but now, he knew that it was a Royal-cloak World Spiritists instead. Once again, he learnt of the unfathomableness of Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. No wonder it was a realm that required one to be at least a Martial Emperor to enter.

The Lovers Terrace was, in reality, an island in the ocean. Moreover, it was a huge island with an enormous surface area. The scenery on the island was beautiful, as if it were a paradise in the human realm. There were all sorts of strange flower and odd grasses. There were even mid-air waterfalls. It was very gorgeous.

But on such an island, there were no sects. It wasn't that sects didn't want to set up camp there, but that there were really too many experts on the island. Those expert lived in concealment and disliked rowdiness, so naturally, they did not allow the arrival of any powers.

The experts hiddenly living on the island already laid an invisible confinement formation that covered the skies and went deep underground. It sealed the entire Lovers Terrace, and in only in a few designated entrances could one enter.

“Halt!” Just as Chu Feng went up to the entrance, he was yelled at and stopped by a young man.

The young man was just over twenty years old, but had the cultivation of the third level of the Heaven realm. Usually speaking, that cultivation at his age was relatively good, but in front of Chu Feng, it was quite insignificant.

“Brother, I am here to see Lady Qiushui.” Chu Feng very politely said.

Lady Qiushui was, in reality, Qiushui Fuyan, but she had already hid her name so even if it was the people from the Lovers Terrace, they might not know her to be the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church. Chu Feng learnt all of that from his master, Qiu Canfeng.

“You're here to see Senior Qiushui? From what I see, you want to be her disciple?”

“Let alone that Senior Qiushui doesn't accept disciples anymore, even if she does, it wouldn't be your turn.”

“Not to mention Senior Qiushui’s disciple, you can’t even become a disciple of any of the seniors in the Lovers Terrace. That’s for no other reason but because you are not qualified. Quickly leave, don’t taint this holy ground, the Lovers Terrace.”

The young man’s attitude was very arrogant. Although Chu Feng’s cultivation was above his, in the gaze he looked at Chu Feng with was still full of disdain and contempt. As he spoke, he even pointed at a nearby stone tablet.

And only at that instant did Chu Feng discover on the stone tablet, several rows of big words were written: “Those twenty years old and above may not step upon this island and find a master; those yet to be twenty years old but haven’t entered the Heaven realm may not step upon this island and find a master!”

After seeing the stone tablet, everything clicked. Chu Feng then knew the method to enter the island, so he wasted no words. After a light smile, he turned around and left.

# Chapter 597 - Ten Women of the Ocean of Flowers

MGA: Chapter 597 - Ten Women of the Ocean of Flowers

Coming to a desolate corner, Chu Feng changed his clothes, then with a thought, his Transformational Mask changed as well. From a middle-aged man's face, Chu Feng's face became a young man's face of roughly twenty years old.

Also, he removed the power of the lightning, so his cultivation also returned to the sixth level of the Heaven realm from the ninth level of the Heaven realm.

Quickly after, Chu Feng came back to the entrance where the young man before guarded at. This time, when he saw Chu Feng once again, his eyes immediately lit up, and not only did his former arrogance attitude completely disappear, he even had a very shocked appearance. After Chu Feng neared, he actually went up and asked, "Brother, this is the Lovers Terrace. I wonder... Have you come here to look for a master?"

The young man wore a light smile on his face, his manner extremely polite. The difference in treatment in comparison to before was like the distance between the heaven and the earth. As for the reason of such change, Chu Feng clearly knew why.

Although his cultivation just now was very high, after all, he came to that place with the status of a middle-aged man. When one reached the middle-ages, despite having cultivation in the ninth level of the Heaven realm, in the land of the Eastern Sea Region, it wasn't really much. After all, there were many Martial Lord experts. Only Martial Kings were the apical existences.



But Chu Feng's current identity was completely different. Although his cultivation was only the sixth level of the Heaven realm, his age had just reached twenty. Having that cultivation at that age meant that Chu Feng's talent was extremely good. At least a lot better than the young man in front of him.

A person like Chu Feng could be called a genius. Naturally, there would be many experts in the Lovers Terrace willing to take Chu Feng as a disciple. So, the young man did not dare to offend a person like Chu Feng.

“Senior, I am Wuqing. I've heard that Senior Qiushui of the Lovers Terrace is extremely outstanding, so I want to become her disciple and learn some abilities.” Chu Feng replied.

“Senior Qiushui? Brother Wushang, the Senior Qiushui you're talking about, is it Senior Lady Qiushui?” The young man was slightly shocked.

“It is.” Chu Feng nodded his head.

“Brother Wuqing, you are truly not simple. Senior Qiushui is very famous in the Lovers Terrace. Those who challenged her were all defeated, and she's titled as the number one expert within the Lovers Terrace.”

“But because Senior Qiushui is very low-profile, the number of people who know Senior Qiushui outside of the Lovers Terrace is few within few. Seeing that you know Senior Qiushui, it seems like you have come prepared.”

“But Senior Qiushui's disciple selection process has always been harsh. In addition, she only accepts females and not males. Brother Wuqing, although your talent is superb, I'm afraid you won't have much of a chance.” The young man truthfully spoke.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng frowned lightly. He even thought the man was making up excuses to prevent him from entering the Lovers Terrace. But then unexpectedly, the man quickly added, “However, Brother Wuqing, you can indeed go in and try. After all, there are still many hidden experts in the Lovers Terrace. If Senior Qiushui is truly unwilling to

accept you as her disciple, you can become disciple of others and it would still be quite satisfactory.”

As the man spoke, he went to the side, and gave Chu Feng a path to enter the Lovers Terrace. He also gave Chu Feng a badge.

Accepting it and taking a look, the badge was not simple at all. From its outer appearance, it looked like an ordinary wooden badge, but after Chu Feng used his Spirit power to examine it, he discovered that the wooden badge was made by a Spirit Formation. In the middle of the wooden badge, there was the word “Visiting” carved in it. Underneath the wooden badge, there was a date carved, and that date was exactly today.

“Brother Wuqing, this is a Visiting Badge. Holding the Visiting Badge, you can find a master you like in the Lovers Terrace, but the time limit is only ten days. After ten days, if you are still unable to find a suitable master, you will be driven out of the Lovers Terrace.” The young man reminded.

“Senior, thank you for the reminder.”

Chu Feng clasped his hands, taking his leave. Afterwards, he entered the Lovers Terrace. It was very big, and every single hidden expert had land that belonged to themselves. However, there was no one living in areas with extremely pretty sceneries because those areas were not allowed to be owned. They were for the public.

As Chu Feng held the Visiting Badge, indeed, he was not stopped on the road. Moreover, very soon, he inquired Qiushui Fuyan’s residence.

“This place is truly like a paradise in the human realm.”

After arriving at Qiushui Fuyan’s residence, even Chu Feng couldn’t help exclaiming. Her territory was actually a vast ocean of flowers with all sorts of strange, fresh flowers spread widely. The luxurious and majestic residences belonging to her were built within the gorgeous ocean of flowers. It was extremely beautiful.

Logically speaking, an area with such a beautiful scenery should be for public use and shouldn't be occupied by someone, but Qiushui Fuyan did exactly that. From this, it showed her strength, or else how could so many experts living hiddenly in the Lovers Terrace let Qiushui Fuyan have such an exception?

“Who are you? What business do you have here?” Chu Feng was currently admiring the beautiful scenery, but suddenly, from nearby, the fierce voice of a young woman rang out.

Looking over to the voice, Chu Feng discovered nearby, above the ocean of flowers, ten slender and graceful females stood. Those ten were quite young, and the oldest should just be a bit over twenty years of age, and the youngest was actually only fifteen.

Although the group of females was fairly young, their cultivations were not weak. The fifteen-year-old young woman was in the first level of the Heaven realm, and other than her, the rest were all also in the Heaven realm. The one just over twenty was in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, even two levels higher than Chu Feng.

Moreover, not only were their cultivations extraordinary, all of them had very characteristical appearances. The only thing similar about them all was that they were all beauties. Especially the one with strength in the eighth level of the Heaven realm. Her appearance was very graceful.

Her fair skin, delicate face, and also her pair of not-too-big but very spirited eyes made people feel that she had a very cold yet beautiful demeanor.

But, she was clearly very prideful. The other few females were blinking their big eyes, curiously examining Chu Feng. Only she, from start to finish, didn't even glimpse at Chu Feng, and was only enjoying the ocean of flowers

“Oi! What are you looking at? I'm talking to you, are you deaf?!” Seeing Chu Feng staring at herself with unmoving eyes, one of the prideful ponytailed females very displeasedly spoke.

“Ah, ladies, I’ve come here because I wish to visit Senior Qiushui.” Chu Feng scratched his head said with slight embarrassment.

“Pay a visit to Master? What business do you have?” Another female asked with a gentle tone.

“I must personally speak to Senior Qiushui regarding this matter.” Chu Feng smiled and said.

“Hmph. Less of that. You clearly don’t know my master. Your aim is to become her disciple right?” The proud female disdainfully said.

“Leave. My master is not here. Even if she is, she wouldn’t take you as her disciple because she only takes females and not males. Moreover, she said she would take only ten disciples, and now, that number has been reached. Even if you were a woman, she wouldn’t accept you.” Another female spoke.

As she spoke, that group turned around at the same time, and like fairies, drifted away above the ocean of flowers, returning to the palaces located in the center of the ocean of flowers.

# Chapter 598 - Fruit of Martialism

MGA: Chapter 598 - Fruit of Martialism

“Juniors, I have urgent business with Senior Qiushui. Please let me meet her.” Seeing that, Chu Feng continued begging. He came over here from so far away, so he didn’t want such a journey to be for nothing and return empty-handed.

“Scram.” But just at that time, the proud woman in the eighth level of the Heaven realm suddenly explosively shouted, and directly attacked.

She didn’t even look at Chu Feng as with Spirit power, she determined his location. Clearly, she too was a World Spiritist, but that was not the important part. The important part was that her strike was also Spirit Formation power. Purple-coloured Spirit Formations made by her merged together, becoming a purple-coloured Spirit Formation wall. It pressed towards Chu Feng. She was also a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

“Truly arrogant and unreasonable.” Seeing that purple-coloured Spirit Formation wall pressing towards him, a hint of displeasure flashed into Chu Feng’s eyes. Although his opponents were all beauties, Chu Feng did not put them in his eyes. If he wasn’t requesting to see Qiushui Fuyan, Chu Feng would not be so polite with them.

And right now, that female was actually attacking him directly. Of course, Chu Feng would not just pettily endure that. He wanted to give that woman a lesson, or else by their natures, they would definitely stop Chu Feng outside the door.

\*wuaao\*

However, just as Chu Feng was going to make his own move, a roar resounded behind him. That made Chu Feng furrow his brows lightly, dispelling his attacking intentions. Instead, he cast his gaze behind him,

and only then did he discover the thing flying over was a huge purple-coloured Spirit Formation beast.

That huge beast stepped on air and flew over. After brushing past Chu Feng, it actually collided fiercely into the Spirit Formation wall.

\*boom\*

The two crashed into each other, and immediately an explosion resounded. Moreover, it generated a berserk ripple, and when that ripple disappeared, both the huge beast and huge wall condensed by purple-coloured Spirit Formations disappeared. They were mutually destroyed.

And at that instant, Chu Feng also saw the person who condensed the purple-coloured huge beast. It was an elegant young man. His appearance was quite nice, even comparable to the women.

But because his facial features were too delicate, in addition his skin was as white as snow, he did lose a man's imposingness and charm, and instead gained a hint of feminine air.

Although the man had a woman-like appearance, his cultivation was not weak. It was actually the same as the proud female, also in the eighth level of the Heaven realm.

Moreover, behind the man were more men. Their cultivation was not weak either, and they could all be called dragon within men. However, the one who caught Chu Feng's attention the most wasn't them, but a middle-aged man with a face full of scars.

That big man intentionally concealed his aura, but he did not escape Chu Feng's detection. He discovered that he was an expert in the ninth level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, his aura was very thick, as he had infinitely neared being a Martial Lord. Looking at his appearance, he was truly only a string's width away from being a Martial Lord, and could very soon step into that realm.

“Xue Yi. I am forcing this person to leave. Why have you stopped me? Could it be... that you’re with him?” After seeing that group of men, the prideful woman actually, unexpectedly, spoke. Although her attitude was still very overbearing, but speaking honestly, her voice was quite pleasant to the ears.

“Hehe, Lady Wanshi, don’t misunderstand. I don’t even know who this boy is. Just now, I wasn’t planning to help him out of that situation, but it’s just that... seeing you use your Spirit Formation technique, my hands itched so I really wanted to spar a bit against you.”

“Lady Wanshi, why are you so angry? Don’t tell me this boy offended you and stirred up such fury?”

“Lady Wanshi, don’t be mad. Since this boy cannot distinguish between right and wrong and dares to be disrespectful to Lady Wanshi, I, Xue Yi, shall give him a lesson in your place.” Xue Yi first smiled obsequiously, then cast his icy gaze at Chu Feng, and as he spoke, he made movements to attack Chu Feng.

“No need. If you have anything you want to say, go ahead. Don’t speak in circles.” The proud woman coldly said.

“Hehe, Lady Wanshi is truly smart. I can’t hide anything from you. That’s fine, since even you have spoken like that, I won’t talk in circles.”

“This time, I’ve come here to take back the Fruit of Martialism I lost to you last time.” Xue Yi smiled and said.

“Ho? So you’re here for the Fruit of Martialism. The thing you lost to me last time when we had a Spirit Formation technique spar. You can indeed take it back if you want to, but you must defeat me.”

The proud woman disdainfully smiled, and as she spoke, her Cosmos Sack flashed and a very strange three-inch long fruit appeared in her hand.

After that strange fruit appeared, even Chu Feng’s eyes lit up. Putting aside the fact that the fruit had a peculiar outer appearance, it contained

extremely powerful energy inside. It was clearly Martial power.

Everyone in the world knew that there were spiritual medicines, Profound medicines, and Heaven medicines. That strange fruit was, obviously, Martial medicine that contained Martial power. Also, from Chu Feng's analysis, the rank of that odd fruit was absolutely not low, likely a mid-rank Martial medicine.

“That's fine, but it's not me who will spar with you. It will be my cousin.” Xue Yi lightly smiled, then pointed at the big man beside him whose face was full of scars.

“I am Xue Jian, Xue Yi's cousin. I've heard that Lady Jiang, Jiang Wanshi of the Lovers Terrace is an exceptional genius and has extremely outstanding power in Spirit Formation technique control.”

“And I, Xue Jian, coincidentally enjoy studying Spirit Formation Technique usually as well. So, I wish to ask Lady Jiang for pointers.” The scarred big man took two steps forward, then clasped his hand and spoke to Jiang Wanshi with bell-like loud voice.

“Oi! Xue Yi, what's the meaning of this? You can't defeat my Senior Jiang so you've asked for reinforcements?”

“Your cousin isn't from the Lovers Terrace right? Looking at his age, how can he enter the Lovers Terrace? Xue Yi, you have broke the rules of this place!” The ponytailed arrogant woman curled her lips and fiercely rebuked.

“This lady, you're speaking quite ferociously! I'm sure you must be Lady Sun, Sun Yihan, that my cousin mentions often right?” Xue Jian clasped his hands and asked.

“That's right. That's me.” Sun Yihan crossed her arms in front of her, very proudly sticking her bountiful chest outwards.

“Lady Sun, I am indeed not someone from the Lovers Terrace, but I am here to visit my cousin. That's something reasonable I'm sure. Moreover, I



am talking to Lady Jiang right now, please don't barge in. If Lady Jiang says she's afraid and doesn't want to spar with me, then I'll turn around leave, but you, on the other hand, are not qualified to speak to me." Xue Jian loudly said.

"You..." After Xue Jian spoke, it did not lightly anger Sun Yihan. She pointed at Xue Jian and was going to let loose with curses.

"Yihan, stop!" But before letting her speak, Jiang Wanshi pressed Sun Yihan's words, then beautifully smiled and said to Xue Jian, "A very good provocation, but it is useless against me."

"If you want to spar with me, that is fine, but there's a rule in sparing. If you want to take back the Fruit of Martialism Xue Yi lost to me, you must take out an object of at least equivalent value as the Fruit of Martialism, or else please, leave now."

# Chapter 599 - Leaving in Utter Defeat

MGA: Chapter 599 - Leaving in Utter Defeat

“Lady Jiang, where did that question even come from? Since we are having a bet while sparring, of course, I’ve come prepared.” Xue Jian lightly smiled, and as he spoke, his palm flashed, then a medicinal grass having the appearance of a cat’s claw appeared in his palm.

Though that medicine had an odd appearance, the power it contained was not the slightest bit inferior to the Fruit of Martialism in Jiang Wanshi’s hand. It even surpassed it.

“This is a mid-rank Martial medicine, the Cat’s Claw of Martialism. In terms of rarity, it is even rarer than the Fruit of Martialism in Lady Jiang’s hand. Would this be sufficient for a bet?” Xue Jian smiled and said, but as he spoke, he gave off an abundant of confidence, as though he grasped victory in his hands already.

“Of course it will do.” Jiang Wanshi smiled sweetly, similarly full of confidence.

“Lady Jiang, shall we use old rules and spar in the same way you sparred my cousin?” Xue Jian asked.

“There’s no problem.” Jiang Wanshi smiled and said.

“Then, Lady Jiang, I must offend.” Suddenly, Xue Jian’s expression changed and he immediately attacked.

His hand’s speed was extremely quick, and in almost an instant, a boundless Spirit Formation was laid. And as he laid that Spirit Formation, Jiang Wanshi didn't do anything. She stood in the air, observing the changes.

\*wuaoo\* Suddenly, a roar resounded, then a purple-coloured bundle of light explosively shot out from the boundless formation. Its legs stepped on air, and as it made purple-coloured arcs from leaping continuously, it dashed quickly towards Jiang Wanshi.

Although that thing was very quick, no one there was ordinary. With their naked eyes they could see that object's shape. It was something akin to both a leopard and a wolf. Though it had a very vivid shape, and seemed more like a Monstrous Beast; but, it was still made by Spirit Formations.

Moreover, its size was very small. Its body was less than two meters, and the power it emanated was average. It couldn't be said to be very strong. Other than its extremely quick speed, it had no other good point.

“You truly look down on people. You will definitely lose this Spirit Formation spar when you use such a feeble formation to fight against me.”

“Whatever. Since you want to gift me a mid-rank Martial medicine, I'll gladly take it.” Jiang Wanshi, also a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, immediately saw that the thing Xue Jian made was very weak. So, she didn't put it in her heart. With light movements of her finger, she started to randomly lay a formation.

“Wait.” But just at that moment, Chu Feng's gaze flashed, and he discovered something off. Although currently, the thing Xue Jian made was indeed very weak, the formation he laid gave off an enormous presence. Looking at it with Chu Feng's experience, Xue Jian had laid his formation with a concentration of extremely powerful Spirit Formation patterns. It was a very high-level method.

Yet, what was happening right now was: within a powerful formation, a very weak object ran out; but whether that object was

really

weak or just

fake

weak was indeterminate, and from what Chu Feng's saw, there was a trick.

“Lady Jiang, do not underestimate it. The formation Xue Jian laid is very powerful. It's impossible that an insignificant object like this appears. Do not be careless. It's better to use a high-level formation to defend against it.” Discovering that something was wrong, Chu Feng did not keep it to himself. He hiddenly sent a mental message to Jiang Wanshi.

After all, the reason why he came to that place was to see Qiushui Fuyan, and even though Jiang Wanshi and the others had arrogant attitudes, they were still Qiushui Fuyan's disciples. Whether it was because of sentiment or reason, Chu Feng didn't wish for her defeat.

Hearing Chu Feng's voice, Jiang Wanshi lightly knitted her brows, then after gazing at Chu Feng with contempt, she actually said disdainfully, “Noisy. In terms of Spirit Formation techniques, would I be inferior to you?”

After speaking, Jiang Wanshi did not change anything. She continued laying her formation, and with masterful hands, a large purple-coloured Spirit Formation appeared quickly.

But even though that formation was strong, it was not Jiang Wanshi's strongest method, so she clearly didn't heed Chu Feng's warning, and laid a formation that she

felt

could easily defeat the thing in front of her.

“Ahh, you ignore my words. A loss is in right front of your eyes. Go suffer.” Seeing that, Chu Feng lightly chuckled. His expression didn't really change, and he only sat there, enjoying himself.

\*huu~~~\* Just at that moment, bursts of sounds of wind rang out. From the formation Jiang Wanshi laid, a purple-coloured tornado emerged.

After the tornado appeared, the sky immediately changed colour. Everything gloomed. The energy it contained was indeed far above the object that Xue Jian's made. With rolling dark clouds and boundless might, it swept towards the tiny object.

“Haha, Senior Jiang is truly skillful. With this Spirit Formation tornado, it can simply destroy that ugly bastard's formation easily.” At that instant, Jiang Wanshi's sisters thought that the outcome was set. They were extremely cheerful.

“Heh.” But facing that situation, Xue Jian strangely smiled, then he overlaid his palms, changed his hand gestures, and with an “aoo~~~”, overwhelming might burst out of the berserk object.

After that might appeared, the originally small object rapidly enlarged. In a blink, it became an enormous thing dozens of meters tall, even larger than the tornado.

“Crap!” At that instant, the expressions of Jiang Wanshi and the others changed greatly. On their previous faces that were full of smiles were now full of fright.

But it was too late. The formation had already been created, and she could not turn back. The huge beast Xue Jian condensed opened its great mouth, and boundless suction came out from it, forcibly engulfing the tornado Jiang Wanshi created, destroying it completely.

\*boom\* After it was engulfed, a huge explosion also came from the formation Jiang Wanshi laid. It instantly shattered.

She lost. The Spirit Formation spar between Jiang Wanshi and Xue Jian ended up as Jiang Wanshi's complete defeat.

“Dammit! You bastard, you cheated!” Seeing to be unable to accept that result, Sun Yihan and Jiang Wanshi's other sisters loudly rebuked.

“Cheating? Ladies, may I know the reason of such accusations?” Xue Jian lightly smiled, feigning ignorance.

“Is there even a need to explain? You clearly laid a powerful formation, but intentionally hid your power. Is that not cheating?” Sun Yihan said.

“Haha, this is the first that I’ve heard concealing strength is cheating! Lady Sun, what a waste it was becoming a disciple of Senior Qiushui. You actually don’t even know such a simple truth: ‘deception may be used at any time during a battle’.”

“Just now, your Senior Jiang was reluctant to make her move for quite some time. She only wanted to observe the changes calmly before doing the opposite later on. Yet, she did not know I was doing the exact same, and she became careless. It was her who fell for this trick. Who can that be blamed on?” Xue Jian coldly said.

“You, you are simply forcing these words on us!” Sun Yihan and the others gritted their teeth in anger, their faces flush with anger.

“Forcing words? Call it whatever you want to. But if you can’t take the loss, you can just go ahead and say that.” Xue Jian smiled and said.

“Yihan, all of you, shut up.” Finally Jiang Wanshi spoke. Currently, her face was a bit pale, as she had clearly received some damage. But, it wasn’t like she couldn’t take the loss. She flicked her hand, then the Fruit of Martialism rose into the sky, and became a rainbow, flying towards Xue Jian.

“Hehe.” After receiving the Fruit of Martialism, Xue Jian first examined it, and only after confirming it was the same one that his cousin lost did he chuckle smugly, then said, “Lady Jiang, if you do not accept this loss, we can spar once again. Do you dare?”

# Chapter 600 - You Dare?

MGA: Chapter 600 - You Dare?

“Damn. You ugly bastard, you are quite arrogant! Senior, quickly give him a lesson. Let him know how high the heavens are and how thick the earth is.”

“That’s right. Senior, quickly give this ugly bastard a good lesson. Let him know how powerful you are when you get serious. If it weren’t for that trick, he would have not defeated you.”

Sun Yihan and the others felt that Xue Jian only won because of deception, so when he jeered, they felt the chance for revenge came. All of them loudly shouted, giving off a very grand atmosphere.

However, as they were endlessly calling out, Jiang Wanshi tightly knitted her brows, silent.

Although indeed, she lost because of carelessness in the spar just now against Xue Jian, as a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, she knew clearly being able to conceal a powerful formation the way Xue Jian did meant that he was very strong. At least, it was something she couldn’t do.

Yet now, Xue Jian was provoking her in such a way. It could be seen that he was very confident he could defeat her again. One could say that it was another scheme...

Xue Jian defeated Jiang Wanshi with deception; but in reality, even if he were to attack openly, he could still, very likely, defeat Jiang Wanshi. Yet, he did not do exactly that. It was, of course, intentional.

He intentionally made Jiang Wanshi felt that she lost because of carelessness. With that, when Xue Jian provoked again, under normal circumstances, Jiang Wanshi would definitely agree to the battle. At that

time, Xue Jian could use his powerful strength to defeat Jiang Wanshi again. She would then suffer great losses.

Although, at that very instant, Jiang Wanshi was indeed furious, she, who had seen Xue Jian's strength, also saw through his plans.

It had to be said that Jiang Wanshi sank into a predicament. She couldn't agree, yet she couldn't refuse either. It was a truly difficult situation, and she did not know what to do at all.

“Lady Jiang, there's no harm in accepting the battle. I can defeat him in your place.” But just at that moment, Chu Feng's voice entered Jiang Wanshi's ears.

“You? With your cultivation of the sixth level of the Heaven realm? Don't tell me you're also a Purple-cloak World Spiritist?”

Normally, Jiang Wanshi definitely wouldn't have paid attention to Chu Feng, but after the events that just happened, she had no choice but to look at him with new eyes as he, at the start, saw through Xue Jian's trick. He even reminded her, but she did not believe him. If she did, then the current scene would certainly be completely opposite.

So, though Chu Feng's cultivation wasn't very powerful in her eyes, she already felt that he was not a simple person. He should at least also be a World Spiritist.

“Lady Jiang, I ask you to please use Spirit power to examine my palm.” Chu Feng sent a mental message with a smile.

\*hmm\* Hearing that, without delay, Jiang Wanshi quickly used her Spirit power in secret to observe Chu Feng's palm.

“This is?!” And when Jiang Wanshi's Spirit power arrived at Chu Feng's palm, her small and pretty eyes instantly flickered, an expression of disbelieving shock emerging.



At that very instant, Chu Feng was activating a formation in his palm. That formation could not be seen by the naked eye, but it could be felt by Spirit power.

The formation Chu Feng used told Jiang Wanshi two things. The first—Chu Feng was a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

And the second—Chu Feng's ability to control Spirit Formation techniques was really mystical and masterful. It surpassed Jiang Wanshi by a far margin. It was very powerful.

“What is your reason for helping me?” At that moment, Jiang Wanshi no longer doubted the level Chu Feng's Spirit Formation techniques were at, but she did not know the reason why Chu Feng aimed to help her.

“I am entrusted by my master, and I have something to pass down to Senior Qiushui. I have come here for that reason.”

“My master and Senior Qiushui are old friends, so we are naturally on the same side. Since there is an enemy intruding, it is my duty to help,” replied Chu Feng with a smile.

“Who's your master?” Jiang Wanshi followed up with a question.

“It is not convenient to reveal my master's name. Anyhow, I won't harm you. If you don't believe me, I can't do anything about it either,” said Chu Feng.

“Lady Jiang, why have you yet to respond? Could it be that... you are truly scared?” Just at that moment, Xue Jian once again shouted, having the intention to fight against Jiang Wanshi.

“Senior, why aren't you agreeing to him? Give him a good lesson and let him know your power!”

“Senior, perhaps you're out of things to bet? If that's so, I have here a mid-rank Martial medicine Master left behind. I can lend it to you,” asked Jiang Wanshi's juniors puzzledly, all at the same time.

“Xue Jiang, if you didn’t play tricks just now, how could you have defeated Lady Jiang? People like you are simply not worthy to exchange blows with Lady Jiang. Doing that will simply shame her name.

“If you are dissatisfied,

I

can spar against you. However, I just wonder if you dare or not.” Just at that moment, Chu Feng stood out without any instigation.

“What? You!” Chu Feng’s abruptly-arrived words stunned everyone on scene. If it weren’t for his loud yelling, everyone would have simply forgotten his existence. And, when Chu Feng spoke, he immediately provoked Xue Jian. That shocked everyone.

“Brat, who are you? Do you think

you’re

worthy to fight against my cousin? Looking at your cultivation, even if you’re a World Spiritist, you would only be a Blue-cloak. How do you think you are qualified to spar my cousin? Any one of us can easily beat you to death,” said Xue Yi, mocking disdainfully.

“That’s right. On what basis can you represent my senior to spar against that ugly bastard? We aren’t close to you anyway, so don’t lose our face. We can handle the matters here. There is no need for you to offer any assistance.”

In reality, it was not only Xue Yi and the others who looked down on Chu Feng. Even Sun Yihan and the others looked down on him. After Chu Feng stuck his head in, even

they

harshly insulted him.

“Haha. Boy, you’re quite interesting. You wanted to help them out and do some boot-licking, yet they simply disregarded those intentions. Quickly scam. Trash like you cannot interfere with the matters here.” At the same time, Xue Jian also spoke. He didn’t even look straight at Chu Feng. His contempt was very evident.

“Who said we disregard those intentions?” But just at that moment, Jiang Wanshi spoke too, then quickly after said to Xue Jian, “If you want to spar me again, that is fine.

“But you must first defeat him. If you can’t even defeat him, you would truly not be qualified to fight against me because I dislike sparring against people who specialize in deceit,” said Jiang Wanshi, pointing at Chu Feng.

“Senior, what are you saying? Are you really going to let him fight against that ugly bastard in your place? He is only in the sixth level of the Heaven realm!” At that moment, Sun Yihan and the others had astonished faces, unable to understand what Jiang Washi was thinking.

“All of you, shut up,” Jiang Wanshi secretly shouted at her sisters, then looked at Xue Jian, and asked, “Do you dare?”